





# EMPEROR'S DOMINATION

BOOK 17

*Yan Bi Xiao Sheng*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Emperor's Domination

(帝霸)

by

Yan Bi Xiao Sheng

(厌笔萧生)

# Synopsis

---

One million years ago, Li Qiye planted a simple water bamboo into the ground.

Eight hundred thousand years ago, Li Qiye had a koi fish pet.

Five hundred thousand years ago, Li Qiye cared for a little girl.

.

.

.

In the present day, Li Qiye woke up from his slumber; The water bamboo reached the apex of cultivation; The koi fish became a Golden Dragon;

The little girl became the Nine Worlds' Immortal Empress.

This is a tale regarding an immortal human who was the teacher of the Demon Saint, Heavenly Beast, and Immortal Empress.

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Bao @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 1601: Forefather Yu

---

Ancestor Yu calmed down and ordered the disciples inside the mansion: “No one goes outside for now. I will be going to see the forefather.”

The disciples present were moved after hearing this for they understood the significance.

The ancestor traveled deeper into the mansion until he reached a shabby house. He tidied his clothes without any slight and prostrated before the door: “Your grandson greets you, forefather.”

“Come in.” A powerful sound came from within.

The ancestor took a deep breath and entered the building. It was very neat with nothing else but a straw mat with an old man meditating on top.

He had a large stature and wore a hemp garment without any adornments. His gray hair was shining as he sat straight like a rock.

This was Forefather Yu. Descendants no longer knew his real name. They only knew that he was Yu Taijun’s only son.

This was the second Godking from the clan, a very powerful Nine Worlds’ Godking.

The clan once had five Godkings. Outside of Taijun who was an Emperor Assailant, her husband was also a terrifying Godking.

Another Godking was the Yu Ancestor’s father, or the Forefather Yu’s son. He was also another powerful Godking.

Unfortunately, these two Godkings were no longer in this world. Their lives ran out among the slow path towards the grand dao.

Just think about it, a clan that wasn’t an imperial lineage actually had five Godkings and one Emperor Assailant. Despite its small

scale, its power and prestige were mighty enough. These Godkings were the reason why the Yu Clan had an illustrious position in the Grand Sea.

After seeing the forefather, the ancestor bowed again and said: “Forefather, I’m afraid we are facing a strong enemy. He had climbed on our twelve scales and used its power.”

“I know.” The forefather slowly nodded: “Who is he?”

“A junior named Li Qiye. He came from the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect with no real backing to speak of.” The ancestor busily answered.

“Li Qiye, Cleansing Incense.” The forefather murmured these two names and fell into quiet contemplation.

“He came with ill-will. First, he seriously injured our descendant and tortured him. Then he tore apart my grandnephew’s arm. This is a very aggressive man. Right now, he’s using our twelve scales to destroy the Skyfire Warships. I’m afraid he’s coming for us soon.” The ancestor worriedly said.

His nervousness was understandable. Li Qiye came aggressively and seemed to be aiming for his clan. Moreover, he has heard of Li Qiye’s title, Fiercest, as well as the notoriety accompanying it.

“Elaborate.” The forefather inquired.

The ancestor told Yu Zhan’s story again and how he and his uncle were taught a lesson by Li Qiye. They reported the matter to the clan master and the clan master, in turn, reported it to the ancestor.

After hearing this, the forefather gently waved his sleeve and said flatly: “Let the juniors take care of their own problem. The boy is to blame for not being skilled enough and lose. Tell him to train harder. The only thing to worry about right now is the twelve scales.” He frowned after saying this.

“Hmm...” Ancestor Yu mulled over the statement as well. He was

a bit surprised that his grandfather didn't want to step up for their descendant. However, he didn't dare to remark on it because his grandfather was much more insightful than him. He surely had his reasons.

"It'll be a problem for Fiercest to have control over the twelve scales. We need to eliminate this to avoid further complication." Ancestor Yu said.

The forefather took his time thinking before answering: "Nothing is surprising since there are many great yet hidden masters in the world. However, in our generation, there should only be two people who can completely understand the twelve scales."

"Which two?" The ancestor said.

"The first is Gu Zun from Heaven Suppression. His talents are virtually peerless." The forefather replied: "If he really wants to, he can definitely understand the mysteries within. It's just that Mother is still around so he doesn't want to antagonize her."

"Who is the second then?" The ancestor didn't doubt Gu Zun's talents. After all, this was an eonic genius.

"The second... you won't know this person, no need for me to waste words." The forefather's eyes flashed for a bit but he refused to answer.

This astounded the ancestor. Just what kind of terrifying characters could this be that even his grandfather didn't want to comment on?

"Li Qiye comes with menacing intent but he's probably not on the same side as Gu Zun." The ancestor said quickly: "We're on the same side as Heaven Suppression with good ties with Ye Jiuzhou's people. Gu Zun doesn't need to aim for us, plus, Li Qiye also erased Gu Zun's shadow on the scales."

"We can't predict Gu Zun's actions with an ordinary



perspective.” The forefather shook his head: “To call Gu Zun a genius is not unreasonable but to call him a stubborn madman is fine as well. A simple junior like you can’t speculate his thoughts.”

The ancestor obediently kept his mouth shut.

“Mother will be out tomorrow. Select a few descendants and let them see her because she might not see your group again later. As for Li Qiye, she’ll make a decision.” The forefather said.

“Her Venerable wants to come out!” The ancestor was ecstatic. Though the world knew that she was finished with her cultivation, she still hasn’t left her meditation. No one in the mansion was qualified to see her outside of Forefather Yu.

“Go.” The forefather ended with a wave of his sleeve.

The happy ancestor took a deep breath and bowed again before turning to leave.

“One more thing, no need to be so close with Soaring Immortal. We do not walk on the same path with them.” The forefather added.

The ancestor was dazed for a while. He eventually calmed down and had to comment: “Soaring Immortal indeed wants to befriend us. If we have an ally like them, the benefits will come.”

In fact, the seniors in the clan knew of Yu Yulian’s crush on Long Aotian and were happy to see it coming to fruition. Even Ancestor Yu wouldn’t mind her marrying into Soaring Immortal.

The forefather raised his voice: “What do you know?! In the eyes of Soaring Immortal, we are only tools to be used. Just shallow juniors like you are qualified to talk about an alliance with Soaring Immortal? Hmph, allying with them will bring about a sect-destroying disaster.”

“Well...” The ancestor hesitated and didn’t know what to say since deep down, he wanted to form this alliance.

“Just keep this in mind, no need to investigate any further. You’ll understand in the future, our foolish descendants cannot accomplish anything great, understand?”

The ancestor bowed deeply: “Your grandson will bear this in mind.” Even though he didn’t agree with this view, he was still very respectful towards his grandfather.

In the deepest location of the mansion was a forbidden area. The Yu descendants weren’t allowed here because this was their ancestral grandmother’s living area.

There was an old and simple shrine here that had experienced countless years and beaten by the weathers.

“Squeak.” The tightly-shut wooden doors finally opened. An elderly woman with white hair running down her temples came out. Nevertheless, one could still see that she was an amazing beauty judging by her current elegant demeanor.

She walked to the garden and looked at the flowering old trees and sighed disappointedly: “Old man, the trees we planted have blossomed but you are no longer here, leaving me all alone in this world now.”

“Who?!” Her eyes suddenly became serious during this sentimental moment. Her entire being changed and a mighty aura erupted just like a general that has swept through the nine heavens!

“The grand dao is always a solitary path, you’re not the one alone.” At this time, a young man floated over and said: “Qingfeng, long time no see.”

The old woman was shaken to hear the greeting. Her eyes that were exuding frightening light widened as she stared at the young man in disbelief.

“Is, is this really you?” Her voice was trembling.

“Who else can control the twelve scales besides me? When I

changed your constitution back then, you also had the same expression, one that didn't believe in miracles." It was Li Qiye who answered with a smile.

"Your Excellency, it really is you!" The old woman shouted emotionally.

"Yes, it's me." He sentimentally spoke while looking at her: "It has been a while. Time is truly cruel."

# Chapter 1602: Matriarch Yu

---

Yu Qingfeng was the ancestral grandmother of the Yu Clan, the first general of the Black Dragon Legion during Immortal Emperor Yin Tian's generation. She was prominent as an Emperor Assailant, a truly dreadful existence.

“Qingfeng greets you, Your Excellency.” After calming down, the old woman quickly prostrated on the ground and exclaimed.

Li Qiye quickly helped her up and said: “You are no longer part of the legion so this ceremony is unnecessary.”

After being propped up, she looked at the youth while gripping his hands. After a long time, she finally touched his face.

“Your Excellency, you have truly gotten your real body.” She said emotionally.

“It is to the Black Dragon King's credit.” He gently sighed: “He went all out and sacrifice the Heaven's Will in order to get out with my body, then my soul and spirits returned.”

“Your subordinate is ashamed, not being able to aid the dragon king and you.” She sighed.

When the Black Dragon King attacked the Immortal Demon Grotto, she was still undergoing her death cultivation and couldn't lend him a hand. Otherwise, she would have participated.

“It's not your fault.” Li Qiye shook his head: “Your lifespan was over back then so it's already amazing for you to last till now. Hmm, looks like you won't be able to live for another life, but this death cultivation will at least replenish your lost longevity.”

She became dejected and answered: “The reason I can do this is all because of the old man. He used his own life to replenish mine but he...” She sighed again and stopped.

“He has always loved you and it was his choice.” Li Qiye said.

“We promised to live till the end together regardless of mundane matters but in the end, our descendants are incompetent so the old man changed his mind. He hoped that I could live longer to protect them. It’s just that the fools don’t know our trouble and sacrifices!” She became gloomier.

Her husband was also a general under the Black Dragon Legion though he wasn’t as strong as her. The lovers decided against sealing themselves and chose to live an ordinary life until death together.

Alas, their descendants deteriorated one generation after another. Only Ancestor Yu in this generation was capable of doing anything. After him, the Yu Clan had no talents to speak of.

This made her husband change his mind. He decided to let her live longer to protect their clan for a few more generations. Thus, during the end of her lifespan, he helped with the life replenishment.

Despite the successful attempt, her husband couldn’t surpass this ultimate trial so he sacrificed himself for her sake.

“How many people in this world can see through death so easily and let go?” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head.

She invited her into the old shrine. It was also very simple inside with a few carved diagrams to the left and right. They were the historical records of the Yu Clan’s ancestors.

She sat down and spoke: “I’m sure you will be able to do a lot with your real body in this generation, Your Excellency. If you need my assistance, just stay the word. I shall exert all my power for you once more.”

Li Qiye refused: “No, the two of you have gained freedom and left the legion so I won’t break your tranquility. It’s time for you to enjoy old age instead of being a part of my war chariot.”

“I owe you that much, Your Excellency. Without you, I wouldn’t

be who I am today, no, I wouldn't be alive either. The Yu Clan wouldn't be so prosperous as well." She solemnly said.

"You don't owe me anything." Li Qiye smiled: "I merely guided you and gave you a chance. What you have achieved is due to your own efforts and furthermore, you have paid everything by working in the legion for so long already. And remember, I only did a little bit to help. Your big brother is who actually saved you."

Yu Zhengfeng sealed his sister back then and spent an entire generation to accumulate enough materials before asking Li Qiye to save her. Because of this fateful encounter, they joined the Black Dragon Legion. After many victories and meritorious contributions, Matriarch Yu became the first general of the legion.

"It's all because you showed love for me and our clan." She gently sighed.

At this moment, she was willing to come out again to work for Li Qiye and same with her clan. However, he wouldn't agree to this.

"This is what you and your clan deserve." Li Qiye said with a smile.

"It's a pity that the juniors are so incompetent. Otherwise, this wouldn't be happening to me. Big brother doesn't want to look at these unworthy children so my old bones have no choice but to live on in this sad manner."

"Zhengfeng can still live for a very long time." Li Qiye nodded: "Alas, he has the World-weary Dao. It's understandable that he doesn't care for the descendants. In his eyes, the Yu Clan doesn't need his attention."

"Big brother..." She became sad when talking about her brother.

No one might remember a famous character like Yu Zhengfeng in the current generation, an Emperor Contender hiding in Discover.

But Matriarch Yu will always remember. Zhengfeng started on this invincible path just to save his beloved sister back then.

“Big brother didn’t use to be like this back then. He was a bright and energetic person on top of being very magnanimous but the trial of love overwhelmed him. He grew tired and no longer care for mundane matters.” She stated.

“No.” Li Qiye shook his head: “Your big brother has made peace with his failed love for Immortal Emperor Qian Li. His inner demon isn’t about love but himself. After choosing this dao, it is exceedingly difficult to turn back. The farther he went, the stronger he became and the more he grew tired of mortal issues. In the end, he became cursed, not even the heavens want to take him.”

“He’ll have to stay this way?” She had to ask. She didn’t wish for him to suffer such a dark fate in the upcoming years.

“No one can help him if he doesn’t want to leave.” Li Qiye shook his head: “He knew what he was getting himself into and what he would have to face. Because of this, he fought against Immortal Emperor Qian Li back then one last time but she didn’t want to kill him.”

“He probably made up his mind to walk on that imperial dao just to save me back then.” She smiled bitterly, realizing the price her brother paid just to save her.

“He created his own grand dao back then. In fact, it was a very amazing one so he had escaped the World-weary Dao yet he returned again. His choice was the same as Immortal Emperor Mu Zhuo.” Li Qiye commented.

“Mu Zhuo was an emperor then so his fortune and cultivation were greater than your big brother but he still went back to this terrible dao to be forever cursed. It was their choice, no one can do anything about it.” Li Qiye smiled wryly as well.

“Why did the emperor choose this path? He already had an imperial way.” Matriarch Yu didn’t quite understand.

The emperor's grand dao was enough to shoulder the Heaven's Will. It was a mighty and unstoppable path. But in the end, he gave up this dao and chose his previous World-weary Dao. No one could imagine such a choice.

"I don't know. I'm afraid no one knows the reason either, just some guesses." Li Qiye chuckled: "Some believe that he did it to live even longer. Or maybe this is a type of running away. However, I don't think so."

"Then what's the reason?" She asked.

Li Qiye pondered for a bit before answering: "I don't know either. We'll have to ask the emperor himself in order to find the answer but if he won't tell anyone else, there's no way to know then."



# Chapter 1603: Gu Zuns Past

---

Matriarch Yu exhaled quietly after hearing this. She also wanted to help her brother so that he could have a different life.

Alas, she was powerless in this matter because Zhengfeng was even stronger than her and more knowledgeable regarding cultivation. If he didn't wish to leave the dao himself, there was nothing she could do. The only good thing about the matter was that he would lead a very long life.

He has trained the dao to a cursed level, hated by both gods and devils. It was very difficult for him to die so in a certain sense, he has exceeded the limit of a cultivator.

Li Qiye said: "It's up to him alone now but there is still hope for a changing opportunity. He alone knows what it is though."

After a while, she changed the topic and asked: "Are you returning to take back Heaven Suppression?"

Li Qiye shook his head: "I've never thought about retaking it for my own. Heaven Suppression is separate from me but I do not want to see Gu Zun in charge, that's all. Other than him, I don't really care if anyone else were to take over."

"Gu Zun... He won't give up. It's been three generations already." Her eyes became serious.

"This is why he is exceptional." Li Qiye couldn't help but laugh: "To be perfectly candid, sometimes I do admire the brat a bit. He knows exactly who I am and know just how futile it is but he still won't give up, still hellbent on taking the treasures from me, snatching food from the jaw of a tiger! Such greed will not subside even after I took his creation and imprisoned him in the eye of the sea. Such dao heart is definitely persistent but so misguided. Otherwise, his future would have been boundless as an incredible emperor."

Matriarch Yu nodded her head in agreement. There was no need to doubt Gu Zun's talents but his mistakes have cost him his future.

“He knows you won't kill him, that's why he has no qualm right now without repenting. If it wasn't for the Black Dragon King, he would already be ashes.” She was aware of the past.

“The king beseeched for his sake but it doesn't mean that I won't kill him now.” Li Qiye chuckled: “My tolerance and patience have a limit. Gu Zun chose not to appreciate it so if I catch him again, there won't be mercy even if the Black Dragon King comes back to life and plead!”

She quietly agreed again. Outsiders didn't know about Gu Zun's imprisonment in the eye of the sea but as the first general of the legion and one of the executors of the sentence, she was privy to the information.

“He won't give up so easily.” She speculated from her own understanding of Gu Zun's characters.

“Yes.” Li Qiye smirked: “At this moment, his disciple, Ye Jiuzhou, is in charge of Heaven Suppression. Though he isn't showing his face, he's controlling everything in the background. Jiuzhou is only a pawn.”

“Great as Gu Zun might be, just give the commands, our men shall capture Gu Zun so that you can sentence him.” The matriarch offered.

Though the legion was only in name right now, the old generals from Immortal Emperor Qian Li and Immortal Emperor Yin Tian's generations were still alive.

“No.” Li Qiye shook his head: “This started because of me so I shall end it. If he won't repent, I'll personally kill him in order to give the king a fair answer.”

She became sentimental and commented: “An eonic genius... A

single thought ruined his life. With your guidance and the Black Dragon King's protection, he could have been one of the greatest emperors of the ages. Alas, he has fallen to this level."

It was no wonder that she would have such feelings. Gu Zun had incomparable advantages compared to everyone else back then. It would have been difficult for him to not become an emperor due to his talents and having a supreme overlord like the Black Dragon King as his backer.

Greed destroyed his boundless potential. His fortunes were also taken away from him during his imprisonment. Death would have been his fate if it wasn't for the king.

If it wasn't for his ill-considered thoughts, It wouldn't have been Immortal Emperor Yin Tian's generation after Immortal Emperor Qian Li. Gu Zun would have been the one. In the end, such unparalleled talents were wasted.

"After Immortal Emperor Yin Tian, Gu Zun also thought about becoming an emperor. Maybe he wants to use that power to fight against you, Your Excellency. Perhaps he has the same goal in this generation." The matriarch wandered.

"So what if he becomes an emperor? If he dares to oppose me, I'll kill him all the same." Li Qie said flatly: "The sin of past has been forgiven. However, during Immortal Emperor Ta Kong's generation, he has committed an unforgivable crime, enough for eternal damnation."

"Do you know why I still haven't tormented him just yet?" Li Qiye asked.

"Because of the king." She briefly mused before answering.

"That's right. The king seized my real body again at a great price. He also knew that I won't spare Gu Zun so when that day comes, he hoped for a swift end unlike the torture back then." Li Qiye gently sighed.

The Black Dragon King's expedition back then wasn't only to pay back Li Qiye. A small part of it was due to Gu Zun!

"He has done as much as he can for Gu Zun." The matriarch replied.

"He knows that Gu Zun isn't worth it. It's only because he has promised Gu Zun's older sister to take care of him, and that as long as he is still in this world, nothing will happen to Gu Zun. He thought that he owed her that much, that's why he begged for Gu Zun." Li Qiye sighed again.

Gu Zun was the king's younger brother-in-law, the only relative of his wife. She died early so the king has lived in anguish, thinking that he owed her.

Because of this, he promised her to take good care of Gu Zun, and that as long as he was alive, nothing would happen to Gu Zun! This was why he begged the Dark Crow to spare Gu Zun after the crime. Otherwise, Gu Zun would have died a hundred times over.

"The king is a man of his words." The matriarch gently sighed. This was one of the reasons why so many people respected the Black Dragon King. Alas, having a brother-in-law like Gu Zun only dragged him down.

"I'll be swift when killing Gu Zun out of consideration for the king." Li Qiye said flatly.

The matriarch didn't say anything else. She could sympathize with the king's emotions. For example, her descendants were a mess as well so she was quite frustrated.

"I wonder when my clan will fall because of those fools." She said with feeling.

"With the twelve scales and eighteen crystal cannons, even if the future generations are incompetent and the clan starts to decline, it is still impossible for outsiders to destroy it. Of course, unless they were to provoke some real Emperor Assailants. Otherwise,

the clan will still go on.” Li Qiye chuckled.

“That’s why I’m worried.” The matriarch forced a smile: “The fools don’t know that there is always a higher mountain and a better man. They think that because the ancestors are around, anyone will give them some face. That’s why I won’t give them the eighteen cannons, that will only harm them.”

“Makes sense.” Li Qiye laughed: “If they were to experience that power, they will be too happy and think no one can mess with them.”

“I don’t know how much longer I can live.” The matriarch responded: “Zongying doesn’t have that much time either so who knows how long the clan will last if the fools are in charge.”

Zongying was her son, Forefather Yu.

“Living can be a type of pain, even if it is through hibernation.” Li Qiye commented on her mood.

She was quite sad and wanted to wait for death after the passing of her husband but she needed to live longer to take care of her descendants. Living was painful for her at this moment!

# Chapter 1604: The Yu Children

---

For many eons now, not too many ancestors were willing to give up on their descendants. Because of this, many famous Godkings chose to hibernate underground and lived in the dark in order to stay alive. They relied on their own reputation and power to protect their descendants.

“Children have their own fortune, just let them be.” Li Qiye said.

“I’ll do that after this and maybe the next generation since I’ll be one with the earth by then.” She sighed gently. She was ready to die.

Li Qiye said with a smile: “The years are always changing. There is no evergreen tree and the Black Dragon Legion that has threatened the world for three generations shall end too.” He exhaled in lamentation.

Just imagine how prestigious and invincible this legion used to be. Even imperial legions had to make way.

Alas, no one could live for that long so the soldiers and generals in the legion continued to change. From Immortal Emperor Qian Li to Immortal Emperor Yin Tian and finally, Immortal Emperor Ta Kong, so many brave warriors came and went!

Matriarch Yu was the best general during Immortal Emperor Yin Tian’s generation. At the end of this period, she and her husband were granted permission by Li Qiye to leave and start their clan.

Many generals did the same. As they grew older, they went back to their home and lived reclusively.

However, even the strongest couldn’t withstand the test of time. Without hibernating underground, they wouldn’t live for much longer than one generation. Because of this, many of them have passed away.

“I still remember the generals quite well. I guess it’s not possible

to see some of them face to face now.” He said with a tinge of disappointment.

She nodded sentimentally and responded: “When everyone returned to civilian life, the painting drawn by you is still being stored in my clan. Wait, I’ll bring it here for you to see, Your Excellency.”

“Generals’ Diagram, huh.” Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile. He nodded: “Alright, it’ll be comforting.”

She quickly entered the building and took out a painting. Li Qiye personally drew it back then and gave it to the couple before they left the legion.

After she left, Li Qiye went around to look at the murals on the two walls. Some detailed the glories of their clan.

Of course, the couple played a prominent role in the murals since they were the strongest ancestors. Any battle involving them was recorded in great details.

Li Qiye was immersed in this viewing about the couples’ old battles. He suddenly went back in time with expeditions across the nine worlds. This was a brilliant era, at least for the Black Dragon Legion.

They reigned for three generations and became synonymous with the Black Dragon King to a certain extent. Unfortunately, after his incredible battle, the nine worlds fell into the Difficult Dao Era. From then on, the legion also disappeared. No one saw its banner again.

Li Qiye sighed while looking at the murals. The king paid too high of a price to save him. Of course, he understood that part of it was the king trying to make up for Gu Zun’s crime.

As Li Qiye was relishing this moment, it became loud outside with a row of people filing in, both young and old. They respectfully came inside in an orderly fashion.

The person leading the way was Forefather Yu with Ancestor Yu after him. There were several other influential ancestors after them. Then it was Clan Master Yu and some excellent prodigies. Yu Yulian and Yu Zhan were part of this group.

Today was when the matriarch would come out so the forefather brought the descendants here to see their ancestral grandmother once. In fact, the young ones never had this chance previously, not even the clan master.

Even a Godking like Ancestor Yu had only seen her a few times growing up. The forefather was the one who saw her the most.

“Who are you?!” All the members were shocked to see Li Qiye standing there. Forefather Yu’s expression sank.

This was their important ground and outsiders were forbidden to enter. But now, a person was here out of nowhere. How could the forefather who was responsible for safety precautions here not be shocked? His eyes turned cold as he glared at Li Qiye.

“That’s him!” Yu Zhan reacted like a cat that had its tail stepped on. His face turned white as he pointed and shouted at Li Qiye.

He unconsciously took a few steps back from fear of the last beating. However, he became bolder since all the ancestors were here so he arched his chest proudly.

“Fiercest!” Ancestor Yu and the clan master were astonished to see him. They didn’t expect for him to show up in this place. Of course, they were aware that he might have some plans toward their clan but not this fast.

He ignored the rest and gazed at Forefather Yu. He smiled and said: “Zongying, right?”

“You are...” It was the forefather’s turn to be astonished because Zongying was his childhood name. But now, a stranger actually called him out with it.

“What’s going on?” The matriarch got the drawing from her



room and asked after seeing this scene.

“Your Venerable.” Ancestor Yu immediately prostrated on the ground: “Your descendant greets you and wishes you good health.”

“Your Venerable.” The rest of the members who had never seen her before prostrated as well.

Only Yu Zongying was looking at Li Qiye in a daze. In this split second, he certainly thought of something.

“Rise.” The matriarch nodded.

Everyone stood up and became quiet. The ancestor took another look at Li Qiye and reported softly: “Your Venerable, this person is called Fiercest. He harbors ill-intentions towards our clan and actually has grasped the twelve scales’ power.”

“Your Venerable, this person has besmirched our reputation and hurt our members. He even crushed all of my bones. I was useless and couldn’t maintain our prestige so he humiliated me.” Yu Zhan saw Ancestor Yu’s hostility and quickly added some convincing evidence.

Yulian was surprised as well. She didn’t think he would be so courageous as to enter their forbidden ground and provoke an Emperor Assailant in their ancestral grandmother. It was as if he has [eaten the heart of a tiger and guts of a leopard](#).

“Fiercest looks down on everyone and thinks he’s the best. Your Venerable, please annihilate his arrogance and punish him for the crime of insulting our clan.” Yu Zhan wanted to leave an impression with this first meeting so he boldly narrated Li Qiye’s evil deeds.

“Shut up, slap him.” The matriarch uttered with a cold expression.

Yu Zhan was stunned after hearing this, same with Ancestor Yu and everyone present. No one expected for the matriarch to side with an outsider.

“Pa! Pa!” Yu Zongying regained his wits and slapped Yu Zhan twice until blood spilled before pushing him down: “Kneel.”

Yu Zhan helplessly kneeled on the spot.

“Mother.” He then bowed towards the matriarch while glancing nervously at Li Qiye because he had understood a few things.

“Zongying, back at Heaven Suppression during your childhood, do you remember your sun-gazing meditation?” She said slowly.

The forefather shuddered with both excitement and fear. He stared at Li Qiye in disbelief and stepped forward then kneeled before him: “This lowly one didn’t think I could see your hallowed appearance again in this lifetime, please excuse me for my lack of hospitality...”

“Rise, no fault in not knowing.” Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve in response.

Just an idiom about a person being too brazen. Had to translate this literally

# Chapter 1605: Candidate

---

Yu Zongying stood up with an uncontainable excitement. Not even in his dreams did he think he would get to see the sacred teacher again.

He was very young back then, but he still remembered the sacred teacher taking him out to watch to sunset on a whale at sea. One had to remember, the sacred teacher was a supreme existence, the ruler of the nine worlds. To a large extent, it was only because of his parents' contribution that he was able to earn the teacher's favor.

After so many years, the ruler of the nine worlds had visited their clan again. This was the greatest of honor!

Yu Ancestor and the others were wide-eyed. Forefather Yu had a great position in the clan. This was a Nine Worlds' Godking kneeling before Fiercest today! It was all too shocking!

"Fools, frogs under the well that can't see Mt. Tai," The matriarch scolded.

"Forget it, it's not their fault." Li Qiye sat on the master chair and gently shook his head.

He would have done something to the others but because of the matriarch, he couldn't get angry at all. Otherwise, how could someone like Yu Zhan prance around in front of him for so long?

In a short time, the group didn't dare to breathe loudly. They didn't know Fiercest's identity but their forefather was so respectful. Even an idiot would realize that his background was incredible.

Meanwhile, Yu Zhan didn't even dare to look up while kneeling.

The matriarch was disappointed while staring at her descendants lowering their head. The Yu Clan had fewer capable people as time went on. There was a clear deterioration.

Zongying could take care of the clan as long as he was around but once he became older, only Ancestor Yu could do anything. The decline was near if such a large clan relied on one or two people for administration.

She found the situation quite difficult. It wasn't a lack of resource but a lack of disciples with potential. Of course, this wasn't only in talents.

This prompted her to yell at them: "A bunch of stagnated fools. A lifetime of fortune is wasted on all of you!"

Ancestor Yu and the others didn't dare to say anything back.

"Your Excellency, do you see any hope for them?" She asked Li Qiye.

In her mind, in terms of grooming and recognizing talents, no one could compare to him. He had trained too many peerless characters across the ages.

The group shuddered after hearing her address and became even more afraid of Fiercest's background.

"I'm old now so I don't want to waste their time." He gently shook his head.

She gently sighed after hearing this and knew that her worthless descendants couldn't get into his sight. Otherwise, if any of them were to gain his favor and tutelage, they would have a bright future.

"Everyone, come greet His Excellency." She coldly ordered. This was her attempt to create a safety net for them.

They didn't dare to show any slight and quickly went forward to kneel. Li Qiye only nodded without speaking.

Zongying standing to the side also realized that Li Qiye didn't like any of the children here.

The matriarch looked at them and scowled again: "All of you

have so many resources but look at yourselves, some half-ass cultivation, not even as strong as a vagrant cultivator. Too used to playing around, have you forgotten that you're a cultivator? Maybe you think of yourself as a regular noble son and daughter!?"

The kids didn't dare to utter a single word back.

She continued on: "Little Dan, you have been working hard these years but you lack foresight and are too doting on them. The lack of discipline has turned them into these young masters!"

Ancestor Yu has been in charge of the clan. An old person like Forefather Yu rarely asked about daily businesses. The ancestor bowed his head and apologized: "Your grandson is incompetent and had ruined their development, please punish me."

"You shall personally teach them now!" The matriarch uttered: "From today on, our clan shall close its doors. All children and disciples will adhere to strict discipline. Before reaching a certain cultivation, no more leaving the clan in order to avoid losing more face!"

She had no choice but to do this. The members lacked the right dao heart, not resources. They have lived too leisurely and everything came easy. Their high status in life left them complacent.

Because of this, they couldn't resist external temptations and found it impossible to meditate in peace. Thus, the first thing she will do after coming out is to use an iron law to sharpen these disciples.

"I shall obey." Ancestor Yu kneeled down again.

Next was Yu Zhan's turn to be scolded. She said sternly: "You are young so it's fine to be ignorant but you have no skill, only rely on the clan to show off. No more resources for thirty years, go immerse yourself in the marsh for one hundred years to wash away your vanity!"

The boy turned pale. This punishment was not easy for a young master like him but he didn't dare to disobey. He prostrated and said: "I accept the punishment."

She scowled again but was lamenting in her mind. All seniors loved their children but she had to be strict to change the current superficial culture in the clan.

"Your Excellency, how about picking one of them?" She asked Li Qiye once more.

She has dropped all of her pride in order to beseech him again even if he didn't like any of them. She hoped that he would at least give some guidance to just one. That would be more than enough for the clan.

Even if it was a talentless person, they would have the chance to be exceptional under his tutelage. The clan had no successor at the moment. Zongying won't live much longer and same with Ancestor Yu. Because of this, they required a youth that could handle the responsibility.

This was the reason why she let go of her pride to ask him and seize this rare opportunity.

Li Qiye sighed in response. He naturally wouldn't care about this matter if it was someone else but since this was an old general asking, he had to give her some sensibilities.

In the end, he perused the crowd. His eyes ended on Yulian: "Her then."

The kneeling girl was surprised to be chosen by Li Qiye. After all, their last interaction was one of hostility.

"Come over." The matriarch smiled at his concession and waved at Yulian.

The dazed girl still came over and kneeled: "Yulian greets you, ancestor."

“This will be a test for you, will you accept?” The matriarch spoke slowly: “You need determination and will in order to seize the chance at reforging your unstable dao heart.”

She stared at Yulian and continued: “This path will not be easy, laden with difficulties even. You need to face pain and hard choices but if you can keep going with a firm dao heart, your future will be glorious.”

“I...” She was hesitant with a mix of hope and fear.

Ancestor Yu was anxious and confused at her hesitation. This was a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity. Even a Grand Godking like him couldn't be this lucky yet Yulian was given this godsend chance.

“Child, what can't you let go of?” As an Emperor Assailant, the matriarch has seen everything and understood.

“I...” The girl couldn't speak.

“Because of Long Aotian?” Ancestor Yu realized right away and spoke softly.

“I don't know.” She blushed and lowered her head.

In the past, their clan wanted for this to happen but this was no longer the case. Now, he wanted for Yulian to stay. After all, after her training, she would play a pivotal position in the clan.

“The Soaring Immortal kid is not suitable for you. Even if you marry him, nothing good will come of it.” The matriarch poured cold water over her.

“Ancestor...” Yulian cried out but didn't know what to say.

# Chapter 1606: Yulians Choice

---

## Chapter 1606: Yulian's Choice

While Yulian was opening her mouth, Ancestor Yu hurried interjected: "Ancestor, the successor of Soaring Immortal is a grand completion Immortal Physique, one of the strongest candidates for the throne with the arts from five emperors. Quite a rare talent." He gave a quick glance at Li Qiye without daring to say more.

"What is this about being one of the strongest candidates, it is only fleeting like the early morning dew or the moon on the river's surface." The matriarch said coldly: "A grand completion Soaring Immortal Physique still won't do."

Her juniors weren't aware but she knew that all of this was still useless. Moreover, as the first general of the Black Dragon Legion, she understood the result of those who would compete against Li Qiye. Even if the boy was from Soaring Immortal, he would only serve as bones on Li Qiye's path in the future.

Yulian still kept her head low. The seniors knew that she liked Long Aotian but no one explicitly stated it. A young girl like her felt quite shy at this moment.

The matriarch went on: "I shouldn't interfere with the younger generation's love. However, is it a one-sided affair or does he like you back?"

Yulian trembled a bit after hearing this. Aotian didn't know of her crush at all. It was her one-sided crush since she had never expressed it.

Her expression couldn't elude the matriarch's eyes. The matriarch spoke: "So it's one-sided."

The girl was pale and didn't dare to respond.

"Reflect on this for me." The monarch elaborated: "If he's the



successor of Soaring Immortal with the arts of five emperors and a grand completion physique, so many princesses in the world will adore him. Even though you shouldn't belittle yourself, some self-awareness is necessary. In terms of talents and beauty, can you compete with all the other women? Can you make him love you?"

Her head tilted down even more. She knew full well that her conditions were good but there were more exceptional women in this world. Long Aotian wouldn't necessarily like her which was why she had never confessed.

"Even if you have the chance to marry into that sect, it's already pushing it for you to be a concubine. There are too many disciples there at the same level as you." The experienced matriarch explained: "If that's the case, why should the sect take you in? It is simply to win our clan's influence in the Grand Sea. They want to take advantage of your ancestors. Outside of that, they don't care for our clan nor you. We'll just be used as tools."

She shuddered again after hearing the assessment. Every girl had some dreams, more or less, in their heart. But now, the frank assessment cruelly pierced through these dreams. She clenched her fists and tried her best to stop trembling.

"Love is human nature so that's not a criticism on you. However, you are still young, yet to see the real world and the resplendent grand dao." The matriarch continued.

"Your talents are fine but now, you are given the chance. Make up your mind and polish your dao heart then your life will change. Once you reach that particular level, you can live for several tens of thousand years while maintaining your youthfulness. At that point when you stand at the apex, your vision will become even broader and you will come to understand that there are even more wondrous and scintillating things in the world. You will meet even more exceptional talents. That is when you will know what you truly want!"

Her sonorous guidance reached the heart. All of the clan members were carefully listening.

Even Ancestor Yu sighed in his mind. A Godking like him could be considered to be an experienced man and had a different interpretation of her words. In the past, he failed to understand this until he was older. Alas, it was too late then since he didn't become a Godking till old age. At this particular level, one had a different perspective on the world.

Perhaps this perspective would change even more at the Emperor Assailant level. That's not something he would dare to imagine, however. He knew that Yulian was the most hopeful child in their clan as well. If she could be groomed, then her future would be quite promising.

"If you sever romance now, you will be able to pick a different path! Do you want to be an ordinary woman or a master smiling down on the world? This is your choice!" The matriarch asked.

A conflict waged in her mind. In the end, she gritted her teeth and said solemnly: "Ancestor, I accept the training and guidance!"

"Very good." The matriarch nodded approvingly while looking at Yulian. She turned towards Li Qiye and said: "Your Excellency, what do you think?"

"I can't stay long so I can't personally teach her." Li Qiye shook his head: "But it is very suitable for you to teach your own descendant. In my view, she's suitable to cultivate the Step Scripture so I'll allow for you to teach her that."

The matriarch was slightly disappointed until she heard the latter part. Li Qiye had guidelines for his followers. Certain merit laws were passable to their descendants and some weren't.

As someone who had cultivated the Step Scripture, she knew better than anyone just how powerful it was. Thus, his permission was a very big deal.

“Thank His Excellency already, others couldn’t ask for such a fortune.” The matriarch told Yulian instantly.

Yulian regained her wits and hurriedly bowed towards Li Qiye. Nevertheless, she had no fitting words for this occasion.

“No need for formality.” Li Qiye waved his sleeve: “Your ancestor seized this fortune for you, do not let her down.”

“Yes.” She quietly affirmed.

“From today on, you will stay in the courtyard so I can teach you.” The matriarch told her.

This was a glimmer of hope for the matriarch. She couldn’t teach all the children at her age but now, she could plant the seed for their future successor.

Yulian bowed again without speaking. Meanwhile, Clan Master Yu was very excited for his daughter. Being taught by the matriarch meant that she would be the next successor. No one would be able to take this away from her.

“Everyone, leave now.” The matriarch ordered: “Zongying, you stay.”

They followed her command and everyone left, outside of Zongying.

Zongying was still shaken all the same. The other disciples didn’t know who they were looking at but he did. This was the supreme ruler of the nine worlds. Ordinary people weren’t qualified to know his identity.

“To see you again, sacred teacher, is beyond my wildest dream.” Zongying said excitedly.

“You have a good memory since you were only learning how to speak back then.” Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh.

The old man smiled awkwardly. He seemed like a child before someone as old as Li Qiye: “Sacred teacher, I have always looked up

to you.”

“The boy never forgot about you and even wanted to join the Black Dragon Legion but the old man didn’t let him.” The matriarch smiled and shook her head.

The past embarrassed him so he let out a hollow laugh: “The Black Dragon Legion threatened the world for three generations with the hallowed Black Dragon King. Sacred teacher also reigned eternally so I really dreamt about leading the troops to battle back then.”

“It’s good that your father didn’t let you or I wouldn’t know what to do. The Yu Clan only has you so if anything bad were to happen, how can I face your parents?” Li Qiye laughed.

“The children didn’t try hard enough.” The matriarch let out a long sigh: “Otherwise, we would have let him train in the legion.”

The couple didn’t only have one child but Zongying was the only successful one. His other brothers and sisters have already died before him due to their weaker cultivation.

Because of this, the Yu Clan only had him to take care of everything so his dad didn’t permit him to join the legion since any mishap might end their lineage.

# Chapter 1607: Marriage Alliance

---

While Li Qiye stayed as a guest at the Yu Mansion, news suddenly came from the Grand Sea regarding the marriage alliance between Soaring Immortal and Heaven Suppression. Zi Cuining will marry Long Aotian! They will meet to talk about the marriage at Soaring Immortal's territory.

There was an uproar after this news since there had been rumors previously. However, they came from different channels, not the official ones like right now.

Because of this, though many believed it, some remained skeptical until this official announcement. The alliance was no longer limited to speculation but more of a sure thing.

“Two behemoths in our generation are still deciding to join forces.” One ancestor from a great power murmured in a daze.

Any insightful person would know the result of this alliance. It meant that nothing would be able to stop them since one had five emperors and the other reigned for the most recent three generations. Perhaps an Immortal Emperor would be able to stop them but nothing else in the nine worlds.

“Soaring Immortal had been separated from the nine worlds for a long time, they indeed need the support from Heaven Suppression. Nothing could be more perfect and powerful than this alliance.” Even Godkings from the last generation were aghast after hearing this.

The great powers in the Grand Sea had the biggest reaction since they didn't want to see this the most. This alliance would infringe on all of their territories. It meant that all decisions on the region could be arbitrarily made by just two sects. Everyone else must listen because these two could turn a great power to ashes overnight. Alas, no one could change the situation.

Meanwhile, many enjoyed talking about it as well, especially the younger crowd. They didn't care for the politics and balance of power, only the angle of romance.

"I heard Heaven Suppression Goddess was very close to Fiercest back in Eastern Hundred Cities. There were some rumors about them being lovers in the Heavenly Dao Academy too." A gossipier revealed.

"Hmph, Fiercest is indeed strong enough to be arrogant but nowadays, the only thing that matters is one's origin. He came from Cleansing Incense, that's nothing. It's a different story for Aotian with Soaring Immortal. He has the lineage of an emperor and the arts of five, such a noble upbringing. How can a nobody like Li Qiye match him? With the goddess' proud background, she naturally should be together with a heavenly prince like Aotian." An old-fashioned cultivator said with disdain.

Some immediately became unhappy with this guy who thought he was better than everyone else just because of his background. One young cultivator, who was a big fan of Li Qiye, retorted: "So what if they have noble upbringing? Hmph, Fiercest doesn't give a damn. Oppose him and even imperial children will be slaughtered like dogs, not worth mentioning."

"That's right." Many vagabonds agreed with the sentiment: "You think having a noble upbringing is that great? Fiercest never lacked women before. So many prestigious princesses and saintesses are willing to marry him. Fairy Mei, Sword Goddess Bai, all of them are from imperial lineages and they want to follow him anyway..."

Most cultivators from smaller sects and especially the vagabonds disliked hearing contemptuous remarks the most from the nobles. They found such rhetoric to be contemptuous.

Meanwhile, Cleansing Incense was a downtrodden sect. Thus, in their eyes, Li Qiye's achievement was a breakthrough for them so

they viewed him as their pride!

“I agree. Fiercest won’t have a lack of women just because of his accomplishments. He can get as many as he wants.” Another person added: “Heaven Suppression Goddess only agreed to marry Aotian because of the marriage alliance, it doesn’t mean that she likes him. She probably loves Fiercest even more. After all, he was her first love back at the academy...”

The debates became fiercer and eventually turned into scandals. Many began to spout that Li Qiye and the goddess promised to marry each other back at the academy. Thus, the current marriage proposal was purely political in nature.

“Hmph, I heard that Fiercest will steal the bride for sure.” Some unknown cultivators spread this message. Who knows their real intent behind this?

“Steal the bride, really now?” Many were stunned after hearing this.

“One hundred percent. Just think about it, who is Fiercest? Has he been afraid of anyone? Soaring Immortal and Aotian are nothing to him, same with Heaven Suppression City! If Aotian dares to steal his woman, he might try to trample both the city and Soaring Immortal!” A speaker swore to his friend about the validity of this rumor.

Regardless of the ulterior motives of the message, many people found it reasonable. They all knew about Fiercest’s temper and merciless nature. There was nothing he didn’t dare to do in this world. It would be strange if he didn’t try to flip Soaring Immortal over since Aotian was trying to steal his woman.

“Fiercest will definitely teach Soaring Immortal a lesson!” The helpless great powers wanted this particular development.

At the same time, the Peacock Bright Monarch immediately reported to Li Qiye about the commotion.

Li Qiye simply smiled after hearing about the marriage.

“I’m afraid Ancestor Ye’s group is forcing the City Lord. Maybe she lost her authority now.” The monarch worriedly said.

“With me here, Gu Zun’s tricks won’t amount to anything.” He chuckled.

The monarch quietly nodded since she couldn’t do anything with her own power so she placed her hope on him. She stared at him for a bit but refrained from speaking.

“Go ahead.” Li Qiye took note and said with a smile.

She smiled wryly with a strange expression before speaking: “Rumor has it that you and the city lord had a marriage pact back at the academy so a lot of people think you will go steal the bride.”

“That’s just a message sent by the local great powers.” Li Qiye laughed: “Very well, if people want to have a show, then why not? It’ll be lively when I go do it.”

He certainly understood that people wanted to egg him on. However, he didn’t really mind. Since Gu Zun was aiming for him, he wanted to return the favor by destroying the alliance. He went to see the matriarch afterward.

She also heard the news and said instantly: “This is Gu Zun’s plan. He wants to drag Soaring Immortal down and use its power to oppose you.”

“I know.” Li Qiye replied: “Gu Zun knows himself that he alone can’t take me on at all so he requires an ally, and who is better than Soaring Immortal? Is there a more powerful lineage compared to Soaring Immortal in the nine worlds?”



# Chapter 1608: Old Mystery

---

The matriarch shook her head in response: “Even if Gu Zun involves Soaring Immortal, they can’t stop you at all even if they utilize their full potential.”

“That sect needs to pray for their own fortune. If they grow some eyes, they can continue to survive. But if their eyes are on the back of their head, then I’ll just end them.” Li Qiye smiled leisurely.

The matriarch was accustomed to such style. For the world, Soaring Immortal was full of experts and could be considered the supreme of the nine worlds. However, for Li Qiye, this was only a big sect at best. He could destroy them whenever he wanted. This was the reason why Soaring Immortal chose not to come out for three generations!

“The sect should know a bit about you, right?” She said.

Li Qiye smiled back: “You lived during Immortal Emperor Yin Tian’s generation so you don’t understand Soaring Immortal completely. Its power structure isn’t simple. It has many external realms with an incredible amount of citizens and maybe more than ten million disciples.”

He paused for a bit before continuing: “Its power structure, to put it in the simplest manner, is made up of five branches. It is complex and changes in each era. Whichever branch has the advantage would be in charge.”

“That might be so but does it matter which branch is in charge? None of them should try to touch your whiskers, especially Immortal Emperor Tun Ri and Immortal Emperor Ba Mie’s branch. The generals under their wings should still be loyal towards you.” The matriarch said.

“The times are changing, same with Soaring Immortal. Plus, Tun Ri and Ba Mie aren’t considered my students since I only helped

and taught them a bit.” Li Qiye shook his head.

“Plus, they are powerless too. After all, the sect has its own rules and they have made their pact. Moreover, they are old now and might not have control over anything.” He elaborated.

“If they really wish to oppose you, then they’re just frogs under the well seeking their own destruction.” She stated.

Li Qiye revealed a faint smile: “The chance of them suiciding is quite high. Immortal Emperor Ren Xian’s influence is great so his branch should be quite strong now.”

She frowned in response: “Hmm, you think the emperor still had grudges against you back then so he left behind some plans to oppose you?”

“Ren Xian has great self-control. Regardless of his origin and bloodline, he is still an emperor with the foresight to understand what should and shouldn’t be done. In spite of his great achievements, he still showed great restraint after becoming emperor, that’s why he wanted the title, [Ren Xian](#)!”

“He wants to get on your good side on top of showing his determination against his origin so his title flaunts a human origin.” The matriarch was aware of the circumstances.

Back then, Ren Xian was the chosen candidate from Soaring Immortal for the Heaven’s Will. However, because of his bloodline, Li Qiye didn’t agree with this but Soaring Immortal was hellbent on having a fifth emperor.

They had a minor fight because of this but the sect ultimately made many promises, even a blood oath. The emperor himself was part of this.

Due to all the concessions, Li Qiye chose to turn a blind eye to the competition.

During that generation, the young emperor didn’t let the sect down. He swept through the nine worlds and seized the throne.

Nevertheless, even after becoming invincible, he kept his promise and was still very respectful towards the Dark Crow.

“Although I didn’t agree with him becoming an emperor, he did a good job after the fact. Regardless of his sincerity, he still kept his promise and exercised self-control. He didn’t do certain things just because he was an emperor or his sect was Soaring Immortal...”

“... It’s hard to criticize him in these aspects. The problem is his descendants. They believe Soaring Immortal is the true ruler of the nine worlds, and that their bloodline is the most powerful and precious. These beliefs drove them crazy.”

“Therefore, they were forced to isolate themselves, not allowed to come into being during Immortal Emperor Qian Li’s generation.” She said.

She didn’t personally experience the ordeal but she had heard of it before. In the past, some people in the sects secretly did a few things with their bloodline and invoked the anger of the Dark Crow.

He forcefully searched every inch of Soaring Immortal. The sect trembled before his coming and many big shots were forced to commit suicide! In the end, they isolated themselves from the world. This was the reason why so few disciples from the sect showed up during the Black Dragon King’s three generations.

“A bunch of idiots being bitten by their own blood, thinking that they’re the masters of the world.” Li Qiye said emotionlessly.

“Bitten?” She was surprised to hear this: “Will it devour their body eventually?”

Li Qiye shook his head: “I don’t know but they’ll increasingly be removed from their own race while inching closer to the true nature of this bloodline. This is why the bloodline is so frightening. Even the thinnest strand could have a chance for atavism! That’s why this race was so powerful!”

“Did you find any clues when you searched the sect back then?” She asked after contemplating quietly.

“Just a little bit. They had absolute loyalty to Soaring Immortal. Once they knew that I was about to pry even more, they immediately committed suicide and destroyed all traces. However, I know some of them tried to experiment with this blood already.” Li Qiye chuckled.

“They actually hid it from you? It must be a big deal then.” Her expression slightly changed.

“It has something to do with a supreme artifact.” Li Qiye’s eyes became serious as well: “It’s not at Soaring Immortal but I’m sure it has secretly shown up there every once in a while. That’s the reason why I’m certain the item is still in this race’s possession!”

She vaguely understood what the item was because Li Qiye had been searching for it when he was in control of the nine worlds.

“It doesn’t matter since it won’t escape my grasp in the end.” Li Qiye calmly declared: “I don’t care how many generations or how well they hide it, I’ll take it one day.

The matriarch knew that Li Qiye has set up a big trap and was just ready for the enemy to fall down.

After a short while, she said softly: “Your Excellency, why did you relent then? If you were steadfast against letting them train Immortal Emperor Ren Xian, they wouldn’t necessarily dare to do it then.”

Li Qiye pondered this question carefully. He closed his eyes and leaned back on the master chair as if sleeping.

He eventually opened his eyes and replied: “No one really has a heart of iron. Or maybe it was because I have killed too many people so I turned soft-hearted then.”

She didn’t reply, only waiting to listen to him.

“Sometimes in the dead of the night, I thought about whether I have massacred too many people. But then again, I should never show mercy on this matter. If humans or any of the races had something to do with this, I should slaughter them.” He said slowly.

“Your Excellency, you were right about this. Only by wiping out this blood completely would the nine worlds have peace. Otherwise, darkness shall still loom over all of us.” The matriarch said solemnly.

“Qingfeng, I know you have always supported and listened to me. But, you have never actually witnessed the periods when I massacred the nine worlds, when I let the blood seep deep into the soil! During those times, some generals started to waver. Tell me, what should I have done with them?”

“Kill.” She answered without hesitation.

“Yes. and killed them I did.” Li Qiye closed his eyes again and said bitterly: “Personally ordering the death of loyal generals with countless meritorious exploits... It’s not an easy thing for the heart.”

Silence took over the room. After a good while, he gently sighed: “Therefore, I am a tyrant, the dark hand behind the curtains. I am someone who can only exist in the darkness. I’m not an Immortal Emperor, a beacon of light, only a heartless butcher who had slaughtered the nine worlds. My hands are stained with so much blood!”

Ren Xian = Man + Virtuous/Worthy. This is a hard title to translate because it has underlying meanings and implications, not just to sound cool

# Chapter 1609: Eighteen Crystal Cannons

---

The monarch carefully chose her words: “It doesn’t matter who you are, Your Excellency. You are someone who shoulders what no one else dares! Immortal Emperors have their shining generations but they only shoulder an invincible power, not the immense weight of the nine worlds! Who is the one doing so, besmirched with infamy, but still protect the nine worlds? It’s not the Immortal Emperors and the myriad races and powers. You are the watcher, Your Excellency, the stopper of the darkness. Your existence allows for the brilliant Emperors Era.”

She paused for a moment before continuing: “Without you, the darkness would be coming again sooner or later. You have been doing your job, wiping away this bloodline all this time, not the emperors. They were indeed amazing and there’s no denying that they had walked on a path paved with bones too, but none had ever committed a massacre of your magnitude. It’s not because of their inability, it’s because they did not wish to do so! They were enamored by their own reputation, not wanting to be reviled by future generation as a butcher who slaughters the innocence...”

A sigh interrupted her speech: “They cherished this reputation too much and feared that doing evil deeds would end with criticisms. For example, killing innocent people after becoming emperors. Many of them were aware that at the beginning of the Emperors Era, this bloodline was still flowing in the nine worlds. They scattered with hybridizations everywhere. With this information, they also knew that the darkness will come again but why didn’t they do a mass cleansing? It’s all due to their own self-absorption. Because of this, all along, you’re the only one who has to shoulder the curses of the world. You’re the only one who doesn’t care about the respect of others or whether they fear you or not. Due to your lack of ulterior motives, you are able to correct the grand mistake by raising your executioner blade to sever the

bloodline!”

She earnestly continued: “You were indeed a butcher, the dark hand behind the curtains. However, without your continuous cleansing, what would the nine worlds look like now? Like you have said, the blood will bite back. With the slightest incaution, the myriad races will cease to exist. Humans, spirits, golems will be no longer; only one race will be left. It won’t just be an enslaving darkness since by that point, every race will have become just one.”

“Thus, all creatures in the nine worlds should be grateful to you. Your conquests made it possible for them to live to the present. But maybe you are right, I have never experienced one of these great massacres. However, I can see one thing for certain, the future of the nine worlds without you. Because of this, I will support you. If you need to purge the world once more, just give me the order, I shall carry it out without wavering!”

Li Qiye seemed to be sleeping on his chair. After a long while, he chuckled in response: “People have the rights to their own opinion. Each general back then deserved this right. A few things can’t be forced in this world.”

“In each generation, the world had always praised the emperors and their majestic accomplishments. However, they cursed your name without trying to understand your exploits. Even if they actually knew of your existence, they would still only react with fear. This is due to their own lack of foresight.” She said.

“Let them be.” Li Qiye smiled leisurely: “Since I’m a butcher, I should be raising my blade against the nine worlds. The particular narrative is fine.” He gently sighed at this point.

As the Dark Crow, he didn’t care about the words of the world. However, when his loyal and accomplished generals resisted him, personally giving the order to kill them was an unwilling and painful choice!

Nevertheless, someone needed to do so just as the matriarch had said. Every dreg of that blood must be swept clean or the darkness might come again!

The matriarch - his old comrade that had been to hell and back with him - stared at this seemingly ordinary man. She knew that he might have lost feelings due to his iron dao heart, there were substantial pain and unwanted memories lurking below!

This was why she truly admired him. He quietly endured the suffering and infamy in order to protect the nine worlds. Even emperors paled in comparison to his sacrifices.

“It’s fine to do another purge.” Li Qiye sat up and said: “If Soaring Immortal wants to come, then let them. I want to see what they have hiding in this generation!” His eyes flashed with a cold glint.

The monarch was ready for the incoming bloodbath after seeing his expression.

“But I’m a little tired of killing all the time now.” Li Qiye said with a smile: “Your eighteen crystal cannons haven’t been used for a long time. Take it out to test its strength now. Killing a chicken with an ox blade is very amusing.”

“I’ll bring them here, Your Excellency.” She walked away.

A moment later, she brought back two crates. One was overly large while the other wooden one was very very portable.

They were protected with many layers of seals, indicative of the content’s value.

The matriarch then opened the seals and plumes of glittering and translucent light came out from the large one.

A sizable cannon made from crystals and decorated with mighty runes was contained inside. The material emitted a mysterious power. The strange part was that the cannon wasn’t just one barrel but a cluster consisting of different sizes.



“The eighteen crystal cannons.” Li Qiye smiled after seeing it: “This type of crystal is indeed the finest. Only the Crystalfowl Immortal Mine would be able to produce them. It’s a shame that those geezers are too stingy.”

These cannons were the defining treasure of the Yu Clan, their ace card. Even those who were aware of their existence in the clan hadn’t seen them in person before.

“This is your love for us, using such precious materials to craft this peerless weapon for our clan.” She said.

“I was only bored and practicing.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

The cannons weren’t created with a method from this epoch. It shared the same origin as the Netherlord Hexagear Launcher but their own blacksmithing art had been lost in history.

The main difference was the material type. The launcher was much more precious and the cannons were created afterward.

After creating the launcher, Li Qiye rarely used this blacksmithing method again but due to the matriarch and her husband’s contributions, he created this weapon with some materials at hand and gave it to them.

She opened the other crate too. This one had a neat row of red diamonds serving as ammunition. Each resembled the sun itself with a spectacular flame.

“Dragonflame Uranium!” Li Qiye looked at each diamond and smiled: “Loading then firing them will be spectacular.”

“Your Excellency, you had to squeeze the essence out of an entire sun just to make these diamonds.” She said with emotions because she had seen the devastating power of this weapon before.

# Chapter 1610: Coming In Person

---

The Soaring Immortal Sect made a camp in the sea region they occupied after arriving at the Grand Sea.

The area used to belong to some demon great powers. They did try to resist but it was futile. In the end, these demons were forced to retreat while Soaring Immortal gained complete control.

Such a move attracted plenty of criticisms but nothing came of it due to the sheer power of the sect. In fact, before the reign of the Black Dragon King, Soaring Immortal's influence spanned across the nine worlds.

After all, they had five emperors so they had extraterritorial headquarters all around.

Strangely enough, during Immortal Emperor Qian Li's generation, the sect suddenly left all of these headquarters; not a single disciple was left behind. From then on, they rarely showed up in the nine worlds again.

People didn't know what the heck was going on but the disappearance of this behemoth was a good thing for many great powers. Nobody actually wanted to have such a threat looming around them.

But now, the sect was back and used an unstoppable momentum to take over this region. This worried the cultivators in Mortal Emperor. The announcement of the alliance with Heaven Suppression shook the mind even more.

Henceforth, many eyes were fixated on their every move. Of course, others paid attention to Fiercest as well. The majority of people, especially the ones in this area, wanted to use Fiercest to retaliate against Soaring Immortal.

The romance rumors between Fiercest and the goddess became even more intense as if it was the truth. Whether it be deliberate or

not, in short, everyone knew that these two had a marriage pact back at the Heavenly Dao Academy.

The young generation had a wonderful time talking about how Aotian dared to compete against Fiercest. They wanted nothing more than to come and watch the bride-stealing show in person.

“Fiercest is here.” People immediately discovered the moment Li Qiye and the Peacock Bright Monarch made it to the Soaring Immortal Sect’s territory. This news immediately spread with an unbelievable speed across the region.

“Is he really taking the bride away?” All eyes were on Li Qiye. The great powers became excited since this was what they have been waiting for. Fiercest was actually here.

“What did I tell you? Fiercest is invincible and prideful. He isn’t afraid of anyone. Someone like Aotian is nothing, this guy thinks he can steal Fiercest’s woman? He’s about to be annihilated!” Some young fans felt their blood boiling after seeing Li Qiye.

However, a few noble youths disagreed. One snorted in response: “Fiercest might be strong but all of you are blind, can’t even see who Young Emperor Long is. His backing is the Soaring Immortal Sect with countless Godkings and even Emperor Assailants. Hmph, no one has dared to oppose Soaring Immortal all this time. Nothing good will come of it.”

“So what? Aotian is just a dog relying on his sect then. Fiercest will kill the weakling so fast.” Li Qiye’s supporter retorted.

“Don’t be so sure. Young Emperor Long has a grand completion physique. He’s unstoppable among the young generation. Even the older generation can’t take him on.” Long Aotian’s fans instantly shouted back.

“Fiercest has thirteen palaces, one and only in the ages. A grand completion Immortal Physique is shit, there have been too many of them already!” Li Qiye’s support bit back.

“Young Emperor Long has triple saint talents and the arts of five emperors.” The other side contested.

“Fiercest has thirteen palaces!” This sentence was repeated to show Li Qiye’s unique achievement and invincibility.

“Young Emperor Long is the Denary King; he fought against the world for ten days and ten nights without faltering, going against millions and even killing Godkings...” Aotian’s supporters were still unconvinced.

“Fiercest has thirteen palaces!” Li Qiye’s supporters chanted this sentence even louder.

“You!” Aotian’s side trembled with anger without a response.

Fiercest’s amount of palaces had rendered all geniuses in this world breathless. Neither their achievements and brilliance mattered; all paled before the thirteen palaces.

Since the ages, there have been many Immortal Emperors and grand completion users. However, Li Qiye was one-and-only.

At this time, the duo entered Soaring Immortal’s area. They saw immortal energy and mist everywhere. Pavilions could be faintly seen in the distance along with big ships. Trees were connecting together to form large landmasses.

People had to admit that the sect was able to turn this area into a land of immortals in such a short time. It showed just how terrifying the number of resources they had at their disposal was.

It wouldn’t be an exaggeration to say that their trash could please a great power. This was the style of a sect with five emperors.

“Clang! Clang! Clang!” The gong of war resounded. The disciples from Soaring Immortal became vigilant. Both ordinary members and even elders were getting ready for battle.

Soaring Immortal might claim its supremacy but it didn’t underestimate Fiercest at all. They knew of his battle records all

too well. Most recently, he destroyed their Skyfire Warships. In the past, he killed their Godkings and banished their spatial channel. This was a worthy foe!

The eruptive atmosphere between the two sides robbed the breath of spectators. Some were eager for a fight already.

“What? This is how your sect treat a guest?” Li Qiye leisurely smiled and said as if strolling through a garden.

Even his enemies or those who hated him admired his boldness. Being able to smile before Soaring Immortal was very impressive. Their legs would be trembling if put under the same situation!

This leisure attitude made the experts from Soaring Immortal glance at each other. They didn't know whether they should start fighting or not.

“Is Long Aotian going to fight?” One cultivator murmured.

“Long Aotian isn't here. He led some experts and ancestors to hunt the sea monsters right now at the depths.” A well-informed spectator shook his head.

“Li Qiye, what do you want?” An instructor from Soaring Immortal took a deep breath and asked with a serious tone.

Soaring Immortal found this situation difficult to accept. All of this time, their sect has been sweeping through everything without resistance. They have never met such a strong enemy before.

They didn't show the slightest carelessness and understood that elder-level characters weren't enough to stop Fiercest. The lowest requirement to confront Fiercest was Godking!

“Nothing. I heard that my old friend, the Heaven Suppression City Lord is a guest at your sect, so I'm here to see her.” He said slowly.

“So domineering, he got straight to the point.” The experts nearby secretly praised. Only Fiercest would be so unrestrained

against Soaring Immortal.

The elders here were silent in contemplation. If it was someone else demanding this, they might have even killed the guy under their fury. However, they needed to be careful when it came from Fiercest.

# Chapter 1611: Dream Dragon King

---

Soaring Immortal had also heard about the hot matters between Fiercest and Zi Cuining. Such rumors were very unfavorable for them. After all, Zi Cuining would become their mistress in the future or even the imperial queen. That's why they didn't wish to hear such gossips regardless of whether they were true or not.

For their sect right now, the best outcome was to kill Fiercest!

"If you two are old friends, then please come." After contemplating for a moment, the instructor replied.

Li Qiye couldn't help but laugh: "That's how it should be, the style of a lineage with five emperors. This is more presentable."

The instructor wasn't willing to respond.

"Soaring Immortal is actually relenting!" The spectators faraway were actually startled to see the sect allowing Li Qiye to see Zi Cuining.

No one expected this particular development. They thought the instructor would try to stop him then a massacre would ensue.

But now, they unexpectedly conceded to the astonishment of the crowd. The sect had been domineering after descending into this region with an unstoppable conquest against the demons. They had no qualms moving against anyone until now.

The validity of the scandal between Li Qiye and the goddess didn't matter. Most importantly, she was about to marry Long Aotian but Li Qiye decided to interfere at this crucial moment.

This meant that as long as Fiercest was still alive, he would be a smudge on Soaring Immortal's reputation.

"Fiercest might be the only person who can force Soaring Immortal to concede." Someone murmured.

A disciple now led the way for Li Qiye who was all smiles. He and

the monarch casually entered the sect's territory. Anyone else would treat this place like the lion's den. They would surely be prepared for him but Fiercest was completely indifferent, drawing even more admiration from the crowd.

On the contrary, Soaring Immortal was ready for battle. The disciples here didn't dare to relax at all. They had full battle adornment ready and guarded their positions. This was because Fiercest was too notorious. Everyone knew of his bloodstained hands.

This was someone who would destroy a sect after some unfriendly words so how could Soaring Immortal not be careful? They didn't want to be like the disciples on the Skyfire Warships, crushed like a pulp and dead without a grave!

It didn't take long before the disciple took him to an old pavilion. It was floating in the air with a stairway made of clouds. It was heavily guarded with experts from Heaven Suppression instead of Soaring Immortal.

"Young Noble Li, I can only take you here." The Soaring Immortal disciple quietly left after taking him here.

This was a wise move from the instructor. He didn't want to confront Li Qiye directly and instead threw the problem at Heaven Suppression. It was the city's choice now whether he can see the goddess or not.

In his opinion, the marriage between Cuining and Aotian had been decided by the high-ranking ancestors from the two sects. No one could change this outcome.

Because of this, he was confident that Fiercest wouldn't be able to break this marriage alliance either.

For this alliance to work, Heaven Suppression must also be on their side when dealing with Fiercest.

"Halt, who are you?!" The guards protecting the pavilion



immediately pointed their weapons at Li Qiye as he drew closer.

In fact, they were aware of the situation and who they were facing. Nevertheless, they must not let him see Zi Cuining. They weren't here to protect her but to isolate her from contacting outsiders.

Someone of her power level didn't need the protection from these experts. They were only under Ye Jiuzhou's order to avoid any potential complication before the marriage was done.

Of course, Jiuzhou's preparation wasn't meant for Fiercest, only the other dissenters from Heaven Suppression. If he knew Fiercest was going to be coming, he would have personally presided over the area.

"Good dogs don't block the way." Li Qiye glanced at the prepared forces and smiled.

A youth came out from the guards. He was well-dressed with a high crest while radiating a dazzling light with the powerful aura of a noble.

"Fellow Daoist Li, our city lord isn't seeing guests, please leave." The youth didn't back down even before Fiercest.

"Dream Dragon King, Ye Jiuzhou's favorite disciple." The experts nearby recognized him right away.

"He's quite strong for being so young, already a half completion Immortal Physique on top of training the other amazing arts from Heaven Suppression. It's a shame that the goddess is too talented so he was doomed to be under her shadow." An expert who knew him said with a tinge of emotion.

It was almost a tragedy for the Dream Dragon King because his incredible achievements looked less impressive before Zi Cuining. He couldn't become the city lord.

"It's not up to you and not up to her either. If I say I want to see her, I shall." Li Qiye stared at him and declared nonchalantly.

“You...” The king’s expression turned ugly. He found it hard to swallow this anger when someone came to the Grand Sea and treated Heaven Suppression in this manner.

Despite knowing Fiercest, his sect was no slouch either. Moreover, his master and grandmaster were Ye Jiuzhou and Gu Zun, respectively.

“Li Qiye, everything has a limit, you shouldn’t be too aggressive or you will have no place left to go one day, despite how vast the nine worlds are!” The king took a deep breath and didn’t want to concede. He answered with the perfect tone, neither supercilious nor obsequious.

“No need to get all philosophical with me.” Li Qiye said with a smile: “I don’t care about reasons. I will count to five, if you don’t make way, I’ll kill you all.”

The experts here weren’t happy to hear such contempt coming from a junior, evident by their angry glare.

“Fine, Li Qiye, I’ll check out your supreme arts!” The king didn’t back off and was ready to fight to the death. He had received the orders from his master to not let anyone see the city lord!

“You are not his match, get back.” Zi Cuining appeared on the pavilion above and gravely said.

The king hesitated and stood there quietly. He wasn’t in the position to disobey her publicly. After all, she was still the city lord.

Her appearance attracted everyone’s attention. This was a peerless woman just like a fairy, a goddess of the sea!

Zi Cuining had a stern demeanor since she was robbed of her authority by Ye Jiuzhou’s group. To be perfectly frank, she was virtually put under house arrest.

The spectators were holding their breath to see how this scandal will unfold!

Li Qiye chuckled after seeing her: “Not bad. Girl, time to leave.”

Cuining smiled wryly and shook her head: “Brother Li, certain things can’t be dealt with right now. I have my own problems, please excuse me.”

She naturally wanted to go with him in order to avoid the marriage. However, all the ancestors and old men from the village were locked into the Black Dragon Hall. The city right now was under Ye Jiuzhou’s control. If she were to leave, she would be playing right into his hands.

Thus, she must stay and wait for the right opportunity to strike back!

# Chapter 1612: The Immovable Monarch

---

Li Qiye remained firm despite his ever-present smile: “You must go with me.”

“Brother Li, please understand.” Zi Cuining naturally knew that this wasn’t about romance like the rumors said. He came for Gu Zun, not to steal any bride.

She also wanted to resist Gu Zun, but protecting the ancestors and disciples from Heaven Suppression was a priority as well.

“I’ll take care of it. Do you want me to massacre Soaring Immortal or Heaven Suppression?” Li Qiye chuckled.

Experts from both sects furiously glared at him after hearing this. He spoke as if they were mere ants.

Zi Cuining became silent after hearing this. She understood that he wasn’t the blustering type and would stay true to his words, especially when it came to massacre for his name is Li Qiye!

“Alright, I’ll listen to you then.” She took a deep breath and solemnly said.

She had to change her strategy to deal with Gu Zun’s group now. With Li Qiye’s help, maybe they could break through Gu Zun’s grasp on Heaven Suppression in a different manner!

“Fiercest is so domineering. Any woman would want to follow a man like that.” A few experts misunderstood her intent and said with emotions.

The Dream Dragon King became alarmed for this went against his duty. If Zi Cuining were to leave, he would be letting his master down.

“City lord, Heaven Suppression does not yield to anyone!” He shouted hastily.

Zi Cuining stared at him and understood his thoughts. She said

flatly: “You’re not Young Noble Li’s match!”

“Even if we aren’t, we will still fight like true disciples from Heaven Suppression and will never...” He declared sonorously.

This was the only way he could answer to his master later without shame.

“That’s fine. Kill them.” Li Qiye interrupted the king and told the monarch disguised as a servant.

“To battle!” The king knew that his end wouldn’t be pretty so he roared to ready himself for battle!

“Clang!” All the guards here unsheathed their weapon. A murderous aura engulfed the area instantly.

“Die!” The monarch soared to the sky without any hesitation and unleashed a barrage of techniques. Each of them could cut the sun and take down the moon. This was truly a spectacle to behold.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” Explosions followed by screams resounded. These armored guards simply couldn’t stop her path.

She was the Pearl City Lord and had obtained its inheritance on top of being taught by Lu Zhangsun. Her cultivation was definitely among the top at Heaven Suppression.

The crowd was shocked to see a servant killing experts from Heaven Suppression so easily. Even a servant was this powerful? There were too many hidden masters on Fiercest’s side then. Such power could rule any area instead of being a simple servant. This was too much to take in!

“Cease your arrogance!” The Dream Dragon King had to join in. He jumped to the sky and exuded an oscillating light surrounding the monarch.

This light could penetrate everything and turn people into a pin sieve. However, the monarch channeled her power with a cry. Halos emerged around her body to stop the incoming rays.

However, the king's body became even more dazzling. A blinding expanse drowned the monarch. She instantly disappeared into this bright expanse.

The spectators felt their soul leaving their body while staring at this vast expanse. One senior immediately reminded and protected his juniors: "This is Divine Light from Heaven Suppression. Don't look at him or you'll lose your mind."

The young cultivators broke out in cold sweat after regaining their thoughts. Just glancing at this light alone was startling enough. Being directly struck by it would turn someone into a fool instantly.

"Boom!" While people were amazed at the king's art, the monarch tore apart this sea of light and made the king vomit blood with a counterattack.

She was perfectly fine. This soul-destroying art of his failed to affect her in the slightest.

The king was aghast and activated his Extreme Yang Physique at half completion. The area became sweltering as he formed a mirror with both hands.

"Whoosh!" The sunfire instantly entered the mirror. The mirror then channeled this element into a tidal brilliance. It soared with an unstoppable speed towards the monarch.

Keep in mind that a half completion physique was already strong enough. This power was then combined with a divine mirror personally crafted for the king and became amplified to an incredible level.

"Boom!" The monarch was slammed flying by this ray.

However, the little pagoda in front of her chest also lit up as she no longer held back.

"Screech!" A peacock screeched. Bright colors forming a screen appeared behind the monarch as if a peacock was spreading its tail.

It immediately stopped the remaining offensive ray.

“Peacock Bright Monarch!” Dream Dragon King immediately knew who he was dealing with.

“It’s too late!” The brilliant colors came crashing down like the suppression from the heaven itself. Anything could be crushed under such might.

“Bang!” The king couldn’t stop her barrier and was forced down to the ground.

But he couldn’t crawl up in time before a foot came from the sky and trampled him. He couldn’t move at all as if a mighty mountain was taking away his freedom.

“You!” He was furious and afraid after seeing that it was Li Qiye. This was simply too humiliating.

He shouted at the monarch: “Monarch, you are a Heaven Suppression disciple. Conspiring with others is a capital punishment!”

The monarch stared coldly at him without responding. Many people found it strange. The monarch was a leading member of Heaven Suppression. Why was she together with Li Qiye and even opposing her own sect?

Li Qiye looked at the king beneath him and smiled: “Should I crush you now or let you send a message to Ye Jiuzhou and Gu Zun?”

“Li Qiye, do as you please! People from Heaven Suppression will never beg for mercy! See if I even grimace in the slightest!” The king cried out.

“Really now?” Li Qiye said: “I’m indeed interested in seeing whether you are that unyielding after my torture.”

“Fellow Daoist Li, please forgive him.” An old man came out from Soaring Immortal with several elders accompanying him.

Despite his aged appearance, his eyes were flashing with yin and yang and the derivation of myriad dao. Even paragons would get a cold chill after meeting his stare. The person was simply too powerful.

“An ancestor from Soaring Immortal, the one in charge right now over the Grand Sea, a World Dominating Godking!” A sect master was aghast and blurted.

Outside of Long Aotian, this ancestor was giving the orders. Countless big shots from the demon race in this area were murdered by him. That’s the reason why so many experts from the Grand Sea were scared to see him!



# Chapter 1613: Barrage

---

The spectators palpitated while looking at the ancestor from Soaring Immortal; all wished to see how this storm would end.

Everyone knew that Fiercest would never back down from anything, even if it was Soaring Immortal. Meanwhile, Soaring Immortal wouldn't falter either. If their future mistress were to be taken away by Fiercest, they would lose all reputation and prestige.

Thus, in this key moment, Soaring Immortal must either force Li Qiye to submit or kill him. Anything else would besmirch their authority!

“Who the hell do you think you are? Your sect isn't qualified to interfere when I want to kill.” Li Qiye glanced at him and said.

The spectators forced a smile after seeing this. Who else but Fiercest would dare to talk to a World Dominating Godking like this?

The guy wasn't an ordinary World Dominating Godking since he came from Soaring Immortal on top of everything. Even a regular Godking would be humiliated before this public contempt, let alone one from Soaring Immortal.

Because of this, the ancestor's eyes turned cold. He didn't become angry but he wasn't going to let this go. Just one stomp from him could make the Grand Sea tremble. Countless would quiver before his name. Such a character wasn't going to take this sitting down.

Nevertheless, he still maintained an acceptable demeanor and said gravely: “Fellow Daoist Li, it's not wise to become an adversary against Soaring Immortal and Heaven Suppression. If you keep on doing this, you will have nowhere left to go.”

“Yes, I know.” Li Qiye smiled leisurely: “Alright, go ahead and use whatever means you have now. If you can't stop me today, this camp shall be flattened.”

Everyone gasped after hearing such aggressive words. Soaring Immortal expended considerable effort to take this land away from the demons and sea monsters. But now, he wanted to flatten it so easily? No one was a match for him in terms of bravado. Even the aggressive Hai Lin had to run away to stay alive.

“Fine, we’ll see just how amazing you are!” The ancestor cried out. At this level of escalation, one side must die. Otherwise, Soaring Immortal would no longer be able to deter the rest of the world.

“Rumble!” With a loud explosion, walls of refined jades flew up from the ocean. The jades lit up after the walls surrounded this sea region.

“Buzz!” Imperial seals and runes emerged on these walls. A holy breath engulfed the entire area.

Blinding plumes of light emerged from the walls and rushed to the Soaring Immortal disciples.

“Clang! Clang! Clang!” An unbelievable event occurred. Holy armors appeared on their body while their weapons exuded divinity. This was an immense increase in power. Their body even grew in size to match the new strength.

In a short time, they became giants standing on the ocean like deities to preside over this world to the horror of the crowd.

Only the Soaring Immortal Sect would have access to such a terrifying method, turning their own disciples into towering deities.

“What is that?!” Even ancestors from the great powers were shocked.

“Rumble!” These disciples surrounded Li Qiye and blocked off all escape paths. Soaring Immortal would never let him leave this place alive! This was to be a fight to the death.

The scared experts found it prohibitively difficult for any man

alone to break through this blockade.

“Li Qiye, unless you have a grand completion Immortal Physique or have the power of a Legendary Godking, you’re not leaving this place in one piece!” The ancestor took out an imperial weapon and coldly declared.

The truth was that the ancestor had no confidence in killing Fiercest but he wanted to borrow this momentum and force him back.

“Really now?” Li Qiye glanced at the walls of refined jades and said: “Tyrannical Destruction Bulwark from Immortal Emperor Ba Mie. Not bad but it is too old now. Your sect had used it too many times so how much power do you think these walls can actually put out nowadays?”

“As long as it is enough to stop you.” The ancestor said: “It’s not too late to leave now or we shall chase you to the end of the world!”

“Death to those who oppose us!” The disciples from Soaring Immortal chanted in unison with an oppressive momentum.

This chant shook the entire Grand Sea as if many gods were howling. People lost their mind under this divine aura. The weaker cultivators wouldn’t be able to put up a fight at all since they have lost in terms of aura already.

“Very well, time for me to kill then.” Li Qiye smirked in response at the deified disciples.

With that, the eighteen crystal cannons were in his hands. With a cracking sound, he instantly loaded it with one Dragonflame Uranium. All eighteen barrels suddenly ignited with this refined flame after a quiet buzz.

“Kill him!” The disciples didn’t know what type of weapon this was but they didn’t mind at all. With a loud battle cry, they ravaged this world as they ran for him with their divinity. A

destructive force came down in order to crush him.

The spectators turned pale and understood why Soaring Immortal could treat the nine worlds with such contempt after witnessing their capability.

“Bring it.” Li Qiye laughed wildly at the incoming enemies.

“Click, click, click!” The eighteen barrels rotated at a crazy pace and spat out fiery sparks before unleashing bright particles. Each particle was around the size of a thumb with an unbelievable speed. No one could ever evade or stop these all-piercing shots.

“Zzz-” In just a split second, a burst of penetrating noises resounded. Tiny jets of blood splashed out everywhere like springs. The inevitable bloody mists obscured the crowd’s vision.

“Ahh!” Under the sweeping particles of light, the disciples’ bodies turned into sieves before shattering completely. What was left of their bodies fell to the ground while they screamed pitifully.

No one expected this development. Just a second ago, these disciples were threatening the world like gods. But in the blink of an eye, Fiercest had rendered them into fleshy bits. Words couldn’t describe this terrible scene.

The eighteen cannons were crafted from an apex blacksmithing technique of an old epoch, not to mention the precious materials required. Moreover, its firepower came from a sun refined into Dragonflame Uranium.

This was a wondrous creation culminated from the Dark Crow’s efforts. Moreover, even Black Dragon King and Immortal Emperor Yin Tian helped in creating the weapon.

The only result possible after its crazy barrage was a massacre!

# Chapter 1614: Bombardment

---

This might be the most overbearing and bizarre massacre the spectators had ever witnessed.

From start to finish, Li Qiye didn't channel his blood energy at all and didn't use any techniques. After a single barrage from the eighteen cannons, the disciples were annihilated with mangled limbs.

The crowd stared in horror at the weapon in his possession. Even the deified disciples were killed so quickly, others naturally wouldn't stand a chance either.

“Die!” The Soaring Immortal ancestor erupted with rage! Even a World Dominating Godking like him had never seen such a terrifying ordeal.

His imperial weapon's weeping echoed across the nine heavens with its imperial aura. Dao laws poured down like the rain. The stars shattered and the ocean bled dry before this monstrous power causing hair to stand on ends!

This wasn't a true treasure but under the control of a World Dominating Godking, the resulting attack was still formidable.

“Not bad.” Li Qiye laughed before the incoming storm of imperial laws.

The cannons instantly sealed all the laws. With clicking noises, the barrels rotated again. All of them became red hot and the particles began to fire at each law.

The imperial weapon from the ancestor was indeed amazing but not against the eighteen cannons made with unique materials excavated from the Crystalfowl Immortal Mine.

“Rumble!” After another round of barrage, the ancestor could only shift his focus from offense to defense to protect himself.

In this manner, the particles couldn't pierce through his imperial weapon but he couldn't counterattack against this unique firepower either.

The crowd gasped to see a Godking with an imperial weapon on the defensive. They were in awe of this terrifying weapon.

"It's a shame that your imperial weapon is lacking. This might have been interesting if you had a true treasure but you're just a punching bag like this." Li Qiye teased.

The ancestor's expression soured. His sect had many imperial weapons but it also had numerous experts with five branches. The world couldn't possibly imagine the number of Godkings in this sect.

But the worst part was that his Immortal Emperor Life Treasure was a higher-ranked one in both the material and refinement method yet Li Qiye made it sound so worthless. This truly enraged him but retaliation wasn't possible while being under fire.

"Click!" Li Qiye loaded a new piece of uranium with a smooth and lightning-fast motion.

The ancestor couldn't seize this moment. He didn't expect that it had a reloading period.

"Ka!" Suddenly, the eighteen cannons were no longer rotating. Three sets of six suddenly came together to form three larger barrels aiming at the same direction.

"Whoosh!" The bundled barrels suddenly shot out three shuttles the size of a fist.

With a loud bang, the shuttles instantly locked onto ancestor's coordinate and exploded at the same time. Everything in that area became ashes before a small black hole took their place.

This was spatial destruction. The ancestor tried to escape to no avail so he spat out blood from the impact. The weapon protecting him was still unhurt but it couldn't save him from the terrible

blow. The force was too powerful. Anyone else would have had their bones shattered or even died.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” The cannons fired multiple waves with three shuttles each time. They locked onto the area before crazily exploding.

“Rumble!” The barrages left nothing behind in this area, only a terrible wound. The spatial fabric here wouldn’t recover for a while.

The ancestor went flying even under the protection of the imperial weapon. He spat out even more blood and was completely aghast despite being an amazing Godking.

He took advantage of a momentary pause and immediately crossed through space to escape.

“That’s what I’m waiting for.” But the moment he did a spatial shift, Li Qiye instantly locked onto him again and three more shots came out to destroy that space.

“Ah!” The ancestor instantly broke to bloody pieces and couldn’t use the weapon for protection at this last moment.

The panicking old man was tricked into escaping by Li Qiye and fell right into his trap. If he had waited for a full reload, perhaps that spatial shift would have worked.

Smokes were still coming out from the barrels. Once the heat subsided, Li Qiye gently blew the smoke away.

“Sigh, even a World Dominating Godking can’t stay calm during perils. That’s a lack of life-and-death experiences.” Li Qiye said leisurely.

Spectators had nothing to say since fear overwhelmed them. They shuddered after looking at the weapon in his hands.

The Soaring Immortal camp had been destroyed completely. Even a World Dominating Godking couldn’t escape this fate. Such

a weapon was too terrifying.

The only weakness would be the day when it ran out of ammo. At that point, it would have no power to speak of, only a decorative piece.

The experts nearby felt a chill running down their spine. A while ago, the demons and sea monsters mustered their forces and couldn't retake this area. Soaring Immortal slaughtered and chased them away. But now, Li Qiye destroyed this camp with no problem.

"Where is this weapon from?" Someone quietly whispered.

People shook their head in response since they didn't know of its origin. Only some ancestors with deep ties with the Yu Clan thought about a particular legend pertaining to the weapon.

This was the reason why powerful Godkings felt dread towards the Yu. They had such a monstrous weapon in their arsenal.

"Your turn now." Li Qiye smiled at the Dream Dragon King.

The guy was also horrified with a pale countenance. He had never seen such a monstrous weapon before in his life!

"I'll do it myself!" He knew that there was no escaping today. The guy was tough enough and committed suicide instead of waiting for Li Qiye.

"Bang." He dropped to the ground with blood dripping from his orifices and met death.

Zi Cuining gently sighed after seeing this. Though the king was Ye Jiuzhou's disciple and part of the coup, he was still a disciple of Heaven Suppression. At the very least, he didn't throw away their reputation by begging before death!

"Okay, done with that. What a pity though, where is that successor from Heaven Suppression?" He put away the eighteen cannons and clapped his hands.



In the distance, the cultivators didn't dare to say anything. This battle achievement had said enough.

One particular question rummaged through their mind - could Long Aotian actually have a chance of beating Fiercest?

The Denary King has been famous ever since Soaring Immortal descended on the Grand Sea. He challenged the world and defeated everyone after ten days and ten nights of combat.

But now, Fiercest in action made the crowd question themselves again.

# Chapter 1615: Gu Zun's Strangeness

---

Finally, Li Qiye left with the monarch and Zi Cuining before the silent crowd.

After leaving this sea region, Cuining told the monarch: “Thank you for helping me during this troubled period. If you weren’t protecting the hope of our city, I’m sure the other lords would join Ye Jiuzhou.”

“City Lord, this is my responsibility and Pearl’s reason for existence.” The monarch respectfully replied.

Li Qiye glanced at Zi Cuining and said insipidly: “Girl, you have the Immortal Blood Spear so leaving isn’t difficult. What is your reason for staying in Heaven Suppression?”

“The elders are all trapped in the Black Dragon Hall so I can’t just ignore them.” She said.

Li Qiye disagreed: “You can’t unlock the seal there since Gu Zun probably took an entire generation to comprehend it so it’s not something you can do. They’re just trapped and won’t die just yet so it’s pointless for you to stay there.”

Zi Cuining seemed to have something to say but she refrained.

“Girl, it’s best that you don’t hide anything in front of me.” Li Qiye chuckled.

“Gu Zun is quite strange right now.” Cuining relented.

“How so?” Li Qiye asked.

“I can’t pinpoint it.” Cuining pondered for a moment: “I only found out recently from Ancestor Shan. Before the Difficult Dao Era, Gu Zun’s cultivation had been crippled by the patriarch and then he was imprisoned in the abyss. Before his death, Ancestor Lu finally let him out for a quick reprieve.”

“Zhangsun is too soft.” Li Qiye chuckled: “Gu Zun is someone

who can bite back even with one breath remaining! So what if his cultivation was destroyed? He could still redo it easily as one of the ten eonic geniuses. This isn't the first time his cultivation got destroyed anyway so he can still return to the peak."

Zi Cuining had no response because Li Qiye was spot on. After Zhangsun's death, Ye Jiuzhou from Gu Zun's branch began to gain more power at Heaven Suppression.

Meanwhile, the monarch was completely taken aback. She had never heard about Gu Zun's crippled cultivation before. Even Lu Zhangsun and Ancestor Shan kept it quiet from her. What kind of secret was involved in all of this?

"Ancestor Shan said that when Gu Zun was dying, he wanted to dig his own grave." Cuining said.

"Then he disappeared afterward." Li Qiye understood right away: "It was useless even if Zhangsun watched with his own eyes. He needed to cut him to pieces, destroy his true fate; now that's a real death."

"The ancestor, he, he..." It wasn't proper for her to comment on her ancestors.

"I know, Lu Zhangsun couldn't do it since Gu Zun is the Black Dragon King's brother-in-law." Li Qiye said flatly: "The guy viewed the king as his father. He knew that the king had promised someone else to not kill Gu Zun so he couldn't bear to do it either. The guy was perfect outside of being too humane."

One could easily guess what happened after. Once Gu Zun came back, everything had become different. It was impossible even if Lu Zhangsun wanted to imprison him again.

He had nothing to say about Ye Jiuzhou's position in the city either because the guy was considered innocent back then. The Black Dragon King didn't sentence him. Furthermore, he truly toiled and contributed to the city. Thus, in both logic and laws, he

shouldn't be disadvantaged just because his master was Gu Zun.

“Gu Zun wasn't afraid of Lu Zhangsun, he was only accumulating more power. To put it bluntly, he's not trying to compete against your Ancestor Shan either or he would have already taken full control, given who he is.” Li Qiye shook his head.

He naturally knew that Gu Zun was preparing to deal with him. Of course, he also wanted the treasury in Heaven Suppression. If he could open it, he would claim to not be afraid of Immortal Emperors!

“Tell me about your findings.” Li Qiye told Cuining.

She eventually stared seriously at him and answered with doubts: “I feel that this, this isn't Gu Zun.”

“A bit interesting. Go on.” Li Qiye smiled and said.

“I'm not too sure either. All in all, it was very strange seeing him each time because it felt different. He seemed to be very weak as if someone had drained his energy. Or rather, it looked like someone has taken over his corpse. That's all I can say.” Cuining didn't know how to put it.

“There's no way. If that's not Gu Zun, Ye Jiuzhou would have found out already.” The monarch was skeptical.

“That's the strangest part. Jiuzhou isn't reacting at all as if everything is normal.” Cuining replied.

She then frowned and continued: “I think someone might be using Gu Zun to sneak into our city and take over. I'm concerned about an external collusion.”

This was the other reason why she wanted to stay. She aimed to find out the truth outside of just saving the ancestors.

“Girl, you don't understand Gu Zun and Ye Jiuzhou. It doesn't matter whether Jiuzhou is a good or bad man but there are two things he will never do. First, betray Gu Zun. Second, betray

Heaven Suppression. Furthermore, there's something you don't get either. Gu Zun will never hand Heaven Suppression to outsiders. In his mind, it belongs to him. Of course, he can tolerate you being in charge because you are a legitimate heir. Ultimately, Lu Zhangsun, Ancestor Shan, and you are all part of the main branch, eligible for inheriting the city. So, if an outsider wants to take over Heaven Suppression, Gu Zun would be the first to strike back!"

With that, he laughed and said: "Gu Zun might be a bastard but he does uphold some principles on certain things. He's not totally wretched, just yet."

"Then what if Gu Zun's body was truly taken over?" Cuining remained worried.

Li Qiye disagreed with this notion: "You still don't know and underestimate him. The reality is that no one in this world could seize his body. Moreover, there's no need to doubt Jiuzhou's loyalty and devotion to Gu Zun. If anyone were to take over his master's body, he would be the first to go all out against them!"

"Then what is actually going on?" Zi Cuining was puzzled. Gu Zun was different each time regarding his status and expression.

After all, a cultivator of Gu Zun's level wouldn't be so unstable with constant fluctuations. She was also certain that the person she saw wasn't a fake.

"You'll find out eventually." Li Qiye revealed a mysterious smile: "Just keep watching the show. The answer will be revealed soon."

Zi Cuining worriedly said: "What about the trapped ancestors?"

Though it seemed like an accident, she was certain that Gu Zun did it. It was just that she had no evidence to show.

Li Qiye opened his fate palace and took out a law. The law then turned into a key and he handed it to her: "Take it and open the Black Dragon Hall."

“Really?” She said skeptically. Even their ancestors there couldn’t open it but an outsider like Li Qiye did? It was indeed difficult to believe.

“Go, since what have I lied to you?” Li Qiye said with a smile.

“I’m off then.” She took a deep breath and said solemnly.

“What if Ye Jiuzhou and Gu Zun take action?” The monarch found it worrying for Cuining to return to Heaven Suppression.

Li Qiye shook his head: “First, her position is legitimate so Gu Zun won’t kill her or he would have done so long ago. All he wants is your authority. Second, it’s different now. Capturing all of you was only testing the water but after this, everyone else will be insignificant, not worth him wasting his time. His most powerful, lifelong enemy has arrived!”

A thick smile appeared on Li Qiye’s face after saying this.

“Go, nothing will happen.” Li Qiye told Cuining: “Matriarch Yu will watch out for you too. Also, tell Ancestor Shan’s people to not get involved with this because once I start killing, I won’t necessarily care which branch they belong to.”

“I got it.” Cuining nodded while understanding that Li Qiye was aiming for Gu Zun. However, she didn’t understand when these two became enemies. No ancestors have mentioned it before so she became very curious about the underlying story. Alas, it wasn’t something she could ask.

# Chapter 1616: Crystalfowl Immortal Mine

---

Li Qiye didn't return to the Yu after Zi Cuining made her way back to Heaven Suppression. He brought the monarch to a remote location.

They crossed the mountains, vast oceans, and a world of snow into the depth of the Grand Sea. This was the farthest and highest location in this region.

In short, it was an incomparably long journey.

"Where are we going?" She couldn't help but ask.

"A distant place. Since you have the Pearl Tower, you are eligible to know this place. Of course, whether you can find it again alone in the future, that's up to your own abilities." Li Qiye said with a smile.

The monarch was momentarily stunned. After crossing through so many locations, she probably wouldn't be able to find the way again.

"Why don't we just cross through space?" She became curious and believed that someone of his power could reach any coordinate in the nine worlds.

"Crossing space won't do. This is a type of hidden realms, you must walk around to avoid it before reaching the area." He answered.

The monarch realized that their destination was very important and mysterious or it wouldn't have this spatial protection.

They crossed through the extremes of the world before finally arriving. Though the monarch tried her best to memorize it, she still wasn't certain of making it back here alone next time.

A boundless land this was with endless forests and towering hills. An ancient aura assaulted the newcomers right away as if no one

has ever inhabited this place.

The lack of people was made up with howls from apes and vines reaching for the sky. This land was full of life.

The spirit energy was so thick here that it became visible. It showed that no cultivators have tried to train here.

“This place? How come no one has tried to establish a lineage here?” Even if she didn’t understand cultivation geography, even a fool could tell that this place full of energy was the best for starting a lineage.

“Because no one is allowed. It has an owner already.” Li Qiye smiled.

“Just what exactly is this place?” She inquired again.

“Crystalfowl Immortal Mine.” Li Qiye said: “Only Immortal Emperors are allowed here, no one else.”

“Crystalfowl Immortal Mine?” She has never heard of such a place. There should at least be legends about it.

“One of the six Ancestral Earths of the immortals..” Li Qiye said flatly.

This shocked the monarch since she has heard about the great six locations. She didn’t expect for this place to be one of them.

“There are really immortals around? At least in the ancient era?” She asked.

Li Qiye shook his head: “I can’t answer whether there were immortals or not but there are many locations with unbelievably old beings, older than your imagination.”

She froze for a bit after hearing this response. His answer implied that the world was far more than it seemed. At the very least, much more than their current era.

Right now, she knew about the distant Desolate Era, the Desolace Expansion Era when the races competed against each other, the



dark ages of the Ancient Ming Era, and the brilliant Emperors Era.

Li Qiye seemed to be saying that there were eras even before the Desolate Era and some terrible beings from that period were still alive!

She shuddered after thinking about the possibilities. Just imagine, anyone who could still live from those ages would cause a storm after coming into this world again.

While the monarch was digesting the information in astonishment, the two made it to the bottom of a cliff.

He smiled and said: "Clean this place up a bit and throw away the pebbles. If we are visiting our hosts, we need to do it properly."

The monarch's wits returned. She looked around and saw vines, weeds, and stones everywhere.

She was a top and famous character in the Grand Sea. Someone as prestigious as her doing manual labor would shock any spectator.

However, she didn't complain at all and rolled up her sleeves to begin by cutting the vines and moving the stones. Her jade-like hands became dirty with mud from the diligent work.

Someone as strong as her wouldn't have any problem moving mountains and shifting rivers. However, after listening to Li Qiye, she didn't dare to do anything that could be considered offensive so she took her time.

Anyone else would feel sorry for such a beauty doing such hard work in this desolate place. No one could bear to watch.

However, Li Qiye didn't give a damn. He closed his eyes and didn't bother watching her do the menial work.

She finally cleaned up this place after some effort. A bottomless cave was finally exposed.

Li Qiye finally stood up and smiled. He knocked on the entrance

and said: “Okay, it’s dawn now. Get up.”

Knocking was the wrong way to put it. He slammed on it, causing the entrance to quake with loud bangs.

“Which bastard is ruining my good dream?” A spiteful voice came from the darkness.

Li Qiye waved his sleeve towards the monarch. She trembled and knew that this was an existence she shouldn’t see so she quietly left.

A shadow emerged from the entrance. It stumbled back and forth as if it couldn’t walk straight, on the verge of fainting from hunger.

Once it came to the light, people finally saw its appearance, a malnourished and bony pheasant.

Its feathers were sparse. Who knows how long it has been starving for? Even all the feathers were about to fall off.

“Bastard, who the hell are you? If you aren’t an Immortal Emperor, I will crush you to death for disturbing my slumber!” Despite its sad appearance, it still crossed its wings and said fiercely.

“Chicken, how long have you been on duty to actually look like this now?” Li Qiye cheerfully smiled: “Your peers are really mistreating you. They hide in the cave and huffing and puffing the immortal energy while you are starving to death.”

“Who are you?!” The pheasant’s sleepy eyes turned cold. This piercing stare could kill just about anyone.

“Alright, I’m here to collect your debt. It has been a while since my last visit but you shouldn’t have forgotten me just yet.” He smirked in response.

“Shit!” The pheasant instantly jumped around several times, no longer drowsy. It then took several steps back and glared at Li

Qiye.

“Is such an overreaction necessary? It’s not my first time here.” Li Qiye has grown accustomed to such reaction from people.

“You’re that damned crow!” The pheasant, or a Crystalfowl, shouted at him.

“Correct, no prize though.” Li Qiye was quite amused at this moment.

The pheasant didn’t want to hear this answer even if it was the truth. It looked defeated and lowered its head: “Nothing good will come of your visit...”

“Wait a minute!” The pheasant suddenly looked up and glared at him again: “You’re not just taking a lass here, you, you got your body back!”

“Correct again, still no prize though.” Li Qiye said: “As for the girl, just showing her around. It’s her own business whether she can get anything or not.”

“Hmph, damned crow, our mine has nothing to do with you. Stop coming here since we don’t have anything this time!” The pheasant unhappily complained.

“We’ve been friends for so long, do you really need to reject me before I even say anything?” Li Qiye wasn’t in a hurry at all: “Maybe you should invite me in for a cup of tea and we can have a little chat or something.”

# Chapter 1617: One Hundred

---

The fowl looked at Li Qiye with one eye and said: “Hehehe, damned crow, invite you in for a bit?”

It paused for a bit and loudly said: “We must be sick in the head to let you in. Haven’t you borrowed enough immortal crystal from us already yet you still want more? Plus, what if you don’t leave until you get what you want, what are we going to do then?!”

“I’m really someone like that?” Li Qiye smiled and said: “I’m always open and honest with a penchant for fairness...”

“Yeah, you’re someone like that!” The fowl interrupted Li Qiye without giving him any face.

Li Qiye was as carefree as always: “There’s no free lunch in this world. You can say that I did borrow a lot of immortal crystals from you cheapskates and never gave them back, but after the long years, shouldn’t you all be thanking me?”

“Thanking you, my ass!” The fowl snorted: “Back in the Ancient Ming Era, you borrowed so much resources from us. Just that portion alone is enough to start a world!”

“Exaggerating again?” Li Qiye shook his head: “That’s indeed the case but it was only a dozen or so crystals, the other stuff are just scraps.”

“Scraps?!” The fowl had a bigger reaction this time and jumped up high. It stretched out its neck and screeched: “I hope the heaven kills you, damned crow! You dare to say scraps?! Those are precious materials of the Immortal Emperor level! Go die already!”

“I’m just telling the truth. Compared to the special crystals here, the other materials are just scraps.” Li Qiye ignored the fowl and said: “In my eyes, the immortal crystals are the real goods here.”

“Hmph, you got enough crystals already just from the Ancient Ming Era. A dozen? Damned crow? Not even talking about the

other times, you still haven't paid back one from that period!" The fowl was exasperated.

"I don't have any left. Remember, I was the one who ended the Ancient Ming Era and swept away the darkness. If it wasn't for me, can your mine still be so peaceful and you old chicken can sleep like this? No chance! Then, why should I need to repay you?" Li Qiye nonchalantly stated.

"Hmph, we knew you would renege on your debt. Every single time, always some excuses to not pay back!" The aggrieved fowl felt helpless as well.

Li Qiye continued: "How can you say that instead of thanking me? Yes, I do borrow a lot of crystals but think about it, if Immortal Emperors had come to harass you every once in a while, or, if I had gathered the legions of the nine worlds to attack your place, how many generations would this place last? How many crystals would be required to make up for the loss? There are two sides to everything, good and bad, so you shouldn't latch on to the bad all the time. Focus on the good now. For millions of years, because of me, you were able to have peace. Thus, lending me the crystals isn't a loss at all. Am I right?" Li Qiye smirked at this point.

"Crow, you're a goddamned bastard, a bloodsucking devil!" The fowl indignantly shouted.

"I know I'm a bastard." Li Qiye smiled leisurely: "But, now that you got your yelling done, no longer angry, right? It's time to talk business."

"Hmph, you're just here to borrow more crystals. Well, in this generation, we can only give you five crystals since you borrowed already two generations ago. Yes, five at the most!" The fowl knew what Li Qiye was here for but he had to acquiesce.

Li Qiye indeed came here for the so-called "scraps" back in Immortal Emperor Yin Tian's generation. Of course, these scraps

were precious immortal items if others were to find them.

The crystal eighteen cannons of the Yu were made from the scraps of the Crystalfowl Immortal Mine!

“Five is not enough to satiate my appetite.” Li Qiye shook his head and refused.

The fowl glared at him in response: “Crow, you should stop borrowing from us so much. Remember, last time you promised us to bring the escapees back but I don’t see them right now yet you have the face to come and borrow more?”

“I know.” Li Qiye chuckled: “But that’s two different matters. I only promised to find them back then but I couldn’t so how am I going to catch and bring them back here?”

The fowl guarding here wasn’t afraid of people sneaking in or invaders. Its job was to stop people from inside running to the outside world!

“Hmph, I don’t believe your lies. There are things you can’t find in this world? No way, it’s just that you never really tried to search for them.” It snorted in response.

Li Qiye shook his head: “It’s all in the past now, no need to talk about it. Let’s focus on the immortal crystals, I need a certain number this time.”

“Five, that’s the max.” The fowl said: “That’s the number we negotiated back then. Even when Immortal Emperors pushed it, whether they even got five or not was situational. And since you have borrowed some recently, all you can get is five now.”

The immortal mine wouldn’t necessarily cave into Immortal Emperors’ demands. There were strict standards in play.

“You want to chase me away with five? Impossible since I want to go all out in this generation. My supreme formation requires a large number of immortal crystals.” Li Qiye said slowly.

The fowl stared at him before conceding: “Okay, damned crow, give me a number so we can negotiate but don’t push your luck. We don’t have that many.”

“Not much, just one hundred. That’s enough.” Li Qiye revealed.

“One hundred!?” The fowl screamed again with a long and piercing harshness.

After a long time, it took a deep breath and said: “Crow, that’s not funny at all. Try again!”

“I’m not joking.” Li Qiye emphasized.

The fowl gave a careful stare and eventually found that he wasn’t messing around, judging from his expression.

“There’s no way.” It coldly refused: “We can give you fifteen at best, just fifteen.”

“One hundred, I must have one hundred.” Li Qiye didn’t relent.

“Twenty, no more. Crow, this is the limit and we’re only doing this to give you some face. Otherwise, even the strongest emperor wouldn’t get this number!” The fowl said firmly.

“I’m not leaving without one hundred.” Li Qiye gently shook his head with the same unyielding attitude.

“Crow, don’t take a mile when we’re giving you an inch.” The fowl turned cold: “For millions of years now, our cooperation can be regarded as beneficial so that’s why we accede to your pleas for crystals. However, asking for one hundred is simply crossing the line. You’re not just robbing us at this point but simply wanting to kill us!”

Li Qiye stared straight at the fowl and said: “Fowl, it’s not easy to hide anything from me. Let us talk numbers then. No need to talk about ancient eras. All of you had only escaped here so I can understand it was hard at the beginning. However, you have some reserves now, especially after the Emperors Era when it was

peaceful. It should have been a handsome harvest and I should be given credit for it. Now onto the numbers, your production should be around ten if slow in one generation, twenty if fast. Of course, your nest does consume some so you keep at least eight each generation. This is a conservative number. Of course, when I come to borrow, I go even lower at five. That shouldn't be a problem at all. After some gains and losses across the generations, in my calculation, you should have around two hundred crystals in stock. Of course, if you were lucky, the number should be around three hundred."

He paused for a moment here: "Even if you have two hundred crystals, all I'm asking for is one hundred. That's not unreasonable, I'm still leaving some leeway."



# Chapter 1618: Threat

---

The fowl didn't reply to Li Qiye's calculation and only stared coldly at him. After a while, it finally spoke: "Crow, even if you are right about us having two hundred in our inventory, so what? We had to save each crystal from one generation to another, too reluctant to use them ourselves! The two hundred pieces are our hard-earned yield, our lives, and our nest's support. We will definitely not agree to you taking half of our life."

The fowl was adamant about not giving Li Qiye one hundred crystals.

Li Qiye smiled in response: "I know that it wasn't easy for you all to save this many crystal. It's not easy for me either but it's the truth. I want one hundred!"

"Crow, we can only give you twenty at best, this is our limit." The fowl said coldly: "If you don't want that, fine, we'll be done here. I know that you are quite incredible and no one can endure your wrath but keep on pushing it and we'll go down together."

"We're not your match in a one on one but don't forget, we're a nest. Force the issue and we'll use our entire reserves, risk our old lives to take you down!"

"We might not be able to kill you but if we go all out, you will not necessarily be able to defeat us either. It doesn't matter how strong you are, control your greed and follow the previous agreement or we'll have to stop!"

After said his last words, the fowl was very heated and angry.

"You can try then." Li Qiye said flatly: "I'm not here to negotiate, one hundred is a must. Even if you don't give it, I'll flatten your coop and take all the crystals away!"

Li Qiye had a firm attitude to match the fowl's.

"Crow, you are saying you want a war against our mine?" The

fowl glowered at him.

“That depends on your attitude.” Li Qiye replied: “In short, you all will have to pay a great price in this generation. There is no free lunch in the world. I have brought peace to your mine so if you want to maintain this serenity, you must pay. This is how it should be.”

“Crow, don’t forget, we have always paid up and you have always gotten crystals from us but you are going too far this time.” The fowl strongly answered.

“It’s different in this generation. I will go on the offensive this time but before the final battle, I must take care of a few gods and emperors that have always been causing trouble. Because of this, I need the resources to trample all the obstacles so that I can focus on the fight battle!” Li Qiye explained calmly.

“That’s your problem, it has nothing to do with us.” The fowl retorted.

“Nothing to do with you?” Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh: “Fowl, who is giving you peace? In this generation, the outcome of the final battle doesn’t matter, you will be able to breathe easier. But if I actually win, then, needless to say, your nest will no longer need to hide in this place, void of the sun! If you wish to see the light again and not being glared at by the villainous heaven, shouldn’t you pay a great price and help me?!”

“That’s why I want one hundred crystals. This is already nice enough of me, it is out of consideration for our past, fruitful cooperation. Otherwise, I would be asking for two hundred!” Li Qiye uttered coldly.

The fowl pondered for a moment before shaking its head: “Crow, we’re happy that you want to go all out and pray for your success but we can’t help you. Who knows how this battle will end? This is selfish but if the boundless years of darkness will come, we need the ration to live through them. This treasury is our lives so we can

only give you twenty, not more. We're not capable of anything else."

There was no room for negotiation judging by the fowl's attitude.

Li Qiye disagreed: "Like I said, I'm not here to negotiate. It is not up to you, you must take out one hundred crystals!"

Li Qiye's attitude became tougher.

"Crow, you want to play hard then? You are declaring war on us right now! You must think twice because our immortal mine is not your enemy. If you bring the fire of war to this place, I'm afraid it will be the biggest misstep in your life!"

"I won't deny that your mine is indeed unbelievably powerful as one of the six Ancestral Earths. Even emperors can't breakthrough your mine or this place would have been taken by others already. However, what's impossible for emperors isn't necessarily impossible for me. It depends on whether I'm willing or not, whether I find the endeavor to be worth it. Like you have said, we have worked well together in the past. That's the reason why I've been so cordial and sincere instead of bringing my troops here and demanding the crystals!" Li Qiye stared straight at the fowl.

"Crow, you are looking down on us. You might have a lot of methods and troops but it doesn't mean that you can take our mine!" The fowl raised his voice.

"No, I'm not intending on sieging your mine today. I will show you one thing. After seeing this item, you can decide whether to give me one hundred crystals or not." Li Qiye said with a smile.

The fowl's eyes became serious. "What item?"

"A very ancient item only in the legends, older than anything else in this world." Li Qiye smirked and took out the crystal pillar, the item that had instantly suppressed the Peacock Bright Monarch.

The fowl didn't care much at first glance but after a while, it looked as if it had just seen a ghost. It turned pale in horror and

staggered backward. What's little left of the feathers on its body suddenly sprung up straight.

It was really frightened this time and stared at the pillar in a daze.

Keep in mind that this fowl was an existence that can talk to an emperor as equal. However, terror still overwhelmed its mind. In fact, even emperors who knew the crystal pillar's origin would be scared in the same manner.

The fowl continued to look. The power contained within was definitely the real thing. There was no way for Li Qiye to trick characters of this level. Even if he tried, there was no way of replicating the power inside.

"That's impossible. This thing doesn't exist in this world!" The fowl eventually said in disbelief.

"It is right before you." Li Qiye said leisurely: "You know full well what it is. Though all of you haven't seen it before, you have already recognized its existence long ago."

"But it is impossible to find. For eons now, you're not the only one searching for it. Even existences older than you and stronger than the gods and emperors tried to look for it everywhere!" The fowl murmured.

"You old geezers tried to but nothing came of it." Li Qiye stated: "But who am I? Don't forget, fowl, I am someone who can find the elusive and scattered clues from all the old beings. Your nest isn't privy to the clues but after I pieced everything together and preparing for generations, I have finally obtained it."

He became sentimental without showing it. He had spent countless efforts and paid a great price in order to obtain this ultimate item.

"You can't seal it and bring it along either. There's no way. It can kill gods and emperors easily but it's of no use if you can't bring it

out.” The fowl murmured.

# Chapter 1619: Immortal Mines Compromise

---

Li Qiye answered flatly: “What’s impossible for others can’t restrict me. Don’t forget, I am the Dark Crow, Li Qiye. That’s why it’s in my possession, as simple as that!”

The fowl fell into a long silence. Despite its unwillingness to believe, the truth was right there.

After a long time, it calmed down and said: “Crow, you should know that this is one of a kind. If it ceases to exist, so does the world!”

“I know, that’s why using it to kill the emperors and gods is very wasteful. Only the final battle is worth it. Of course, I won’t be using it unless there is no other choice. I took it out only to send a message.” Li Qiye said.

“If I can take out this thing, is there something else in this world that I can’t get? You think I’m just boasting and posturing? You think I can only bring emperors to battle? To be frank, there is no emperor backing me up right now but if I want to flatten your mine, trust me, I will still do it regardless of how much resources are required! Once I make up my mind, there is nothing I can’t do. I even lived to return from the end of the world, do you think I’m still afraid of anyone? It’s all a trade off game for me. If I’m willing, I can take down anyone, regardless of how strong they are!”

The fowl had no response to this statement since he knew of the Dark Crow’s sheer determination and propensity for success. This was the reason why so many people feared him all this time!

In the eyes of the undyings, this crow was an unkillable cockroach. Even if he were to be defeated and destroyed, he would rear his ugly head again one day and sweep through his enemies! His dao heart was flawless, capable of withstanding all failures and defeats to start again.

He looked at the fowl and said: “So now, take a careful look at my ultimate item, do you think one hundred crystals are fine or not now?”

“Is this an extortion?” The fowl said with a tinge of helplessness.

“You can see it that way. No matter what, my final battle will let you have a glimmer of victory, allowing you to rest.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

“But if you lose, darkness will encompass everything! Or the world will no longer exist!” The fowl scowled.

To which Li Qiye responded: “So what? You have never seen the sun ever since you’ve started hiding here. Does it really matter if the darkness captures you? At worst, it’ll only be a bit more troublesome than now. But after the darkness, waiting for a new prosperity, maybe your mine will have a great harvest. That’s why you should be praying for my victory to see dawn again. Wouldn’t that be nice?”

“No one has ever been successful before.” The fowl became weaker in tone: “In each eon, so many have tried but what was the final result? I don’t need to say more about their miserable outcomes.”

“Then wait and see. I know you can live till that day when I will either be dead or successful. Congratulation, you might be able to witness an unprecedented miracle.” He said leisurely.

The fowl took its time before taking a deep breath and looking up at Li Qiye. It solemnly said: “Crow, I can agree to this request but I alone can’t decide this. I need to talk to the others.”

“I know you can since you have always been so persuasive in telling them to invest in me with previous transactions. I’m sure it won’t be a problem this time and shall wait for your goods news.”

The fowl grunted and disappeared into the endless cave.

In fact, they didn’t actually have a choice. It was either giving

him one hundred crystals or war. In the past, they probably had some confidence in fighting against the crow or at least defend their cave successfully.

But this was no longer the case. The moment it saw the ultimate item, it knew that the initiative was in the crow's hand, not them.

The crow was right as well. If he could obtain this ultimate item, was there anything else beyond his grasp? They simply couldn't imagine the type of resources and methods he still had up his sleeves.

As moments passed, the bottomless cave was still silent. Li Qiye quietly waited with patience. In fact, he was completely confident or he wouldn't have been asking for one hundred crystals.

After a long time, the fowl appeared again with an extremely ancient chest. It stared at Li Qiye and said: "Crow, you win. We agree to give you one hundred immortal crystals."

Li Qiye wasn't surprised at all, evident by his smile: "You have always been so amazing at being in charge with great insight. Few can be your match in the cave."

"Hmph, crow, no need to flatter me. This is an exception, one time only. We hope to not see you again for ten generations." The fowl unhappily said.

Though Li Qiye didn't show mercy this time to the chagrin of the nest, they still conceded with this compromise and chose to work with him again.

"So you all still want to work with me? The old agreement is still in effect?" Li Qiye laughed and said.

"Don't forget, you still owe us crystals from before!" The fowl said with a stern expression.

"I haven't forgotten but don't you forget either, the peace that you're enjoying now is thanks to me. I might owe you some crystals but you haven't paid this time of peace back to me, so



we're even."

The fowl chose not to answer. This was the reason why they worked together with the Dark Crow. Others couldn't offer a time of peace, not even all-powerful Immortal Emperors. This was something only the Dark Crow could do!

"The crystals are yours now. I hope you can always sweep through all of your enemies." The somber fowl slowly pushed the chest towards Li Qiye.

Li Qiye reached out to pick it up but the fowl suddenly pulled back and stared at him.

"What? I know that you're not regretting the decision." Li Qiye wasn't anxious at all.

"Damned crow, you promised me about finding those guys back then. You still haven't fulfilled this obligation!" The fowl stared at him and said.

"Pheasant, what kind of news do you want to hear?" A smile appeared on Li Qiye's face.

The fowl didn't respond despite slightly opening its mouth.

"I'll speak for you then." Li Qiye chuckled: "Pheasant, what do you do outside of sitting here and guard? Let me make a wild guess. Even a tiger might let its guard down at times, but not you. How could the guys have actually run away under your watch? I don't think that's possible."

The fowl answered coldly: "I just want to hear some news."

"Okay, I'll tell you two things." Li Qiye said: "First, they have changed. Even if the villainous heavens have eyes, it still wouldn't be able to recognize them. Secondly, they are still alive. That's all."

The fowl gently sighed and didn't comment after a brief silence.

# Chapter 1620: Gu Zun

---

In a secretive location filled with fog in the Grand Sea with a green [shala tree](#), a young man approached with a matchless posture. His arrival dispersed all the fog.

This man had an immortal aura with many visual phenomena accompanying him. His supreme temperament would make others want to bow in awe. It was as if he was an emperor during their youth.

The earth and dao resonated with him with visions and hymns. One could easily imagine just how powerful he was.

Long Aotian, this was a name in the legends. People called him an imperial prince.

His eyes fell on the shala tree with a man meditating beneath. He looked quite old despite his green hair. Death seemed to be imminent; this was his final twilight.

He wore a gray robe and sat there leisurely without any expression.

“Senior Gu Zun.” Long Aotian still called him senior even though he wasn’t showing his aura. Remember, this was the imperial prince of this generation. He wouldn’t utter such honorifics so easily.

Gu Zun was one of the ten eonic geniuses and currently in charge of the scene behind Heaven Suppression. He wasn’t that famous but those who truly knew about his might were very respectful towards him.

“Imperial prince, the pleasure is mine.” Gu Zun said flatly with no intention of standing up to greet Aotian.

Long Aotian stared at him with his eyes derivating the myriad dao. This gaze penetrated the yin and yang as if wanting to see through Gu Zun.

Gu Zun sat there, unperturbed as if nothing had happened. His terrible gaze couldn't affect him at all.

“Senior, you have personally agreed to this marriage and that Heaven Suppression will support us. However, your city lord refused this marriage yet you are just standing idly by! This is not the agreement between you and my Soaring Immortal Sect.” Aotian said slowly.

“The marriage thing is not us changing our mind or a break in the agreement.” Gu Zun gently shook his head: “This came from Li Qiye. He wishes to seize the Heaven's Will so he views you as an opponent and intending on using this as a way of hurting your dao heart. This will make his future path easier.”

“My dao heart isn't so easily shaken!” Aotian said: “But, senior, your inaction this time really makes one wonder. Will Heaven Suppression give us an acceptable answer?”

Aotian came with a condemnatory tone. Others wouldn't dare to speak like this in front of Gu Zun but not Aotian due to his incredible achievements, not to mention his sect.

He was already giving Gu Zun enough respect by calling him “senior”.

Gu Zun didn't seem to mind the aggressive tone at all: “It's a bit meaningless for me to do anything, the opportunity is left for you. Li Qiye's fame is great right now, like the sun during high noon, the most promising candidate for the throne. If you can kill him, no one else will dare to oppose you in Mortal Emperor anymore. Li Qiye will only be a pile of bones beneath your feet. At that time, you can win the beauty back and gain the worship from the people of the nine worlds. If I were to take action, it would be robbing you of this chance. Others would only say that I have bullied Li Qiye since he's part of the young generation.”

Gu Zun spoke in a pleasing manner with a completely reasonable argument. Aotian slightly snorted and couldn't retort.

“If this is the case, excuse me then. But may I ask, what is Miss Cuining doing? Why is she going with Li Qiye?” Aotian spoke.

“You don’t need to worry about that. The city lord has returned to Heaven Suppression.” Gu Zun answered: “The marriage is already set in stone. All you need to do now is defeat Li Qiye and shoulder the Heaven’s Will as soon as possible. That is the correct path.”

“Senior, you don’t need to worry about that either. Li Qiye might be notorious right now but once I see him, I’ll cut off his dog head and sacrifice his blood to my dead brothers!” Aotian spoke with absolute confidence.

He couldn’t be blamed for having such bravado. His grand dao was complete on top of having the arts of five emperors and a grand completion Immortal Physique. The only thing he was lacking right now was the Heaven’s Will. In his eyes, no other youth could match him in the contemporary. It was only a matter of time before he kills Fiercest.

Gu Zun explained: “It’s not hard for someone of your power to kill him but he also has behemoths backing him up. For example, the grand completion Immortal Physique from the Heavenly Dao Academy and the Middle Continent Princess. Do not underestimate them!”

“Only a grand completion Immortal Physique, there are more than just one of them in this world. It’s one thing if this person doesn’t come out but if they want to interfere, I’ll see how strong they are!” Aotian confidently said.

Few in the contemporary would look down on grand completion physiques; Aotian was one of them. He believed that his current capabilities were enough for him to challenge anyone. In fact, his confidence wasn’t due to possessing an arrogance nature. Ever since his debut, he hasn’t tasted defeat before and had killed Godkings.

“Imperial prince, don’t be complacent. Your achievements today are peerless but remember, two fists can’t handle four hands. You need to be prepared for this and ask your ancestors to be your dao protectors. If you can’t overcome these obstacles, you can’t become emperor and win the beauty’s heart.”

“Rest assured, senior, Ancestor Long will be my dao protector and personally come out if necessary. He’ll flatten the Heavenly Dao Academy! Those who oppose me and Soaring Immortal shall be killed without mercy!” He said firmly.

“Of course” Gu Zun nodded: “With Ancestor Long, no one will dare to block your path and fulfill the legend of a lineage having six emperors!”

“Senior, no need to waste energy worrying about Li Qiye’s matter.” Aotian said: “But you need to stop watching with folded arms about one thing since we are an alliance.”

“What is it? Just say the words and Heaven Suppression will do our best without uttering a single complaint!” Gu Zun said.

“Heaven Suppression is the leading power of the Grand Sea. Right now, a few remnant demons and sea monsters are hiding in the depth. I need senior to give me some guides to find them. I want to personally annihilate them to create an unshakable imperial foundation at the Grand Sea!” Aotian’s eyes turned cold with an oppressive aura after this declaration.

“Oh, this matter.” Gu Zun smiled: “Just a trivial thing, don’t worry, Heaven Suppression will assist you. These demons and sea monsters can’t reach the apex. Their armies are routed by you, they trembled before your name while living a borrowed life.”

Aotian enjoyed being praised by Gu Zun. In this world, so many praised him nonstop but he simply didn’t care for them. Alas, it wasn’t the same when it came from a character of Gu Zun’s level.

This was an eonic genius with a peerless constitution in present

time. Being praised by Gu Zun was a glorious matter.

“Very well, I will wait for your news, senior.” Aotian nodded. He initially came to question Gu Zun but left happily.

After Aotian left, a burly man appeared before Gu Zun. He didn’t look too old so his white beard became even more conspicuous.

This was Gu Zun’s disciple, the loyal Ye Jiuzhou.

“Jiuzhou, order some people to be his guides to find those demons hiding in the trenches. Let him kill for a bit to satisfy his vanity.” Gu Zun ordered.

“Master, don’t worry, I’ll send some elders that are very familiar with the sea to show the prince the way.” Jiuzhou answered respectfully.

Gu Zun simply smiled. In his mind, Aotian was only a pawn. There was no chance for Soaring Immortal to separate themselves from this storm now.

“Master, the city lord came back. She has opened the Black Dragon Hall and released the ancestors.” Jiuzhou reported.

“I know.” Gu Zun nodded. He wasn’t surprised at all for he had expected this to happen.

1. According to Buddhist tradition, the Buddha was lying between a pair of shala trees before dying

# Chapter 1621: Mu Zhuos Demonic City

---

Ye Jiuzhou hesitated and said: “What should we do with them, keep or let them go?”

“Let them do whatever.” Gu Zun didn’t mind at all: “They’re only baits. The big fish is out already, the baits don’t matter anymore.”

“I understand.” Ye Jiuzhou nodded respectfully.

“It will be quite a show. I wonder how many old men from Soaring Immortal will come out to join the fun? I hope they will go all out.”

“Will Soaring Immortal take the bait too?” Jiuzhou became worried: “They still have old generals that recognize His Excellency Dark Crow.”

“Yes.” Gu Zun was certain and said: “While they are still resting, we’ll exacerbate the situation. By that point, Soaring Immortal can’t escape even if they want to.”

“What if they surrender like last time? That might save them again.” Jiuzhou commented.

“No, it’s different now.” Gu Zun disagreed: “Back then, those old geezers knew what kind of existences they were facing. Even Immortal Emperor Qian Li and the Black Dragon King were there as well. They had no choice but to give up. That’s not the case anymore. The younger generation might not know about him. Even if they have heard of some legends, they won’t keep it in mind at all.”

A thick smile appeared on his face as he continued: “This is especially true for Ancestor Long. He has been itching to come out and play. In the past, this was a supreme genius with a grand completion physique at a young age. He was undergoing some training in the nine worlds to become the emperor eventually.

Alas, he was born in the wrong period. Soaring Immortal had to close its doors so he lost the chance to become emperor. This had always haunted him so now, as one of the leaders of the Ren Xian branch and the young faction, his ambition is burning strong, wanting to fight and unite the nine worlds.”

“Do you think those young ones want to compromise so easily? They possess enough strength so do you think they care for a legend? They believe that legends are meant to be broken; with that, they will become the new legend!” He smiled after stating this.

Jiuzhou sighed after hearing his master: “Master, do they have a chance of winning?”

Gu Zun shook his head: “No. Soaring Immortal has five emperors, two of them were under his banner. If he were to attack Soaring Immortal, he’ll have certain things that Soaring Immortal won’t be ready for.”

“What about you, master?” Next came the important question.

Gu Zun pondered for a moment before his eyes flashed with a sharp, cold glint - capable of tearing the world apart. He eventually withdrew the gaze and looked at his disciple: “Jiuzhou, If you are afraid, then withdraw, I won’t blame you. You’re not the only one who is afraid of him in the generations. Even emperors are apprehensive, let alone others.”

“No.” Jiuzhou shook his head: “Master, I know who we are facing. As long as you don’t give up, I won’t either. My life is yours!”

“It’s a shame for you too, being born in the wrong era or you would have a chance to become emperor too.” Gu Zun sighed.

Jiuzhou didn’t respond. He chose to stand by his master despite the insurmountable odds. He knew that death was virtually impossible to escape but he had no regrets.



Mu Zhuo's Demonic City was a great lineage in the Grand Sea, among the top of the rankings.

It was majestic with towering walls and spanned for ten thousands of miles. This gated region seemed to be its own world. It was an ancient and sacred city, especially in the heart of the demons.

The city was prosperous with billions of inhabitants. It passed on for one generation after another with the same riches. They had to be praised for having the proper administration.

It was considered an imperial lineage with an Immortal Emperor True Treasure with deep roots and considerable power, capable of contending against the imperial lineages in Mortal Emperor.

Its status did indeed have something to do with its origin. It claimed to have the dao system of Immortal Emperor Mu Zhuo as well as many of his great techniques. That's why they considered themselves to be an orthodox branch. Their members also claimed to be his descendants.

There seemed to be no problem with the city taking this claim in regards to their dao system and bloodline. However, it was worth further deliberation on whether they were his orthodox lineage or not. It can even be said that this was a slight overstepping.

There were very few writings about the emperor. Some people were sure that he didn't pass down his system. Though the city had many arts from him, a few researchers found that he didn't pass down his heavenly dao. In other words, he didn't recognize the city as his lineage.

The researchers didn't disagree with the self-proclaimed notion that the city had many of his arts. All along, no one knew how many merit laws he had actually created. They didn't even know what his supreme grand dao encompassed.

Of course, no other sects were known to have his arts. This was the reason why people accepted the city's status so readily.

One couldn't deny that the city consisted of his descendants. However, this didn't mean that they had the direct line.

Despite the lack of records, people knew that he had many lovers of high status including goddess, demoness, and saintesses before eventually settling down with the prettiest woman in one of the nine worlds.

Their child eventually lived in this city but the emperor has never spent a single day in this place. This was the amusing aspect about the whole thing. In other words, this city couldn't actually be considered his main lineage, only a side branch.

His direct lineage disappeared along with him and the imperial queen. Their branch no longer showed themselves but people said that it did have successors. No one knew where they went.

Due to the silence of the main branch, the demon city was able to claim this prestigious position without any backlash from the public.

Regardless of the claim's validity, the city has always been prosperous and didn't besmirch the emperor's reputation.

People busily came and went in this special place inside the demonic city today. Suddenly, a terrible and tyrannical aura loomed in the sky and engulfed the entire location.

Mortals kneeled and cultivators rembled before this aura.

“Boom!” A supreme grand dao descended from the horizon. A grand path paved itself with countless immoral light.

Heavenly flowers and amazing trees were inside this light while the deer ran among them. When this grand dao appeared, it looked as if an immortal world was being opened.

At this time, a person with a flawless temperament slowly

approached just like an immortal from the upper realm!

His robe fluttered as he was being accompanied by the laws and hymns of the grand dao. He emitted a radiance akin to an ascension ceremony. All were waiting for his blessing; the myriad existences in the world prostrated before him.

He was above the nine heavens and looked down on the myriad realms and their inhabitants. In this particular moment, he solemnly assumed the role of an emperor.

When his eleven palaces emerged above his head, an undying might drowned the world, giving him an insuperable position.

A primordial energy rained down with his steps as if he came from the origin of the world, the beginning of the grand dao. The world was his alone!

“Long Aotian!” People cried out after seeing the youth walking on this grand dao.

Even those who haven’t seen him before shuddered in fear.

This name, full of charisma, represented nobility, invincibility, and all that was bright!

# Chapter 1622: Past Acquaintance

---

Aotian was born to be in the limelight and to be extraordinary. All eyes were destined to be on him.

The successor of Soaring Immortal with triple saint talents and eleven fate palaces; possessing the arts of five emperors and a grand completion Immortal Physique; fighting against the world for ten days and ten nights - any of this was enough to look down on the geniuses in this world and steal their spotlight.

Aotian didn't try to hide his aura at all after coming to Mu Zhuo's demonic city. He unleashed his energy in order to threaten the inhabitants in this place. It wasn't only a posture of aggression. He wanted to make his invincibility clear.

The city has always been powerful. Not many would dare to try such a thing but Aotian was here to show his might.

"The Denary King... only Fiercest could compare to him in the contemporary." An expert murmured.

Aotian's prestige used to be peerless when Soaring Immortal descended on the Grand Sea. Many people thought that he would surely become emperor.

However, Fiercest once again entered everyone's eyes and had a negative impact on Aotian's perfect momentum. Everyone saw that Aotian's rival had arrived. Only Fiercest in this world would be able to take him on.

Despite the obnoxious fanfare, the city didn't show any signs of discontent. On the other hand, the current city lord - Golden Dragon Prince - and the other ancestors personally came to greet him with servility.

Many knew that the Golden Dragon Prince and Long Aotian were sworn-brothers. Their two sects were alliance as well so it wasn't strange for the prince to be so respectful towards Aotian.

In fact, they didn't find this sycophantic act to be shameful. By flattering and obtaining Soaring Immortal as a backing, it would grant a lifetime of benefits. Others would love to have this chance.

"I came here today to learn the grand dao with the heroes of this world and to disperse this information to the world." Aotian slowly said: "I'm willing to talk with anyone, including Fiercest!"

Aotian's calm voice emanated across the entire city and even this sea region. Despite the lack of hostility, it still shook everyone's mind.

The crowd gasped in response. They knew that no one would dare to participate in this dao discussion with Aotian in the form of a spar. He had killed plenty of Godkings. Others simply weren't his match.

Thus, they understood that this was a challenge aimed towards Fiercest.

"A great battle is coming? The two best candidates will be fighting even before the Heaven's Will take shape?" This was the first reaction.

The spectators became breathless at this development. They knew that this was the start of another storm.

\*\*\*

After leaving the Crystalfowl Immortal Mine, Li Qiye returned to the Yu mansion. Someone immediately wanted to see him.

Li Qiye granted the audience and smiled widely after seeing the guest.

"Time passed quickly after our last meeting, Brother Li. Your style has become even more matchless, I feel inadequate standing before you." The youth prostrated and said with respect.

His scholarly aura would fool a stranger into thinking that he was a helpless young man.

Li Qiye was amused to see the guy:” A bit interesting to meet you again. You want to come out and play too?”

The youth looked up and said: “No, no, Brother Li. I lost to you convincingly back then. You are the sun in the middle of the sky, how can we, tiny fireflies, compete with you?”

Li Qiye chuckled: “Shouldn’t you be saving those words for your senior brother? Which do you think will win?”

The youth contemplated before bowing again: “My senior brother is a contemporary hero and so are you, both are dragons among men.”

“Alright, I won’t make it difficult for you. Since you, Heavenly Emperor Lin, came from Soaring Immortal, forcing you to say stuff like this is a bit too forceful.”

“Thank you, Brother Li.” The youth answered: “Nothing can hide from your sight. It’s not that I didn’t want to tell you back then. I just wasn’t in the position to.”

“Forget it, I already knew.” Li Qiye said flatly: “Your cultivation method could only come from Soaring Immortal so you had to be a disciple of the sect.”

The youth was no one else but Heavenly Emperor Lin who had lost to Li Qiye in the past. He was very famous in the Barren Earth back then but his background was too mysterious. No one knew which sect he came from.

“Sit.” Li Qiye glanced at him and said.

After sitting down, Lin cupped his fist towards Li Qiye and said: “The truth is that I was born in a scholar family, all my ancestors were mortals. Later on, my master toured through the Barren Earth and took me in as a disciple. He told me not to tell outsiders of my background so I had to obey. There was no ulterior motive in hiding it.”

Lin’s background was indeed surprising and misled the

cultivators in the southern region.

“Your sect has violated the agreement and had disciples sneaking into the nine worlds. That’s the reason why your master didn’t dare to let outsiders know.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

Lin’s expression turned awkward after hearing this and was at a loss for words. In the end, he said: “I have heard the seniors talk about this but I know very little about it, being a junior and all.”

“It’s fine, I’m not criticizing you.” Li Qiye answered with a glance.

“Thank you, Brother Li.” Despite being from Soaring Immortal, Lin was still as respectful towards Li Qiye as ever

“It’s no secret that for the last two generations, your sect’s disciples have been sneaking into the nine worlds. But this time, such a blatant entrance... looks like it is going all out then.” Li Qiye commented.

Lin carefully weighed his words before answering: “Brother Li, to be perfectly candid, coming into being this time was not my branch’s idea.”

“Is that so?” Li Qiye smiled and said: “Judging by your cultivation, you should be a member of the Can Long branch. From what I know, your branch was shining and even greatly supported the brilliant Immortal Emperor Ren Xian.”

“Well...” Lin was hesitant before speaking softly: “Brother Li, the truth is that our branch has fallen, not the same as before.”

“Is that so? Your branch had Asura, allowing you to stand above the nine heavens.” Li Qiye continued: “So to say, Asura is no longer in this world.”

“Yes.” Lin replied: “The seniors said that after the troubles back then, Forefather Asura’s lifespan was nearing its end so he eventually passed on.”

“Really now?” Li Qiye laughed: “It must Immortal Emperor Ren Xian’s descendants taking over. Asura has lived since Immortal Emperor Can Long’s generation with an ocean of resources to keep him alive for so long. Now when your sect has been suppressed and he has lost his authority, there is no more life-prolongment resource, right?”

Lin could only sigh in response.

Soaring Immortal was the strongest lineage in this world. When it faced a common external enemy, the sect had no problem uniting. However, no sects in this world, including Soaring Immortal, could be transcending enough to escape from the internal power struggle. This particular contest within the test was cruel beyond everyone’s imagination.

In fact, this shouldn’t come as a surprise. A behemoth like Soaring Immortal would allow the person in charge to wield the ultimate force in the world. Anyone would be moved by this temptation and authority. This was the reason why no single branch in Soaring Immortal could hold the power. There were ups and downs, ebbs and flows, and prosperity and declination.

For example, the Can Long branch that Lin was from, they used to be at the zenith with an invincible forefather like Asura backing them up. This allowed them to control the direction of the sect itself!



# Chapter 1623: Soaring Powers Power Struggle

---

During the time when their Can Long branch had the highest authority, they chose to support Immortal Emperor Ren Xian.

When the emperor was still young, Forefather Asura took care of the dissenters and was a staunch supporter of him. Later on, the emperor shouldered the Heaven's Will so Asura became even more respected in Soaring Immortal with a peerless position. This was the reason why he enjoyed so much resources for longevity.

Unfortunately, no flower can bloom for a hundred days. Eventually, the branch finally declined. Forefather Asura's immense strength alone couldn't do it all. They were robbed of their power before being pushed out of the political scene completely.

Li Qiye simply smiled and said: "Asura's current situation is not unexpected. Immortal Emperor Ren Xian might be a man of his words but this doesn't mean his descendants are the same!"

Lin simply sighed in response. A junior like him wasn't in a position to discuss the inner politics of his sect.

"I don't think you're here today just to chat with me?" Li Qiye looked at Lin and smiled.

Lin sighed in response: "I'm here this time in hope of talking to you about the current situation in Soaring Immortal. Immortal Emperor Ren Xian's people are in charge."

Li Qiye replied: "I know, you are saying this isn't the idea of your entire sect."

"Yes." Lin busily said: "We are asking Brother Li to convey the message for us, as well as our respect."

Li Qiye was amused by this. When he used the Benevolent

Armament back then, some old men from Soaring Immortal have guessed a few things. However, they didn't personally expect for him to actually be out with his real body. They assumed that Li Qiye's backing was the Dark Crow.

This misunderstanding was reasonable since, for millions of years, the Dark Crow has only trained emperors and never personally came out. Thus, these old men thought that Li Qiye was the crow's disciple and representative. This was the reason why they sent Lin here.

"Is that so?" Li Qiye said: "Is this the Can Long's intent or are you the messenger for the Tun Ri and Ba Mie branches?"

"The two ancestors from the other two branches feel the same way but they couldn't come themselves due to their withering lifespan." Lin answered.

Li Qiye shook his head in disapproval: "If those old men knew who they are facing, they needed to understand that they, themselves, must try their best to earn this opportunity. It won't just fall down from the sky in front of them."

"The ancestors are aware." Lin hurriedly explained: "They are doing the best right now to convince the other ancestors so that everyone can be on the same side."

Li Qiye smiled: "Unfortunately, I don't see much hope in this. Your sect still came into being with an oppressive and sharp momentum. Looks like your ancestors were ineffective."

Lin lamented again: "Brother Li, you might not know this but right now, Immortal Emperor Ren Xian's branch has an unprecedented influence in our sect. Even if our three branches are working together, we might not necessarily be able to suppress that branch. The young ones from that branch, especially, want to rule the nine worlds. That's why the ancestors can't convince them right away."

“A bunch of fools thinking that they’re the heaven’s favorite children.” Li Qiye said flatly: “After so many generations, they still think they have a nobler lineage than any other beings.”

Lin couldn’t help but smile wryly after hearing this. Once again, it would be improper for a junior like him to comment.

“So, your group must have the throne this time around.” Li Qiye stared at him and stated.

“Well...” Lin coughed awkwardly and said: “The ancestors from our three branches, at the very least, do not want to do so. However, Eldest Brother’s ambition for the throne is the decision of the Ren Xian branch. Ancestor Long himself will be the dao protector.”

“Ancestor Long?” Li Qiye asked.

“Ancestor Long’s isn’t well known to the world. His name is Long Zhantian.” Lin quickly answered: “He was born in the later years of the Qian Li generation and even had wanted to compete against Immortal Emperor Yin Tian. His venerable has a grand completion Soaring Immortal Physique, far better than Eldest Brother. His cultivation has reached the highest attainment too.”

“Ancestor Long, as the leader of the young faction, greatly supports Eldest Brother’s effort. He went against all oppositions to help Eldest Brother.” Lin wasn’t all too pleased with this.

Long Aotian’s position for the throne has been decided by the sect long ago. Thus, all disciples must help him achieve this goal.

“I see.” Li Qiye smiled: “The Soaring Immortal Sect was under an isolation agreement. Your ancestor thought that he could have become an Immortal Emperor but this agreement restricted him. Because of this, he is full of grievances and anger towards the Dark Crow so he wants revenge!”

“No...” Lin was aghast. Though he was aware of this existence, his seniors had told him that the title, Dark Crow, was a taboo and

shouldn't be uttered so carelessly.

At this moment, Li Qiye was bringing up this title as if to sentence their sect for violating the agreement. Even though he wasn't the Dark Crow, he was still the existence's representative!

This was the reason why Lin became so scared. He quickly added: "Brother Li, please don't misunderstand. We really have no such intentions. Ancestor Long only wants to fulfill his wish of winning the throne and never harbored any ill-will towards His Excellency. There's definitely no wish of revenge either."

"It doesn't matter." Li Qiye smiled and said: "For millions of years, plenty of hatred went around. Too many irreconcilable feuds have been created."

Lin heaved a sigh of relief after hearing this.

Li Qiye then added: "However, are your old men this useless? Your Ren Xian branch might have one or two characters like this Ancestor Long, but this is enough to suppress those old men? A grand completion Immortal Physique isn't exactly rare in your sect!"

"I..." Lin didn't know how to answer right away.

"Looks like your old men didn't reveal everything." Li Qiye said flatly.

Lin hesitated for a moment before divulging the real details: "The ancestors are thinking that the imperial children are still alive and may be able to leave the Immortal Confinement."

"I see, Immortal Emperor Ren Xian's sons, right? Back then, it is said that they wanted to train in there, but the truth is that they fled to that place, right?"

Lin was at a loss for words again. The ancestors told him that during that event, many people from their sect committed suicide in fear of the punishment or the truth getting out.

The emperor's sons were said to be training in the Immortal Confinement but the truth was that they had to hide in there to avoid the Dark Crow. They took the fatal risk to travel to that place.

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: "Regardless of Immortal Emperor Ren Xian's origin, he has always been a decisive and prudent man. Unfortunately, his sons didn't inherit his strong qualities. They had perverted thoughts of having the greatest bloodline and want to rule again using Soaring Immortal."

Lin was very afraid of this grave matter. Even their sect wouldn't be able to handle the consequence.

"I won't comment further on your sect itself. However, Ancestor Long and your Eldest Brother are violating the old agreement, intending to obtain the Heaven's Will. They shall be destroyed, this is the price of betraying the oath. However, if your sect still has people wanting to cultivate that bloodline, then prepare for the consequence."

"No, absolutely not, nothing like that is going on." Lin broke out in cold sweat and panicked: "Brother Li, please tell His Excellency that the past will not repeat itself!"

How could Lin not be afraid? Back then, some people in their sect wanted to try for atavism. This incited the fury of the Dark Crow and the existence forcefully searched their sect!

Despite being a lineage with five emperors and praised to be able to look down on the world, the entire sect still quivered before the Dark Crow's wrath.

On that day, Immortal Emperor Qian Li and the Black Dragon King presided over the battle. These two legions directly sealed all spatial paths belonging to the sect.

Many experts with no lack of Godkings committed suicide before the Dark Crow's forceful inquisition. In the end, the emperor's

sons had to run into the sure-death prison.

Later on, the sect made a vow before the Dark Crow finally left. Back in that generation, if they had tried to fight back, they might have turned into ashes already.

# Chapter 1624: Decision

---

“Your old geezers know the truth.” Li Qiye glanced at the stunned fella and said: “They know just why so many people had to commit suicide and why the princes had to run into the prison.”

“This...” It took a while before Lin could muster a response: “Our three branches had nothing to do with this, it’s all Immortal Emperor Ren Xian’s group.”

In fact, he understood that there was no point in defending themselves because it had already happened. Despite not experiencing it himself, he understood the immense loss they suffered as a consequence.

“I know.” Li Qiye said: “Otherwise, Soaring Immortal wouldn’t have been able to skirt past destruction so easily!”

Lin became quiet. Under the old circumstances with Immortal Emperor Qian Li and the Black Dragon King in action, they couldn’t resist at all. Further resistance would only bring about destruction.

“Go back and tell the old generals to obey the vow. Out of consideration for Immortal Emperor Tun Ri and Immortal Emperor Ba Mie, and them as well, your sect was spared in the past. However, a second time won’t happen. If this is happening again and they can’t deal with this looming disaster... I don’t need to speak further on the consequence. At that point, they themselves won’t be able to beseech anything, it will be too late.” Li Qiye spoke emotionlessly.

Lin shuddered after hearing this. Li Qiye was the Dark Crow’s representative. His stance right now should be the same as the Dark Crow.

“Brother Li, don’t worry, I will send the message. Nothing like back then will happen again. The ancestors will be able to take

control again.” Lin said solemnly.

Li Qiye simply smiled. Though Lin indeed had this thought, the Soaring Immortal Sect’s current agenda couldn’t be controlled by a junior like him.

“If your sect is so confident in grooming a sixth Immortal Emperor, then do you think who is stronger between me and your Eldest Brother?” Li Qiye asked with a smile.

This question made Lin a bit awkward. In the past, he would think that their background was even or rather, his Eldest Brother would have the advantage. However, this was no longer the case since he found out the Dark Crow was behind Li Qiye.

“Go ahead, I won’t be mad.” Li Qiye continued.

Lin hesitated before giving a straight answer: “Brother Li, I’ll be candid. In my personal opinion, my brother has the arts of five emperors and have fused them into his own grand dao, not to mention his grand completion physique. His dao is flawless with a sturdy foundation, leaving virtually zero openings. Moreover, he also has an abundance of treasures from the sect. Of course, you have thirteen palaces, that’s one and only.”

“A bit interesting.” Li Qiye said with a smile: “So in your personal opinion, I am still a bit lacking compared to your Eldest Brother. You chose against flattering me despite knowing my origin. Interesting indeed.”

Lin smiled wryly in response. He didn’t know whether Li Qiye was praising him for his honesty or criticizing him for a lack of craftiness. The only thing he could do was to give a direct answer.

In his mind, the thirteen palaces were indeed a miracle. However, his brother’s dao foundation was too firm and flawless. Without taking the Dark Crow into account, he still thought that his brother would have a great chance in a one-on-one.

“Alright, I’ll stop making it hard for you.” Li Qiye gently waved



his sleeve and said: “Go now, tell your old geezers that there will be only one chance for Soaring Immortal this generation. Survival or demise, that will be up to their own effort.”

Lin took a deep breath and bowed before leaving. After his departure, Li Qiye sat there quietly with a profound pair of eyes capable of piercing through eternity itself.

A while later, Matriarch Yu entered the room. She sat quietly by his side for a long while before speaking: “You have something on your mind?”

“War is about to begin. This might be my final sweep in the nine worlds.” He uttered slowly.

“You want to mobilize against Soaring Immortal?” The matriarch became surprised. Soaring Immortal avoided destruction back then after the search. Who would have thought that this would still end with a battle?

“Yes.” He answered: “It’s time for me to go in this generation but there are still people who won’t give up regarding the Ancient Ming’s bloodline. Only by destroying Soaring Immortal will people learn that certain things are taboo for a reason!”

The matriarch responded: “The ancestors could be considered pretty powerful since they were once great generals under emperors. They should have been prepared for this already with preventive measures since they know the gravity of the situation, killing the problem in the cradle.”

“It’s not their generation anymore. They are indeed old now while the fiercer crowd continued to appear in Soaring Immortal. As time passed by, they grew weaker as their vitality withered away, not able to reach the old apex. If they were capable of controlling the situation, Soaring Immortal wouldn’t have appeared again. The young faction is unstoppable now, this was also the case when the old men couldn’t do anything to stop Asura from supporting Immortal Emperor Ren Xian's ascension.”

He gently sighed before continuing: “Back then, Asura didn’t only want to groom an Immortal Emperor. The truth is that the sect itself desired to break the limit, to become truly timeless, the strongest imperial lineage in history.”

“Indeed.” The matriarch quietly nodded: “Soaring Immortal does have the most resources in the world. Their ancestral ground has turned into a separate world. Then they have their merit laws and excellent bloodlines. We add that to their previous successes with emperors; all of this fuel their great ambition.”

Her point was that if any other sect were to have the same advantages as Soaring Immortal, they would become ambitious as well. Otherwise, there would be a clear shortage of aspiration.

After producing the fifth emperor, the young faction in the sect became emboldened with the desire to unite the nine worlds.

Because of this, they researched the bloodline of the Ancient Ming. They wanted to possess the finest and most powerful bloodline in the world. This would boost them to a new level. Everything else would be within their grasp.

“This is my final sweep, the nine worlds will have to rely on themselves in the future.” Li Qiye said insipidly.

This wasn’t a hasty decision since he understood that the ancestors in Soaring Immortal have lost control. Lin’s arrival now only confirmed his speculations.

No matter what, he would never allow this bloodline to appear again so a cleanse was necessary to avoid the engulfing darkness.

Li Qiye was quiet for a moment before questioning: “Maybe I was really too soft back then. If I started with killing, something like this wouldn’t be happening now.”

The matriarch replied: “It isn’t your fault, Your Excellency. They made their choice and have to face the consequences despite being shown mercy before.”

Back in those days, he had a moment of softness and agreed for Soaring Immortal to groom Immortal Emperor Ren Xian after all of their promises and concessions. The emperor had an extremely thin strand of bloodline from the Ancient Ming. It was of a negligible level.

All of the massacres wore him down which led to this decision. However, the emperor didn't let him down and only conducted himself in a perfect manner. This was the reason why he chose his title to be "[Ren Xian](#)", to display his human roots.

Alas, his descendants didn't do the same. Some among them had ambitious thoughts which led to the forceful search from the Dark Crow.

"Seems like I must destroy Soaring Immortal. If I do not, the young faction there will never give up." Li Qiye said softly.

Soaring Immortal had deep ties with him, especially Immortal Emperor Tun Ri and Immortal Emperor Ba Mie who were essentially his students. He wouldn't be wanting to destroy their sect unless it was the last resort.

1. Ren = Man/Human; Xian = Merciful/Kind/Worthy

# Chapter 1625: Glory

---

Matriarch Yu stared at Li Qiye and declared: “For your conquest of Soaring Immortal, I am willing to be the vanguard.”

“No rush.” Li Qiye chuckled and shook his head: “Remember, Qingfeng, you should be enjoying your old age. I don’t want to see you stained by the smokes of war again.”

She understood that he was protecting her. After all, at her age, she couldn’t fight as freely since it would require expending too much vitality.

Of course, it would be another story if her clan has been growing all along. Alas, they couldn’t handle such a great war right now.

“Your Excellency, which legion will you use?” She asked. The Black Dragon Legion was in name only after the last battle with their king. Only a pitiful amount of soldiers remained.

“The Azure Dragon Legion shall have this glory. Back then, they paid a heavy price; too many soldiers died on foreign soil. All along, they have been recuperating. This is the time for them to shine again.” Li Qiye answered.

“The Azure Dragon...” A sense of respect rose in her mind. She has heard many stories about this legion. Though they had been reclusive from the world, she knew they continued to exist.

“The war back then was unimaginably cruel. When it was time to see the dawn, not too many old soldiers were left.” He gloomily said.

“I heard the legion is hiding inside Heavenguard.” She softly said.

He nodded: “That’s right. The soldiers from the legion came from all over the nine worlds but the main force is still Heavenguard. Qi Zhen as the commander prepared a firm foundation for Heavenguard. This is so that they could fight

against the Ancient Ming again in the future if necessary. After the end of the war, many survivors returned to Heavenguard to rest and prosper.”

She enjoyed the snippets of the old war that she couldn't personally see in person. Nevertheless, she could still imagine the price this legion paid during that merciless struggle.

“When war comes again, the old soldiers will still be ready. Though I do not want Heavenguard to join again since the previous carnage was too bloody, they deserve this glory and to be written down in history. It would be too cruel if all of their effort and sacrifice go unknown.” Li Qiye said with a tinge of emotion.

With the end of the Ancient Ming Era, what was left of the Azure Dragon Legion began to flourish. This legion even once asked to go with him above the nine heavens to sweep through the enemy.

However, Li Qiye felt sorry for them and didn't want to send the men there to die again. Thus, he refused both Heavenguard and the legion. Regardless of the changing times, he has always kept in mind of their sacrifice and that he owed them a debt of glory. Thus, this was the time for them to be remembered by the nine worlds.

This was the reason why he wanted to use the legion for this particular battle. Their banners and reputation shall flutter across the nine worlds again!

The matriarch didn't say anything this time. She understood that it was over for Soaring Immortal. This incoming battle would change the landscape of the nine worlds. In a near future, the name of this legion shall echo again.

Just like that, the world didn't know that the fate of Soaring Immortal had been sealed.

Li Qiye wasn't in a rush after making up his mind. He quietly cultivated at the Yu mansion.

A few days later, the Peacock Bright Monarch came to see him. She bowed and said: “Young noble, there are some matters that I must attend to back at the sect. I have to personally return to Pearl.”

“What?” Li Qiye asked.

She answered right away: “A few demons and sea monsters are taking refuge at Pearl. Our elders are calling me back in order to decide whether to expel them or not.”

“This must have something to do with Heaven Suppression too.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

The monarch nodded after a slight hesitation: “After their defeat, the demons hid in the depth of the ocean. Soaring Immortal tried to find them several times without being too effective. However, news came from the sect. Ancestor Ye ordered some people to lead the way for Soaring Immortal. Thus, the demons found themselves at a dead end.”

“A dead end yet they can still run to Pearl?” Li Qiye smiled in response: “So they purposely left the monsters a way out to Pearl so that they have an excuse to send troops there.”

She sighed in response. Pearl was a trading center for cultivators to come and go. The presence of the demons there placed the city in a precarious situation.

She continued: “Some ancestors in the city do not want to allow their stay. This would be the best way to protect Pearl.” She glimpsed at him.

“You want to hear my opinion?” Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile after seeing her appearance.

She hurriedly nodded: “Please do.”

She didn’t only come here this time to bid farewell but also wanted to ask Li Qiye for the right path.

He smiled and said: “Your city already is an independent entity, there is nothing else to say unless they have the proper documentation. Plus, there’s no friendship between you and Ye Jiuzhou. It seems meaningless to help him.”

“More importantly.” Li Qiye said: “If Soaring Immortal is here, let them come. It is time for battle.”

“Fighting against Soaring Immortal?” She gasped after hearing this. Despite being a confident person, she would need to carefully think about the consequence of fighting against Soaring Immortal.

“Is that your answer?” Li Qiye smiled: “As the current ruler of Pearl, do you want to work with Soaring Immortal while they stay in the Grand Sea or for them to leave, or maybe even destroying them?”

She had no response to this question.

“The decision is in your hands. My opinion is only to offer another viewpoint.” He added.

In the end, she eventually nodded: “I understand.”

“How is your city lord now?” He casually asked as she were about to leave.

“She has sent a message back. Ancestor Shan and the majority of disciples have decided to retreat. Some still wanted to stay to oppose Ancestor Ye’s group.” She elaborated.

“Let them be.” He didn’t care for this matter and gently waved his sleeve: “They’re only wasting time with Gu Zun there.”

She eventually bowed and took her leave.

Li Qiye still remained in the Yu mansion after her departure and began to refine his weapons. During this period, he had also heard about Aotian’s challenge towards him.

He wasn’t in a rush to do anything since he also wanted to see just how much strength Soaring Immortal could muster. In his

eyes, Long Aotian and Ancestor Long weren't his final targets. The ones he wanted were those who experimented on the bloodline back then.

He knew that although many have committed suicide, the ones behind all of this were still alive and plotting their return.

This might be the reason why they wanted an alliance with Gu Zun since he had an unbelievable amount of information.

Li Qiye only chuckled at this notion. Both Gu Zun and Soaring Immortal would become ashes soon before he leaves the nine worlds.

Meanwhile, the weapon refinement process was underway. The materials were extremely priceless.

Back in Heaven Spirit when he destroyed the Ancestral Terra, he didn't only take their treasures but also the three ancestral trees.

They couldn't survive after being uprooted, losing their connection to the earth. Nevertheless, the trees were still precious enough. If someone was capable of refining them into weapons, the resulting power would be unimaginable!



# Chapter 1626: Ancestral Eighteen Explosions

---

Flames were jumping with vitality coursing through them as Li Qiye controlled the fire of the cauldron. He used this power to refine and empower this treasure.

His fire mastery changed the cauldron fire into all kind of shapes. It resembled the rain of spring that carefully bathed the treasures or would be like the raging storm to morph it. Other times, it would turn into an icy fire to encapsulate the item...

Considerable changes appeared with the refinement process in terms of colors. This showed a fundamental shift in essence.

At the same time, his vitality continued to nourish it without fail. This made the treasure inside seemed to have its own life, as if it was a beating heart.

“Boom!” It suddenly turned into a continuously-rotating sphere before changing into little needles. All the needles were together just like a hedgehog. Next, it changed again into stacking pieces just like the formation of a wall...

It continued this amazing process with the different forms. The treasure was made from the precious ancestral trees on top of other precious metals using an incredible technique. After the arduous process, a magical treasure finally came out.

“Bang!” It instantly jumped out of the cauldron after completion and scurried away like a cannon shell but was instantly grabbed by Li Qiye.

This shell-like treasure was the size of an adult’s thumb with three adjoined colors - neither gold, jade, or wood. Even the finest scholars would find it difficult to recognize the materials.

It was jumping up and down while trying to escape from Li Qiye’s fingers. He smiled and said at its struggle: “Since I’m your maker,

you should obey me.”

With that, supreme laws circled around his fingers and imprinted themselves into this treasure, giving it no room for resistance.

The treasure finally calmed down after the imprintation. It stopped moving and finally submitted.

Li Qiye smiled while looking at it: “If you have eighteen transformations, let’s call you the Ancestral Eighteen Explosions then.”

He didn’t care whether it agreed with the name or not before putting it away. Just like that, he had a treasure jewel with this name.

It belonged to the foreign dao category unlike life and true treasures. To a certain extent, it didn’t require a powerful cultivation. Its power depended on itself and because this one was made from an amazing material like the ancestral trees, it had an unbelievable advantage in this regard.

He took out another item and placed it on the table after putting this away. It was the yellow cloth again.

A female shadow condensed on the cloth. It was the girl that Li Qiye had always called a brat with an extremely ancient identity.

“Hey, were you dead or something? I yelled for so long and you didn’t answer at all.” The girl inside was miffed.

“What’s the hurry, you’ve been in there forever? You’re not a living person either, the passage of time does nothing to you.” Li Qiye said leisurely.

The girl has been anxious all this time since Li Qiye ignored her completely while refining his jewel.

“You...” She almost vomited blood from anger. If she could come out of the cloth, she would strangle him to death right now!

“You should be as calm as the water and unperturbed for all

eternities after being sealed for so long.” He teased.

The girl scowled since there was nothing she could do while being trapped in this cloth.

“Where is this place?” She eventually calmed down and asked.

“Northern Grand Sea, a vast aquatic region. We’re still in Mortal Emperor.” He said with a smile.

“Never heard of it.” She shook her head.

He chuckled: “It’s no surprise that you don’t know. It didn’t exist back in your era and you’re not all omniscient anyway.”

“You’re not omniscient either.” She became annoyed again.

“That’s definitely true.” He smiled: “For example, there are still a few things hidden from your era. I know that the world can be destroyed but certain items can still continue to exist.”

The girl became alert again with this topic.

He replied: “No need to be alarmed, such things are easy to guess. Plus, your identity isn’t hard to guess either since you can survive after the end of the ancient era.”

“So what? This doesn’t mean that you know it.” She said coldly.

“That’s fine. You should know by now that a character of my level has been searching through time for a long time now. I know many matters unbeknown to others.”

With that, he stared at the girl and asked slowly: “For example, in your epoch, what was the ultimate weapon? Where is it hidden? In other words, what is the item left behind from your epoch?!”

“I don’t know.” She denied instantly: “How could I know such an untouchable thing? I was only an insignificant character during that golden period.”

“An insignificant character?” Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh: “You still survived after the destruction of the world, how can you

be an insignificant character? You might have been cursed and trapped in this cloth, but you have never been a nobody.”

The girl didn’t want to say anything else because that would only reveal more information. This was someone capable of deriving even more clues from every little things.

“Okay, let’s move on from the boring stuff, why did you want to see me in the last couple of days?” He grinned.

The girl slightly opened her mouth but didn’t want to speak.

“Don’t worry, I’m a man of principle. Even if you have some kind of treasures here at the Grand Sea, I won’t take it all for myself. It’ll be a transaction of sorts for us.” He said during her moment of silence.

“How, how do you know?!” The girl became startled because this was a secret. Few during her epoch even knew about it so no one in this generation should know.

“Just a guess.” Li Qiye said with smile: “I have been to many places yet you had no reaction. But you became anxious the moment we got here. This showed that this place is special to you, something is calling for you here.”

“You!” The girl became surprised again. Only silence was the prudent move in this situation.

“Another item existing through the long years. This must be an amazing treasure, highly coveted by everyone.” He nonchalantly said.

She finally spoke: “Fine, how about this? Take me to a certain place and take an item out. It shall belong to me. In the future, I will pay you a handsome amount.”

“Is that so?” He said leisurely: “But I am someone who wants a lot, an unimaginable greed, you might say.”

“What do you want?” She said slowly: “Just name the price,

everything is possible.”

“No, you are wrong.” He shook his head: “The key point is what do you have? That’s the only thing you have to negotiate with me. I’m very picky, three or five incredible treasures alone aren’t enough.”

“Don’t try to name an exorbitant price.” She was very dissatisfied.

“Maybe what’s considered an exorbitant price to you is only a normal transaction to me. I have too many treasures to count Do you think that ordinary treasures, even those of the emperor level, can move me? Let’s talk about the top items from your epoch instead.” He casually said.

The girl became quiet again. The truth was that she had no advantages to speak of when negotiating with him since she needed his help at the moment.

# Chapter 1627: Transaction With The Yellow Cloth Girl

---

After a good while, the girl said slowly: “Don’t you want to fight to the end? Kill your way above the nine heavens and sweep through the emperors and gods? If you want to be the last man laughing, you need to have all the untouched treasures in this world or you won’t be able to go further.”

“You’re wrong about that.” Li Qiye smiled and said: “No point in having an abundance of resources. Even if you have more, at the end of the world, it will only lend you a bit of strength. The truth is that you can only rely on yourself in order to win. Personal strength is the greatest force at the end of the world.” He solemnly said.

“But you still need resources along the way?” The girl said: “How can your men contend against them without ample resources? How can you train your own legions? Why would people join your banner? I don’t need to explain these logics to someone who had lived for so long.”

She paused for a moment before continuing: “I can help you in this regards, giving you some things unavailable to others.”

“If you know how long I have lived for, why do you think I don’t have enough resources? Plus, it’s not like I haven’t been there before, I’m even more familiar to each blade of grass up there than you.” He smiled in response: “If you think you can give me some rare items, haha, fine, if you can give me something I don’t have already, not only will I help you in this matter, I will even assist you in escaping this cloth, for you to return to this world with your own body.”

“What do you want?” The girl became slightly moved and asked with a serious tone.

“It’s very simple. Give me one of the nine Grand Heavenly Treasures then I will use everything in my power to help you escape the cloth and rebuild your body. Success is assured as long as I make up my mind.”

“Of course, there are a few treasures I don’t need among the nine. For example, the Myriad Thoughts Pot. Even if you can get it, I don’t want it.” He grinned at this point: “And yes, there are a few you can’t get either like the Longevity Grass or the Void Gate. They can’t be in your possession.

“If I have the nine treasures, why would I need to make a deal with you right now?” She said with exasperation.

“That’s why there aren’t that many things I can’t get in this world. Even the top weapons in certain epochs are in my possession. Imperial weapons are just cabbages in my eyes.”

The girl in yellow fell into a second silence. It looked like a wily old fox like Li Qiye was her nemesis.

“Of course, it’s not like you don’t have a chance.” He smiled and said: “I can even help you come out in the future. When the time is right, rebuilding your body is fine too but I have a condition.”

“What is it?” She eventually asked after a brief lull, understanding that a free lunch wasn’t possible in this world. Li Qiye had all the initiatives.

“Very simple.” He said slowly: “I only want one thing after releasing you from this sorry state, your loyalty and service for this generation!”

“That’s impossible.” She coldly refused.

He smiled in response: “Nothing is impossible in this world. I’ve seen many amazing women in the world. It doesn’t matter how noble your origin might be, you are just a downtrodden phoenix right now, no, not even that.”

“You!” She would be vomiting blood right now from anger if it

was possible in her current state.

“I don’t care whether you are willing or not.” He continued: “This is ultimately up to you since it’s no big loss to me, only a contributor at most. I can even groom emperors so there’s no fear of not having new people.”

He stopped and smirked: “It’s not the same for you. I’m afraid there is no standing back up while being trapped in that cloth. Even if I was kind enough to release the cloth to the world, even if someone else were to pick it up, how many do you think can do the same as me, releasing and creating a new body for you?”

“Of course, you have plenty of time if you can withstand waiting till that day. Maybe it will be millions and millions of years later or a dozen epochs.” He was very pleased with his teasing.

She contemplated for a moment before finally answering: “Fine, I accept but don’t push it!” She still chose to compromise in the end.

Her origin was unbelievably noble but like he had said, she was nothing right now.

If she continued to refuse his offer, she would be trapped in the cloth forever. Even if she could wait until someone else finds the cloth, they wouldn’t be as capable as him. After careful consideration, she came up with this decision despite her unwillingness to serve him. This was the only way to have hope in the future.

The two finally into an agreement. She said: “Now, you have to help me get something back.”

“Don’t worry, I’m a man of my word since we’ll be a family then.” He smiled and said.

“Who is family with you!” The girl expressed her annoyance once more.

After the conclusion of the arrangement, the two decided to



leave. The matriarch told Li Qiye before the departure: “A second group of disciples from Soaring Immortal is entering the Grand Sea. They have sent many ancestors as well. I’m afraid even someone like Ancestor Long will be there too.”

“Let them come then.” Li Qiye leisurely said: “I actually want to see if those princes have actually escaped from the Immortal Confinement and just how strong they are.” He was amused with the development.

“They can actually escape from there? I heard that it was virtually impossible to escape alive. Many geniuses from that sect have entered but the only one who successfully left was Immortal Emperor Can Long during his youth.” She found this surprising.

“This prison is not a bad item at all. Immortal Emperor Fei expended great effort just to bring it to his sect. Those who can leave the prison are very powerful indeed.” He smiled.

Of course, regardless of how powerful they might be, they were only his prey.

“However, Gu Zun isn’t present. I used my divine intent to sweep through Heaven Suppression but he’s not there.” She said solemnly.

Despite her great power, she was very careful when dealing with someone as crafty as Gu Zun.

“He’s just testing the water using Soaring Immortal as a pawn. He’ll be hiding in the shadow to watch the fun.” Li Qiye expected this.

“He’ll never give up though and will eventually make a move. Given his personalities, it would be the regret of a lifetime to not personally kill me so he won’t miss that chance.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

“I’m just worried about his plans behind the scene.” She said.

“Don’t worry, doing that will only expose him. The guy is very

careful and won't do anything so carelessly. At best, he'll only bait others into action. I know Gu Zun too well." Having said that, Li Qiye stared towards the horizon and chuckled: "I'm interested to see his killing move. Who knows how much work he has put in for revenge? If his ace move isn't something amazing, then it will be too disappointing. An eonic genius has to be better than that."

# Chapter 1628: Pursuit

---

He entered the vast sea in this region after leaving the Yu mansion to begin his survey.

In fact, he had done such a task a long time ago since he couldn't just find a random place to build Heaven Suppression. He understood after the agreement with the girl that he had missed a few things back then. Some little crevices and clues still eluded him.

That's why he became even more meticulous this time around with all the minute details in this region. It became much easier with greater productivity due to his prior experience.

The little details found this time made him find out that there were indeed some special matters going on in the Grand Sea for the treasure hunt this time with the girl in the yellow cloth.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” A loud blast occurred while he was exploring this oceanic region. A giant dragon suddenly flew to the sky with lightning speed. Ordinary eyes couldn't see it clearly at all.

This was a golden dragon. However, its body wasn't covered with a radiating glow, only a faint one. Nevertheless, it could still be considered a golden dragon. Another distinguishing factor was that it had [four claws instead of five](#).

Nevertheless, it still emitted a terrible draconic aura just like a typhoon. This could instantly destroy someone with its palpable presence.

The dragon had wounds everywhere with many broken scales. There was a young man with dragon horns on his head lying on the dragon's back. He was also grievously injured with wounds so deep that the bones were visible.

He gripped the golden dragon's horns tightly while drenched in

blood. The dragon ran away with him using all of its might.

Li Qiye was surprised to see the youth as well since he met him earlier back at the twelve scales.

On that day, Hai Lin was aggressive and fierce, a complete opposite of his current state with only one breath remaining.

“Boom!” The sky shook and another youth came over. A supreme grand path was paved beneath his feet. His presence was incredible and instantly suppressed the location. Even the myriad dao screamed in response with futility.

“Long Aotian.” Li Qiye chuckled at the newcomer. Even though he had never seen the youth before, the guy’s aura made it too obvious.

That’s right, Long Aotian was chasing Hai Lin who only made it out due to the golden dragon’s effort.

“Hai Lin, I will slay you even if you run to the end of the world. I will kill all of you sea demons and erase your race from the Grand Sea. No one will be able to protect you!” Aotian’s voice echoed across the region.

Hai Lin didn’t respond and ordered the dragon to run in hope of losing Aotian.

So it turned out that with the old guides from Heaven Suppression, Aotian and the other members from his sect were able to sweep through the demon survivors hiding in the depth of the sea outside of Hai Lin.

Aotian was a guest at Mu Zhuo’s Demonic City and wanted to discuss the dao with others. However, in just two days, he got news about Hai Lin so he immediately gave chase.

He was very unhappy about not being able to kill Hai Lin despite defeating him several times. In his eyes, anyone who opposed him must die without exception!

“Rawrrr!” The golden dragon crazily roared. The golden glow on its body exploded and gave it an explosive burst. Its speed reached the limit in order to escape.

It was burning its own longevity blood in order to take Hai Lin away!

Hai Lin was still no match for Aotian this time around. A senior in the form of this golden dragon had to save his life but this still wasn't enough to fight against Aotian. The dragon was still injured and had to run away with Hai Lin.

It needed to take Hai Lin to a safe place regardless of the price. Hai Lin was still young so he played a pivotal position for the sea monsters. If he could survive, their race could still pass down. However, if he were to die, they would only linger on for a while longer before total annihilation. The other scenario was being lowered down to being an insignificant race.

“Keep on running, you're not escaping from my grasp.” Aotian wasn't surprised at this speed at all. An immortal light exuded from his body as if he was ascending with an extraordinary aura. A remnant ray and many shadows were left on his path.

He looked quite slow to the point of stagnating but his speed was actually peerless. He made time slow down by half a beat.

In terms of speed, a grand completion Soaring Immortal Physique was virtually matchless. It wasn't hard for him to catch up to this four-clawed dragon.

Alas, he took his time with this pursuit because he wanted to find their lair in order to kill all the sea demons.

Li Qiye who was on his own mission chuckled and casually gave chase.

Aotian's eyes suddenly turned cold and slightly moved towards Li Qiye's direction after spotting him. However, he didn't say anything and continued to chase after Hai Lin with great

confidence.

He was still as confident as ever even with Li Qiye after him. There was no sign of caution or preparing for the enemy. This showed his confidence and fearlessness even against a foe as powerful as Fiercest!

Thus, the golden dragon was running for its life while carrying Hai Lin with Long Aotian right behind them with the right distance. Li Qiye was also following along to observe.

In fact, when they crossed through this sea region, one would see that there was another army behind them. The majority consisted of demons from the Mu Zhuo's Demonic City. The leader was the Golden Dragon Prince.

So it turned out that this sect was also helping Aotian to kill the sea monsters. Even though they were demons, closely related to sea monsters; the prince was still sworn-brother with Aotian. The prince chose to ignore the ties so he didn't mind helping Aotian!

The chase created quite a spectacle and they crossed through several regions. This attracted the attention of the nearby inhabitants.

In a short time, many experts from the sect followed along, including many big shots from the great powers.

"It's Hai Lin again!" Some people said with admiration: "The boy is an unkillable cockroach, escaping time and time again, what a miracle."

"Hai Lin has a lot of potential on top of having a good cultivation already. His bloodline is also prestigious, that's why he's so important to the sea monsters. Many powerful existences were willing to be his dao protectors, that's why he managed to escape from Aotian so many times." A demon monarch commented.

He ended up becoming gloomy. Aotian almost killed all the sea monsters and demons in this place. Only Hai Lin's group still dared

to oppose him, the other demon powers have already started running for their lives.

1. Five claws represent the imperial family, stronger

# Chapter 1629: Four Clawed Dragon

---

No comments were given about the chase and no one wanted to help Hai Lin, not even the other demons present.

Soaring Immortal was in complete control at the moment and Aotian was considered invincible. Who would dare to fight against Soaring Immortal and Aotian for Hai Lin's sake?

"That's a golden dragon. Does the world really have such an immortal beast?" A few juniors stared in awe at the escaping beast carrying Hai Lin. Some daydreamed about having one as well.

People have always talked about dragons and phoenixes but they also knew that these creatures didn't exist. At the very least, no one has seen them before.

The ones with these names currently living in this world only had a very thin bloodline from these creatures. They were flood-dragons and [luans](#), not actual immortal beasts.

The sight of this particular golden dragon at this moment made many people think that the real immortal beasts could be in this world.

"Hai Lin is something else, to even have a golden dragon like this, no wonder why he can escape from Aotian's grasp. With such powerful creatures protecting him, he could have become emperor if it wasn't for Aotian." Another expert said with envy.

"This golden dragon is his senior with a prestigious position and a noble bloodline." A demon ancestor said with emotions: "This golden dragon can definitely assail an emperor yet it is still not enough to face Aotian."

While people were in awe of the dragon, Li Qiye was amused at their opinion. The world had many speculations and explanations regarding dragons but they were mainly misinformed.

The dragon race was both a vast yet narrow topic. When people



talked about dragons, even flood-dragons were considered ordinary dragons. Some with shallow knowledge even considered dao serpents to be dragons.

But in the eyes of real dragons, only those with the real ancient bloodline of the divine beast were considered dragons. This bloodline must be pure as well, not the thin one coursing through the veins of the many bastards.

Because of this, real dragons looked down on the serpents and flood-dragons that claimed to be part of their race. They considered them to be mere insects.

Alas, True Dragons were exceedingly rare even above the nine heavens. The ones with fully matured bloodline could be counted with one's fingers.

Putting that aside, dragons still had a very wide definition. Normally, one could be a dragon with enough inherited blood of a True Dragon. Of course, derision and scorn would come from creatures with thin bloodline claiming to be dragons.

As for this golden dragon ahead, it had one-third of a True Dragon Bloodline. This was the reason why its body was so resplendent and its draconic aura powerful.

A matured Golden Dragon can indeed assail an emperor. However, it still wasn't a True Dragon, only a side branch. Its blood was still tainted by the flood-dragon race. Because of this, its bloodline and power were no match for a True Dragon.

This dragon's bloodline wasn't completely pure and it hasn't fully matured just yet. This was the reason why its scales weren't golden, only the shade. It was also why it only had four claws instead of five.

If the situation was different, that this dragon had five claws and golden scales, then it would be beating Long Aotian to death right now.

“Look, it’s Fiercest!” The spectators watching the chase finally noticed Li Qiye in the distant sky.

“What is going on? Is Fiercest aiming for Long Aotian?” One speculated.

“That’s possible. Two days ago, Aotian challenged Fiercest so given his unbridled personality, it would be strange if he wasn’t aiming for Aotian.” One person answered.

“Aotian clearly knows that he’s being watched by Fiercest but he is still as unperturbed as ever while Fiercest is publicly following him. These two are really too aggressive and not afraid of anyone.” Even a big shot from the last generation had to comment.

Many experts were watching with bated breath. They simply wanted to see whether these two would start fighting or not. No one cared whether Hai Lin could get away or not any longer.

Some found Aotian’s ferocity to be admirable.

“That’s an imperial prince for you, the successor of Soaring Immortal. Only him among the young generation would dare to provoke Fiercest.” Even those who hated him had to admit.

The fleeing dragon became tired after dashing through several regions and began to slow down. Aotian still took his time following right behind him.

“Hai Lin, you won’t get away. Just surrender and submit and I shall benevolently spare you.” Aotian calmly spoke with complete confidence.

Hai Lin didn’t bother answer. He didn’t groan at all despite his grievous injuries and bit his teeth to withstand the pain.

People became more involved. What would be Hai Lin’s ultimate fate? Would he surrender or be unyielding till death?

“Rawr!” The dragon roared and suddenly went full steam ahead.

At this time, mountain ranges emerged on the ocean. They were

majestic and shielded with clouds and mists. A pure aura emanated from this mountain range, letting others know just how sacred it was.

“Mount Qingcheng!” Someone shouted after seeing the majestic mountain.

Another expert stated: “Does Hai Lin want to ask Ding Yuanhou for help?”

In a short time, people glanced at each other. One demon monarch wondered with anxiety: “Will Mount Qingcheng protect Hai Lin and oppose Soaring Immortal?”

As members of the demon race, they wanted to see the sect protect Hai Lin. There was an aspiration for solidarity in order to oppose Soaring Immortal and Long Aotian. Otherwise, the demons here in the Grand Sea could be slaughtered.

Despite the common sentiment, not many lineages were willing to take the initiative to save Hai Lin. After all, being the first mean taking a more precarious situation, risking a higher chance of being destroyed.

One demon felt guilty and said: “I wonder if Yuanhou is strong enough to stop Aotian.”

“Maybe, Yuanhou is a peerless Godking, an unparalleled genius from the last generation. He’s on the same level as Ye Jiuzhou of Heaven Suppression!” One demon monarch yearned for such a moment.

Ding Yuanhou was a demon with amazing achievements. He had left his shadow on the tenth step of the twelve scales, on the same level as Ye Jiuzhou. Later on, he rarely showed his face or asked about worldly matters. Nevertheless, he was still the strongest demon monarch in the mind of his race. Meanwhile, Mount Qingcheng itself was mighty. Thus, no sects or experts dared to take them lightly.

“Rawr!” The dragon roared and jumped into the city. Next, an alarm resounded across Mount Qingcheng. The entire sect became vigilant while the disciples rushed to their post and adorned their armors and weapons!

“Is Mount Qingcheng actually protecting Hai Lin?” The alarms made someone have this thought.

“Whoosh!” Scintillating defensive barriers in the form of heavenly dao waterfalls protected the city.

At this time, the experts there quickly took Hai Lin down from the dragon and began to cure him. The other disciples were ready for a battle.

Aotian was also outside and stared at the erecting barriers with a smirk.

“Mount Qingcheng really wants to fight Aotian? Is Hai Lin really worth it?” Someone skeptically said.

“I heard Mount Qingcheng has a great relationship with the sea monsters. Maybe they will do save Hai Lin.” An older demon monarch said.

The old man was right about the sect having strong ties with Hai Lin. However, he wouldn’t have come here for help unless there was no other way because this would bring the fire of war here. Alas, there was no other choice for him. Their hideout had been found by Soaring Immortal so they had to come here for help.

The spectators were watching intensely. They wondered if the sect would break all pretense with Aotian for Hai Lin’s sake.

1. luan is a subset of phoenixes/birds, a mythical bird

# Chapter 1630: Mount Qingcheng

---

Long Aotian stood outside of Qingcheng with an oppressive aura capable of crushing the sect completely. It was as if nothing could hinder his steps.

“Sect Master of Qingcheng, what is your decision?” Aotian spoke calmly in the air. Each word rang sonorously like a gong in everyone’s mind, instilling fear into them.

“Greetings, Imperial Prince Long, the pleasure is mine. Please advise.” The sect master had to step out and [cupped his fist together](#).

“I have no advice to give, my demand is very simple. Hand over Hai Lin and the four-clawed dragon then I’ll leave immediately without troubling your sect.”

No one found such aggressive words out of place. They felt like Aotian should speak in such an imperious manner.

The crowd knew that it was unwise to become enemy with Aotian just for Hai Lin’s sake. Anyone else should know the right choice easily.

The sect master glanced at Hai Lin who was being healed and said with a deep tone: “Imperial prince, Young Noble Hai Lin has deep ties with our sect. We don’t dare to comment on your grievances but we must save him. You are a benevolent person, how about come back later to deal with him after his wounds are healed?”

The sect master’s words were craftily chosen even against an overwhelming force. His opponent would find it difficult to refute or take action.

“I’m afraid it’s not up to your sect at all.” Aotian said with a sneer.

Mount Qingcheng was a very powerful sect in the Grand Sea. Even though it wasn’t an imperial lineage, it still had a peerless

Godking like Ding Yuanhou. Not too many would dare to act blazently against this sect. But Aotian didn't place them in his eyes at all. Even the disciples from Qingcheng didn't dare to retort. They knew just how powerful their foe was and his terrible lineage.

“Imperial prince, leave a way out. Wait until Hai Lin is cured before trying to finish it.”

“No.” Aotian refused instantly in a cold manner: “Sect master, you only have two choices. Either hand the two of them over or wait for sect destruction!”

Many people felt suffocated after this declaration. They knew that he wasn't all talk. With his power on top of his sect, it was absolutely possible.

Everyone glanced over at the sect master and wondered what he would choose. They understood that opposing Soaring Immortal was unwise but some still had hopes about someone standing up against that sect. After all, ever since their arrival, they have been too aggressive. Perhaps their goal was to even rule the entire Grand Sea eventually. Many didn't wish to see this.

The sect master glanced at the immobilized Hai Lin again. In the end, he sighed and said: “Imperial prince, if you want his life, our sect will have to take you on. He is our guest so we shall protect him.”

The experts in the vicinity were shocked to hear this. Many became excited about this non-imperial sect daring to stand up against Long Aotian!

“Very well, impressive decisiveness. Then I'll see how long your sect can hold out!” Aotian laughed and instantly stomped down on the sect.

“Rumble!” The entire mountain range shook before this stomp. It resembled a tiny boat ravaged by the torrential sea that could go

down at any moment.

The experts here became anxious at the impending doom.

“Time for battle, defend your positions!” The sect master shouted with a grave expression.

The moment he finished giving the order, their defensive perimeter was broken by Long Aotian. Bright pieces of light faltered everywhere!

This barrier has been built for many generations and empowered by a large quantity of refined jades but it didn’t manage to last long at all against Aotian.

“Charge!” The experts and disciples here roared for battle. They unsheathed their weapons and channeled their blood energy, pointing their rage at Aotian.

“Pluff!” Aotian instantly jumped into the sect with agility beyond comprehension. One could only see his fleeting figure.

“Pluff!” Next, one pillar of blood gushed after another. The blood energy exuded from the disciples here were suddenly extinguished.

“Bang, bang, bang!” The sound of head meeting the ground finally came about.

The scene of the guards dying was too shocking. Blood gushed out of their severed neck like the spring and turned into a rain of bloody flowers. In the end, these experts fell onto the ground. Their head still had some consciousness left and could see their own headless body!

Aotian had speed virtually too fast to discern. In the blink of an eye, the experts here were decapitated without a chance to fight back.

“So weak yet still dare to oppose me?” He sneered proudly.

This scene scared many spectators. This great speed allowed him to be a reaper. Even stronger people would lose their head against

such speed.

Mount Qingcheng became defenseless after this quick massacre to the dismay of the pale sect master. Even so many experts failed to stop a single move from Long Aotian. The guy was indeed unstoppable!

Long Aotian stared at the sect master and smiled: “Sect master, this is all your sect can do? That’s too disappointing then. You all must really look down on me to oppose me with such meager power.”

“Prepare the formation.” The sect master and seventeen other experts from his same generation instantly lined up. The entire mountain lit up with rays of light.

“Whoosh!” Under the ultimate light of this formation, the entire mountain seemed like a starry ocean with floating stars and galaxies.

The great formation presided over the mountain range like the Big Dipper. Its majestic aura emanated and amplified the mountain’s presence as well.

Many experts suddenly became excited. The killing earlier drowned them in despair but this formation, on the other hand, showed them a sliver of hope!

“Big Dipper’s Eighteen Children. This is Mount Qingcheng’s ultimate move!” One expert that knew about the sect had to say: “They’re the strongest disciples under Ding Yuanhou who have learned all of his skills.”

Long Aotian didn’t give a damn. He laughed in response: “This formation might be derived from an ancient holy formation but your sect’s version has too many flaws. It won’t be able to block a single blow.”

The experts shuddered after hearing this. People in the Grand Sea were aware that this formation was exceedingly powerful,



especially when the eighteen children were performing it themselves. But now, Aotian said that it wouldn't amount to anything. Just how powerful was he?

Mount Qingcheng didn't respond to this arrogance. The entire sect was under the protection of this supreme formation in total tranquility.

1. Just some common courteous greetings that don't flow as well in English between two sides

# Chapter 1631: Ding Yuanhou

---

Aotian stepped into the Big Dipper formation with an arrogant smile. He didn't bother putting on guard at all as if merely strolling through an empty courtyard. This formation seemed to be nothing in his eyes.

“Whoosh!” Starry shots rained down, causing the sky to shake the moment he stepped inside. Each of these rays could penetrate the earth itself.

He merely glanced at the sharp rays; one of them was aiming straight for his head. He still didn't move at all as if he didn't take note of it.

Many experts held their breath to see his lack of reaction. When this ray touched his hair, he finally moved.

“Pluff!” The ray failed even though it was a split hair away. Aotian easily avoided it.

The experts didn't see how he dodged it at all. It was as if he has been standing still the whole time.

This ray instantly turned around and went for his chest instead as the new target. Aotian still easily waited and evaded it in the same flashy manner.

“Buzz!” The formation finally erupted with fury and shot out countless rays in a complex manner, weaving a net in the sky. Anyone would be turned into a sieve instantly.

Alas, in face of this onslaught, Aotian still stood there without moving. The countless rays couldn't even touch the corner of his sleeve.

It wasn't due to the formation lacking power and speed. Aotian was simply too fast with a virtually matchless agility. It was as if each of these connecting rays was moving at a snail pace.

People gasped after seeing this, completely frightened by his incredible speed. They thought that they wouldn't even have the chance to react against him in a fight before being decapitated.

“Too slow and weak.” Aotian shook his head with disdain: “Not even as fast as a snail.”

The sect master and the others were vexed to hear this but there was nothing they could do. Their formation has been exerted to the limit yet it still couldn't do anything to Aotian. It was no wonder why he was mocking them.

“Break!” Aotian instantly took action and jumped into the most dangerous location in the formation.

“Bang!” In the blink of an eye, space and time seemed to be shattered completely. All the images here seemed to have stopped, allowing everyone to see all the small details.

In this moment, Aotian devastated for the formation with different moves before breaking through it completely. The crowd could see the sect masters and his peers desperately dodging but they were too slow compared to Aotian. Next, Aotian raised his finger for the finisher.

He took his time with this final technique, allowing the crowd to clearly see his move. In fact, it had surpassed the temporal limitation which was why it looked so slow!

The experts nearby were watching the eighteen [children](#) on the verge of dying to this finger strike. The eighteen themselves had their eyes wide open. They could see the disaster coming as well with the finger strikes penetrating their skull.

But they could only watch helplessly, unable to withstand the strike.

“Boom!” The entire mountain shook as if it was caving down but it still didn't collapse entirely.

In this blink of an eye, time passed quickly again and was

restored to its initial form. It became a flowing stream again just like normal.

People focused and could see that the eighteen children were still alive. Someone else had blocked the finger strike for them.

It was a scholarly old man with a green robe and a pure aura. The eighteen children were pulled back from the brink of death. They calmed down and quickly called out: “Master.”

“Ding Yuanhou, peerless Godking of the Grand Sea!” A paragon from the last generation shouted after seeing this old man.

“Ding Yuanhou, the most amazing demon genius of the Grand Sea during the Difficult Dao Era!” Even those who had never seen him before have heard of his fame.

He had exceedingly high comprehension during his youth, allowing him to reach the tenth step at Discover just like Ye Jiuzhou.

“Imperial Prince, please calm down.” Yuanhou stepped out and said.

He didn’t have an oppressive aura since he was hiding his energy. There was a hard-to-describe scholarly and elegant manner about him, just like an intellectual. He was a remedy for the mind, it was as if with him around, everything would be fine even if the sky was collapsing.

“Calm down?” Aotian laughed: “That’s not hard, Ding Yuanhou. Hand over Hai Lin and the dragon then I can spare your mountain for its insolence.”

This answer was beyond arrogance. He simply didn’t care for the rest of the world. Many became annoyed at this response but they understood that he was qualified to utter this statement.

Yuanhou shook his head in response: “Imperial Prince, he is closely related to us. How about you go easy on him just this once?”

People became surprised and wondered about this particular relationship. Even Yuanhou was protecting him. It looked like Hai Lin must be closely related to the sect in order to drag them down the mud like this.

“Ding Yuanhou, I’m afraid I can’t give you any face right now.” Aotian shook his head in response: “I would do so if it was anyone else but not Hai Lin, he has opposed me time and time again. If I choose to spare him right now, it would be an unreasonable amount of restraint.”

Yuanhou didn’t become angry. He was still as composed as ever: “If you won’t compromise, then please excuse us.”

From beginning to end, Yuanhou’s tone was just right without any sign of anger.

“Yuanhou, you are indeed capable but you have only reached the Legendary Godking realm, no match against me!” Aotian laughed loudly.

Everyone was surprised at this revelation. The uninformed didn’t know anything about this particular realm. Only the big shots from the previous generation were aware.

“That’s incredible. Ding Yuanhou is actually a Legendary Godking now!” An older Godking was shocked: “That’s the number one genius of the demons for you.”

“Imperial prince, you are too kind. My dao is shallow with countless flaws. I only barely saw an opening, can’t be considered a Legendary Godking. Compared to Brother Ye who is a real Legendary Godking, I’m far too lacking.” Yuanhou answered in a cool manner.

He wasn’t being overly humble since he had only been able to comprehend this realm in the last several years. It was indeed true that this was only the beginning. In fact, this wasn’t easy for him at all. Mount Qingcheng wasn’t an imperial lineage. Thus, his

grand dao was lacking in this sense so he didn't consider himself a Legendary Godking.

Nevertheless, people were still astonished all the same. Yuanhou was born in the Difficult Dao Era on top of being from a weaker sect. This achievement was already incredible enough. One could even say that if he was born in a prosperous era, he could have been an Emperor Assailant right now

1. I know that children is such a strange translation here, but that's just literal. Daoist would be fine as a translation term as well

# Chapter 1632: Long Aotians Confidence

---

“I don’t care if you are a Legendary Godking or not.” Aotian chortled: “Since your mountain dares to protect Hai Lin, I, Long Aotian, shall annihilate you all.”

“If that’s the case, then I shall try my best to try against your imperial arts.” Yuanhou calmly replied.

With that, he soared into the sky with just one step. While surrounded by the shining stars, he gestured and said: “Imperial prince, go.”

At their level, if they were to go all out, a sect like Qingcheng wouldn’t be able to withstand their power and would be turned to ashes immediately.

Aotian stared at Yuanhou and instantly flashed into the sky as well. He laughed and said: “Yuanhou, take out your weapons. I will let you die with peace.”

“I have no worthy weapon to show off so I will only be using my bare hands.” Yuanhou responded.

It was a very calculated move. Even if he took out a weapon, he wouldn’t gain any advantage since his foe was Long Aotian from Soaring Immortal. The guy had no lack of Immortal Emperor True Treasures. Aotian could just take out a random true treasure and that would be more than enough to deal with him. If it was a no-weapon contest, then he would actually have a chance.

“Using an imperial weapon would look like I’m bullying your little sect.” Aotian laughed: “Fine, Ding Yuanhou, I will go barehand with you for a few rounds so that you will be utterly convinced with your defeat!”

“Go for it.” Yuanhou didn’t back down and instantly grasped the celestials.

With loud explosions and his finger pointing, these large stars

instantly rushed for Aotian from all directions and exploded on contact.

“Boom!” The exploding stars were resplendent. Even the sun in the sky paled in comparison.

After the stars shattered and the beautiful lights disappeared, Aotian was still standing there. He was protected by the deities and none of the explosions could touch him.

“Take this.” Aotian shouted and unleashed a draconic punch like a true dragon or a phoenix soaring to the sky. It dragged out the galaxies and shattered the fabric of time.

A dragon roar emanated from this tyrannical fist. Yuanhou instantly raised both hands to create a long string of yin and yang laws that eventually turned into a tsunami to drown Aotian’s fist!

“Boom!” The draconic fist slammed into the dao tsunami with a deafening blast. An unstoppable power erupted and spread at an amazing speed. The debris in this area all turned to nothingness.

Even though the tsunami was destroyed, Yuanhou still managed to stop Long Aotian’s fist by dispelling all of its energy.

“Have another!” Aotian pushed the sky back with another instantaneous palm strike. The six dao and reincarnation cycle were annihilated with his swift change from fist to palm. It was a flawless transformation.

This sky-pushing palm had an undodgeable speed. Even someone like Yuanhou couldn’t avoid this particular attack since he wasn’t faster than it.

He roared and turned into a giant bull. Its cry could shatter the stars with hooves that could crush the galaxies and a pair of earth-piercing horns.

“Boom!” The horns stopped the palm attack but Yuanhou in his bull form still took several strides backward and shattered the stars.



People were shocked to see Aotian forcing Yuanhou to assume his true form after just several exchanges. Aotian was simply too strong.

“Rawr!” While seeing that Yuanhou was at a disadvantage, the golden dragon jumped into the sky to stop Aotian’s retreat path.

The bull and dragon surrounded Aotian in just a short moment. Yuanhou was powerful but he was still no match for Aotian. Aotian was young and vigorous on top of having all of his innate advantages. Yuanhou’s initial constitution and background were not a match against Aotian.

If Yuanhou was from an imperial lineage, perhaps there was a chance for him in a no-weapon contest. Alas, this was not the case.

“Fine, I’ll deal with both of you together then.” Aotian wasn’t afraid at all by this pincer attack. He laughed with great confidence and didn’t bother using an imperial weapon at all.

Even those who viewed him as an enemy felt some admiration towards his great confidence.

“Rawr, Moo!” The two beasts unleashed their devastating attacks towards Aotian at the same time.

“Bring it.” Aotian’s palms created an imperial law with a massive energy source like a deity. It swept through all evils easily.

The three fought against each other and robbed the light of the sky. Not just anyone could watch this level of a fight, only those at the paragon level could understand it.

The combined effort from the two beasts didn’t yield any result. Aotian was still leisure as ever while smoothly revealing his moves.

Even Godkings were shaken while watching this battle. As for the weaker crowd, they couldn’t look at what was happening above. Even if their seniors were to bring them up there, they wouldn’t have been able to understand the battle’s amazing profundities.

“Rumble!” During this moment, blaring noises came with a cavalry from the horizon. It rushed towards Mount Qingcheng and blocked off the entrance.

“Mu Zhuo’s Demonic City!” The cultivators who have been watching the mountain range was shocked to see this cavalry.

“The Golden Dragon Prince is leading the troops himself.” One expert murmured.

The prince walked forward with cold, sweeping eyes on top of a brutal aura. His immense vitality was raging as if a golden dragon was wishing to come out of his body.

He was very powerful at the Heavenly God realm on the path of the heavens. Only someone like him was qualified to be sworn brother with Long Aotian.

In the past, he had the confidence to reach the Heaven’s Will. Alas, once Long Aotian came out, he gave up this thought and decided to work under Aotian.

The prince stared at the recovering Hai Lin before coldly speaking to the sect master: “Sect masters, smart people know when to give up. Hand over Hai Lin in order to avoid wails of lamentation and the fire of war destroying your sect!”

This was about the right attitude for someone as powerful at him. His words still enraged the demons in the crowd. Some demon monarchs even scowled in response.

Everyone knew that the demonic city was one of the largest demon lineages in the Grand Sea. Meanwhile, Soaring Immortal was slaughtering the demons and sea monsters. Not only did the demonic city ignored the plight of their kins, they even assisted Soaring Immortal in the hunt. Such actions made many demons furious.

The sect master shook his head and said: “Golden Dragon City Lord, I’m afraid I can’t obey. Nephew Hai Lin shall be protected by

us.”

Many secretly gave the sect master an approving thumbs-up after seeing his attitude. This was heroic and loyal enough of them to protect Hai Lin against such pressure.

“Sect master, do reconsider.” The prince snorted: “Nothing good will come from opposing Imperial Prince Long and Soaring Immortal. The prince is already invincible even before becoming an emperor. Once he ascends, he’ll illuminate the world for an eternity. It doesn’t matter what backing you think you have, you are simply overestimating yourself. Provoking a future Immortal Emperor is suicidal!”

The Golden Dragon Prince wasn’t only threatening Mount Qingcheng. He was also building the momentum for Long Aotian and declaring his future ascendancy to the rest of the world.

This might not be a popular opinion but no one dared to vocally object.

“Hahaha!” While the prince was lauding Aotian’s achievements, a rambunctious laughter resounded.

It wouldn’t be so conspicuous at any other moment but the timing made it very ear-piercing. It was clearly mocking the Golden Dragon Prince and Long Aotian.

# Chapter 1633: Golden Dragon Prince

---

Such annoying laughter shocked the crowd. Aotian was too influential at this moment. Who would dare to mock him and the Golden Dragon Prince?

People quickly turned back and saw that it came from no one but Fiercest standing in the distant with a relaxed pose.

“That’s Fiercest.” The spectators were astonished to see Fiercest hovering in the sky while calmly watching everything.

They found that his boisterous laughter was completely understandable. In their eyes, he was the only qualified challenger and the only real threat for Aotian.

The Golden Dragon Prince looked over as well and turned cold. He had heard of the guy’s notoriety and knew that he wasn’t easy to mess with.

The prince scowled to show his dissatisfaction but he didn’t dare to retort either. He was an amazing genius but going against Fiercest was not on his agenda.

The experts nearby glanced at each other after seeing this. That’s Fiercest for you. Even the extremely arrogant prince didn’t dare to provoke him.

“An insect claims to be a [golden dragon](#)? A mortal wishing to be the high heaven’s child?” Li Qiye said flatly after hearing the scowl.

Li Qiye was only following along to see Aotian’s bloodline for a bit and see if it had undergone any transformation. After a careful observation, he found that there was no problem with it.

Of course, he didn’t really care for the guy and saw no point in doing anything now. In his eyes, Aotian was no different from a dead man. It was only a matter of time.

“You!” The prince angrily glared at Li Qiye and couldn’t help from blurting: “Li Qiye, you are too arrogant!”

He naturally couldn’t endure this indignation from being publicly shamed in this manner thus he still replied even though it was Fiercest.

“I’ve always been arrogant like this, you found out just now?” Li Qiye said leisurely: “Just remember, make sure to calm down on your boasting. No one will be emperor but me in this generation.”

“Damn!” Some of the spectators secretly applauded.

Everyone knew that Aotian wanted the Heaven’s Will. Fiercest’s comment right now simply didn’t give the Golden Dragon Prince nor Aotian any face.

“Fellow Daoist Li, your words are too smug.” Even Aotian who was fighting against Yuanhou and the dragon in the sky had to shout.

Li Qiye replied right away: “I’m merely stating the truth.”

The impressed crowd glanced at each other and thought that this was truly Fiercest’s style. He was still as domineering as ever even before Aotian. This lawless man didn’t care for anyone. Others were just dogs and cats in his eyes.

“That’s Fiercest for you. The time and place don’t matter to him at all.” People were utterly convinced by his style.

Golden Dragon Prince was a bit restless and also wanted to win back some face for Aotian. He snorted and said loudly: “Li Qiye, I know you are strong but there is still a way for you to go before competing with Imperial Prince Long for the Heaven’s Will.”

Li Qiye simply smiled and ignored this provocation. Being treated with such contempt instead of a verbal quip only further infuriated the prince. It was much more humiliating in this manner.

“Li Qiye, do you dare to block my bow?” The golden prince

became hot-headed and challenged Li Qiye.

Normally, he wouldn't take such a risk but he couldn't endure this anger at this moment. Li Qiye ignored him and stood still as if he wasn't part of this world and that he was the chess player while everything else were mere pawns.

The lack of response made it intolerable for the prince. It was more unbearable than if the guy was putting him down. It seemed as if Li Qiye was an elephant treating the prince like an ant. Would the elephant care if the ant was screaming?

Thus, the prince felt his blood boiling. He wielded his bow and shouted: "Li Qiye, don't tell me you don't have the courage to take one strike?!"

This longbow made of intertwining vines was as green as jade, beautiful and enchanting. It exuded a vibrant presence as if its arrow could travel through the ages.

"A bow left behind by a Heavenly Demon!" An ancestor blurted out with astonishment.

This was a destructive weapon left behind by the matriarch from the Mu Zhuo's Demonic City.

At this time, Li Qiye slowly turned to look at the prince and said flatly: "Take one strike? What's hard about it? Go ahead, I'll give you a chance."

The prince nearly vomited blood from anger due to Li Qiye's nonchalant attitude. Even though he wasn't a match for a supreme genius like Long Aotian, he was still among the top of the young generation at the Grand Sea. Even the older generation wouldn't treat him lightly but now, Fiercest's attitude towards him was all too humiliating.

"Very well, I'll see how strong you are!" The prince roared while blinded by fury.

"Xsh!" He pulled back the string and gathered the momentum.

The bow was full of power as if its user was channeling the power of the world itself!

“Rawr!” Once the string was pulled back all the way, a dragon roar suddenly resounded. A totem of a golden dragon appeared behind the prince and seemingly took over his body. The aura of man and dragon using together surged and transformed him.

There was a reason why people called him the Golden Dragon Prince. His bloodline was precious with this type of totem. When it appeared, it would grant him an explosive power.

The bow also changed color and became resplendent with the emergence of a golden arrow.

“Whoosh!” The arrow finally rushed out with an incredible speed, capable of shooting down the sun in the sky.

It instantly fixated onto Li Qiye. It wouldn’t matter where he ran, he wouldn’t be able to escape this arrow. The terrifying part was its incomparable sharpness, capable of piercing through everything. Even the best armors and protection artifacts wouldn’t be able to stop it.

A bow left behind by a Heavenly Demon and used by an expert at the Heavenly God level had palpable power. God-Monarchs would fall prey to it.

“Boom!” Contrary to everyone’s expectation, Fiercest didn’t bother evading the shot with his amazing speed.

In the blink of an eye, time seemed to have been frozen. One could see Fiercest reaching out with one finger and touched the arrow.

A loud explosion occurred when the two entities collided. The arrow immediately shattered into golden powders that scattered everywhere.

This ferocious attack from the prince was dispelled so easily by Fiercest to the astonishment of the crowd. The prince was aghast

as well. His mind became empty as he instinctively took one step back!

1. The prince in Golden Dragon Prince consists of the character Heaven and Child. Just another word for emperor/prince but Li Qiye is using the literal meaning for his verbal retort



# Chapter 1634: No One Can Stop Me From Killing

---

“What can one arrow do?” Li Qiye spoke during the prince’s bewilderment. In the blink of an eye, Li Qiye was already standing in front of him as if he had been there the entire time.

The prince turned pale. A Heavenly God like him didn’t notice Li Qiye’s shift of position at all. This was quite frightening to him since an enemy like this could easily take his life.

The startled prince instantly retreated in order to maintain a safe distance with Li Qiye. However, with a strange noise, the space he was retreating to suddenly turned into a quagmire, trapping him within. This made him countless times slower; each action was at a snail’s pace.

“Buzz.” As he was struggling within, the space transformed into a prison and rendered him immobile.

“You are too careless. Even if you are at the Heavenly God level, you still can’t do anything before me, no different from an insect.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

“Boom!” The stars in the sky were crushed as Long Aotian broke away from the dragon and bull. He rushed forward and shouted: “Brother, I got you!”

He instantly appeared in front of Li Qiye and unleashed a blow capable of annihilating the world and the deities with the intent of pushing his foe back.

His speed was truly something else since he only needed one step to make it back from the sky in order to save the prince. His abilities were virtually unmatched in this generation.

“Boom!” Li Qiye pointed forward and banished Long Aotian into a different spatial sphere. The guy instantly disappeared and was trapped by this technique.

“No one can stop me from killing.” Li Qiye chuckled and directly unleashed a finger strike at the prince’s forehead.

“No!” The prince howled before death, a cry full of unwillingness and regrets but it was too late.

Blood oozed out from his head while his eyes were still wide opened. Death came before he could accomplish anything in his life. How could his path have ended here?

“Bang!” Long Aotian broke his way back from the banishment. The short amount of time it took was indicative of his terrible strength and speed.

“Li Qiye!” Long Aotian could no longer remain calm after seeing the prince’s death. His eyes turned cold, full of murderous intention.

“Long Aotian.” Li Qiye leisurely stared at him as if he was staring at a dog.

His demeanor made everyone take a deep breath without anything to say. How could Fiercest treat the imperial prince of the Soaring Immortal Sect like this? His domineering nature was truly peerless.

“Boom!” Aotian directly released all of his blood energy, causing rumbling blasts. In a short time, his energy engulfed the world and all of the Grand Sea.

It became a terrible storm capable of devouring everything in this world. It was ruthless, merciless, and brutal.

People quivered before this terrible storm of blood energy. Their breath was taken away from them, forcing them to lower their body. The crowd became pale after seeing his fury and finally understood that this was his real power. He didn’t reveal this strength when fighting against the dragon and Yuanhou earlier.

“Boom!” The Grand Sea seemingly exploded. Divine rings floated around Aotian with clear imperial runes on them. When these

rings were rotating, it looked as if multiple emperors were personally coming down.

Their imperial prestige forced weaker cultivators to drop to the ground. They had no chance of opposing this type of aura.

“Clank.” A sword hymn resounded as Aotian wielded his weapon of choice. It radiated with boundless light and illuminated the world. Even Godkings felt these rays of light prickling them with pain.

With this sword in his hand, the world was his for the taking. He had an unstoppable aura at this moment. Not to mention the weaker crowd, even Virtuous Paragons would run away from the battlefield. God-Monarchs became serious and watched from a safe distance.

This was the Virtuous Sword, Immortal Emperor Ren Xian’s true fate weapon. Its imposing emergence allowed Aotian to turn into an Immortal Emperor, ready to rage against the rest of the world!

“Virtuous Sword.” Li Qiye didn’t mind at all to see the weapon. With a clank, a saber as white as snow appeared in his hand. Others had a hard time staring directly at it.

“The Benevolent Saber!” An old Godking nearby shouted after seeing it.

It seemed that the saber was coming back to life after being in his embrace with an exuberant amount of life.

“The Virtuous Sword versus the Benevolent Saber!” Many glanced at each other after seeing the chosen weapons of the two combatants. Even the weathered Godkings here became startled.

A contest between the saber and the sword! These were two popular weapons. The sword was considered the king of weapons while the saber acted as the tyrant. They served two very prominent roles on the dao path.

More importantly, their masters were also full of characters.

Immortal Emperor Min Ren was the bringer of the Emperors Era and well-known for his benevolent nature. Meanwhile, Immortal Emperor Ren Xian was considered a wise sage of humanity. Two emperors and two weapons from two distant generations; their duel has finally begun!

There was no sound in the vicinity outside of heartbeats. Long Aotian stared intensely at the saber in Li Qiye's grasp. As the master of the Virtuous Sword, he naturally knew the significance of the saber coming back to life.

"Boom! Boom! Boom!" Aotian released more floating weapons above his head. Their terrible imperial auras assaulted the world. All existences shuddered and prostrated before them.

His arsenal included Immortal Emperor Life Treasures, ancient immortal artifacts, and timeworn weapons of the gods... Each of them was capable of sweeping through this world.

People were in awe to see so many magnificent weapons. Long Aotian incited endless envy by taking them out so easily.

An ordinary imperial lineage wouldn't have so many superb weapons but Aotian alone had more than enough. This was enough to drive people crazy. A sect with five emperors truly lived up to its fame.

"That's quite a few weapons." Li Qiye leisurely looked at Aotian and said: "But it's useless. Forget it, I won't bully you by attacking first. That would rob you of the chance to even retaliate."

"Li Qiye, don't worry. You won't be able to stop my Heavenly Annihilation!" Aotian claimed with a chilling tone.

This was the first time he was treated with such disdain after making his debut. Ever since he came to Mortal Emperor, he was unstoppable even by himself. This was the reason why people called him the Denary King.

Both peerless geniuses and old Godkings viewed him as a

dangerous enemy but now, Li Qiye didn't put him in his eyes at all. How could he not be frustrated with this development?

Long Aotian's statement did scare many people here. A Heavenly Annihilation carried wondrous power, especially when its user was someone as young and vigorous as Aotian.

Of course, they didn't find his ability to use an annihilation too surprising. After all, this was the heaven's favorite child with the arts of five emperors.

"Only a Heavenly Annihilation." Li Qiye nonchalantly retorted: "When my Soul Annihilation comes out, your attack will be kneeling instantly."

"You!" Aotian's expression turned unsightly and couldn't maintain his normal composure.

"Soul Annihilation? What's that?" A junior has never even heard of this name. A few experts here weren't aware either.

"It's using an annihilation with a true treasure that's even stronger than a Heavenly Annihilation." A Godking that had followed an Immortal Emperor in the past explained to his juniors: "This attack requires the Heaven's Will Secret Law of the emperor on top of gaining the acceptance of the weapon as well. Moreover, the user needs enough vitality and strength to handle the awakening of the soul within the weapon. That's the necessary conditions to use this legendary attack!"

# Chapter 1635: Sword Versus Saber

---

“Li Qiye, don’t be presumptuous. Even if you are a real imperial prince and can use a Soul Annihilation, that’s still not enough to defeat me, Long Aotian!” Aotian became angry and uttered coldly.

Many glanced at Aotian after hearing this. There had been speculations about Fiercest being Immortal Emperor Min Ren’s descendant a long time ago. Back then, during the fight at Cleansing Incense, he was able to use the Benevolent Armament. Think made the world think of this possibility but they didn’t have any proof.

Now, when Aotian brought this up again, people reconsidered it. Perhaps only a real imperial prince would be as ferocious as Fiercest. After all, he would be the direct children of an emperor.

Li Qiye didn’t deny this conjecture and smiled freely: “Using the Benevolent Saber might not utterly convince you of your defeat. Fine, I’ll use my own weapon.”

Having said that, he put away the saber to everyone’s astonishment. Fiercest was looking down on Aotian too much. Using his own weapon to fight against a true treasure was quite reckless.

“Li Qiye, do you really think you’re unbeatable now?” The calm Aotian found it difficult to restrain his anger. Everyone had moments of anger from feeling slighted, let alone an accomplished youth like him.

Li Qiye smiled in response: “I’m indeed unbeatable within the nine worlds.” He then opened his fate palace and the World Seal floated above him.

“Very well, I shall trample on your invincibility today.” Aotian let out a battle cry and loomed in the horizon. The Virtuous Sword became resplendent and its light brightened the entire sky.

He stood among the sun and moon with stars as his friends but his sword overshadowed them all. Aotian suddenly became the center of the universe. Here, he was the sole ruler, the master of the myriad dao and ages.

His sword was the symbol of authority, the wielder of the grand dao's profundity. Anyone would feel awed by the bright sword. Everything felt so exceptional when Aotian was the user.

"I'm afraid you won't have this chance." Li Qiye smiled and stepped into the sky. With a buzz, his World Seal turned into the Benevolent Saber.

Others didn't know what Li Qiye's true fate weapon was but to see the seal turning into the saber shocked them all the same.

"Eat this." Li Qiye casually smiled.

The saber echoed across the world and became as white as snow, capable of seeing through the myriad laws. This was its grand dao.

The attack came in the blink of an eye even though it was only a simple slash from Li Qiye. There was no preparation for this attack at all. Everyone was startled by this casual move and found him to be too arrogant.

However, this saber was so magnificent that it had no equals in the world. With one slash, the laws were annihilated.

Everything returned to the origin in a state of primordial chaos. Despair and pain were torn asunder. Everything became natural and simple; even death seemed like happiness before this slash.

For-Humanity Slash, the Heavenly Annihilation of the Benevolent Saber! Just like its name, even death wasn't painful. One would be able to find salvation and understanding while being annihilated by it.

People slowly closed their eyes before this slash. Some even wished that this slash could sever their neck so that they could head for a peaceful death.

Ordinary experts found it hard to regain their sanity. However, Godkings were able to instantly return from this state. A will in their mind resounded; their firm dao heart pulled them back from this trance. They were drenched in cold sweat. Even characters of their level had the urge to commit suicide earlier.

If this slash was performed by Immortal Emperor Min Ren himself, the effect would be unimaginable!

“Die!” Aotian wasn’t afraid of this slash at all. His cry shattered the stars as his sword soared across the sky.

This was also the Virtuous Sword’s Heavenly Annihilation. One could only see Immortal Emperor Ren Xian descending onto the collapsed firmament with his unstoppable cavalry. They were the top existences in the world, capable of stopping and crushing everything. They could sweep through the darkness and protect the light of the nine worlds!

At this moment, everyone saw an illusion that the emperor and his cavalry was the ultimate defensive perimeter of the human race. As long as they existed, they could continue to protect humanity. This made people want to worship him. Many couldn’t stand it and quickly prostrated to show their respect.

“Boom!” The sword and saber slashes finally collided, causing time to stagnate into still images.

These two Heavenly Annihilations shattered the huge stars in the sky and turned them to ashes. This scene took the spectators’ breath away.

If this battle were to happen at Mount Qingcheng, even the surrounding sea would become nothingness instantly.

“Rumble!” A victor couldn’t be decided right away. A scene of chaos ensued in the air like a terrible storm. This storm made the area quite dangerous. No one would dare to come here even several hundred years later or risk being lacerated!



This was indeed a battle at the Emperor Candidate level. This terrifying fight had already started even before the emergence of the Heaven's Will to the astonishment of the crowd. People understood that the future emperor would be one of them. Other geniuses, regardless of how exceptional they might be, weren't qualified to be part of this competition.

"Boom!" The Benevolent Saber was shaken quite a bit and became unstable. After all, this was only a copy from the World Seal. It was still a bit weaker compared to a real Heavenly Annihilation.

"Li Qiye, this is your so-called invincibility? You shall taste defeat today!" Aotian coldly uttered after seeing the saber's flashing light.

Many experts became worried too. One of them said: "Fiercest really can't take on Long Aotian?"

Li Qiye simply smiled in response: "Just one move, you think you have already won?"

"You're finished!" Aotian laughed. With a buzzing noise, he hastily unsheathed his sword.

"What is that?" The spectators were shocked again. His Heavenly Annihilation was still going on but the sword was also in his hand.

"Boom!" A second Heavenly Annihilation came out. It was still the Virtuous Sword with the power to kill the gods and emperors.

At this moment, the first slash was still in a stand-still with the saber but a second one was unleashed. It was quite amazing and terrifying that Aotian was able to attack for the second time.

"That's impossible!" Someone shouted in astonishment. Even Godkings were pale because Aotian had done the impossible.

"Is this his real strength?" A Godking stated: "To be able to unleash two annihilations at the same time. There's no way. Not to mention the damages done to the true treasure, a cultivator's vitality can't handle this!"

This was Aotian's power. Even though he couldn't use a Soul Annihilation, he could still unleash a second attack due to this triple saint aptitude, his prowess in the arts of five emperors, and his eleven fate palaces. This was the thing he was most proud of and believed that he could even defeat a Legendary Godking.

“So boring, just a Heavenly Annihilation, no fun at all.” Li Qiye wasn't interested at all at this second annihilation.

With that, his World Seal instantly retaliated with its own second annihilation.

# Chapter 1636: One Move To Defeat The Enemy

---

“Buzz.” A sizzling sound ensued with karmic flame from the Bright Flame Cauldron leaving no room to escape. It burned everything in the world.

“Rawr.” The great shadow of nine supremes from the Divine Beast Zither descended in the form of a Heavenly Annihilation!

“Boom!” Everything fell into the darkness and was devoured. The Immortal Devouring Jar unleashed Extinguish!

“Bang!” Yin and Yang were separated with countless sacred fish floating in the air. The Yin Yang Fish Citadel appeared in the sky!

In the blink of an eye, a barrage of Heavenly Annihilation made the nine worlds shake. This insane attack could destroy everything in this world.

This was the reason why the World Seal and Li Qiye were such a devastating duo. When his thirteen palaces and the seal worked together, they could unleash an endless number of annihilations.

At this moment, this was only using a butcher’s blade to kill a chicken. It couldn’t even be considered a warm-up, just a little bit of fun. This was the fruit of his recent cultivation achievements, a new understanding of the fate palaces.

“Is he trying to destroy the world?” Even God-Monarchs dropped to the ground, unable to withstand this pressure.

Other experts were twitching on their back. They felt that the end of days was coming.

Even the confident Aotian was shocked at this moment. Nevertheless, he reacted quickly by activating his Soaring Immortal Physique to its limit, evident by his shining body. At the same time, his weapons also exuded their bright lights.

“Boom!” His two annihilations couldn’t withstand the swift onslaught and collapsed instantly.

However, his weapons spewed out a divine tsunami of brilliance. They rushed forward and turned into the most fortified wall in this world to stop the incoming annihilations. Even a Legendary Godking couldn’t break through this wall.

Meanwhile, his physique was at its fastest state and the Virtuous Sword was protecting him. He even added another layer of divine armor for protection.

“Bang!” The wall couldn’t stop the successive barrages and instantly collapsed. Nevertheless, Aotian was able to utilize the little second saved by the wall and pierced through space and time with his grand completion physique then escaped the battlefield within a split second.

Alas, the annihilations were too terrifying. They actually gave chase through time and space across the sky. Despite being quite far away, he was still struck by the remnant blasts of the annihilation.

“Bang!” He was blown away to a different spatial sphere and through another one in an instant.

Even with the protection of the armor and the Virtuous Sword, blood still gushed outward. Many people could see his body being penetrated while his armor shattered into little pieces.

In the end, the destroyed spatial sphere disappeared along with Long Aotian. Who knows whether he was alive or not? The only thing certain was the grievous injuries even if he were lucky enough to survive.

In a short time, noises were robbed from this area. It didn’t matter who they might be, both Legendary Godkings and Emperor Assailants felt a palpable fear because of Fiercest!

Ordinary Godkings felt their legs giving in. To be able to unleash

so many Heavenly Annihilations without any visible fatigue on his vitality was simply unstoppable. Maybe an emperor would be able to stop him but Godkings were no longer significant.

“So boring using annihilations.” Li Qiye recalled the World Seal and said with disinterest.

The crowd felt like cicada during the winter. They became afraid and felt despair. For many people, they could try their whole life and wouldn't be able to unleash one Heavenly Annihilation. Long Aotian was already incredible to be able to use two in succession. This could be considered a miracle.

But when Li Qiye unleashed so many with ease, it made everyone else lose hope. Fiercest just needed to use eight or ten annihilations and no imperial lineage would be able to withstand it!

Aotian could be referred to as a timeless genius by using just two but he was nothing compared to Fiercest who could throw them out like cabbages.

“The successor to Soaring Immortal is a little weak.” Li Qiye shook his head and quietly disappeared among the vast ocean.

This statement made even more people drop to the ground. Mount Qingcheng was shocked as well.

Ding Yuanhou's comprehension ability was incredible since he was able to become a Godking during the Difficult Dao Era. This was quite extraordinary, winning him the title of the number one genius of the demon race at the Grand Sea. Hai Lin was amazing as well for being able to escape time and time again from Long Aotian.

However, these geniuses were smiling helplessly. After being so proud of their talents, they found themselves trivial before Fiercest.

If they were to evaluate themselves with one word, all they could say would be: “Trash.”

But if this level of characters were “trash”, others wouldn’t have qualified to even be trash.

People finally got up slowly a long time after Fiercest was gone. They were shuddering with fear upon hearing his name, no matter who they might be.

“Long Aotian still lost in the end. The successor of Soaring Immortal, beloved son of the heavens, an imperial prince... still can’t take on Fiercest.” A pale spectator commented.

After descending to Mortal Emperor, Long Aotian was under the spotlight and proceeded to dominate with his talents and amazing background. The world thought he would be undefeated and eventually become emperor.

However, after today, everyone felt that beloved sons of the heavens and imperial princes were nothing compared to Fiercest!

“Thirteen palaces are certainly unbeatable.” A big shot from the last generation smiled wryly: “After Fiercest becomes emperor, he might be the most brilliant of them all. His achievements will not be inferior to characters like Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng and Empress Hong Tian. No, he might even surpass them to be the [Eternal Prime Emperor](#).”

“Weak.” Godkings were lost in forlorn after hearing Fiercest’s evaluation of Aotian: “I wish I could be considered a ‘weak’ person in Fiercest’s eyes.”

Everyone knew that Aotian wasn’t weak at all, especially when he could use two annihilations at the same time. Even Legendary Godkings would need to retreat before him.

Of course, only someone like Fiercest was eligible to make such a statement since he had the strength to back it up!

“Even if an emperor was around in this generation, they would be suicidal to try and fight against His Excellency.” Matriarch Yu personally watched the battle. She didn’t find the outcome

surprising at all.

In her mind, His Excellency has produced countless miracles. It was pointless to compare someone like Long Aotian to him. Even Soaring Immortal paled in comparison.

In a different location in the Grand Sea, Gu Zun was also watching the whole thing and eventually commented: “Only one person in this world can do this.”

“Master, are we still doing it?” After a moment of silence, Ye Jiuzhou asked. He wasn’t asking out of fear but for the wellbeing of his master for he was a devoted disciple.

“Why not?” Gu Zun smiled: “Cultivators try for the impossible, that’s his favorite saying. No one can defeat him in this world but I still want to try!”

Jiuzhou couldn’t do anything else but gently sigh. He knew that his master wouldn’t cease from wanting revenge. Most importantly, his master wanted the legendary items in the treasury, coveted even by Immortal Emperors. They could be the Dark Crow’s most precious artifacts!

1. This seems weird in English, but this title flows very well in Chinese. A better flowing title would be Greatest Emperor of All Ages but it is just too long in English.

# Chapter 1637: Long Zhantian

---

Gu Zun sat in a secretive location in the Grand Sea. It was quite a serene and comfortable area. He didn't look like a big shot or an expert, just an ordinary old man. Time had left its traces on his face.

When Lu Zhangsun was still alive, Gu Zun kept a low profile without any responsibilities. He never asked about the matters in Heaven Suppression. Because of this, Zhangsun's vigilance towards him loosened.

He maintained the same lifestyle later on without interfering with the sect. Very few disciples have actually seen him; the majority had only heard of his name.

Nevertheless, Gu Zun gained considerable influence after Zhangsun's death. Ancestor Shan who was Zhangsun's disciple tried to reduce his influence many times to no avail. Outside of his peerless intelligence, Ye Jiuzhou's effort played a great part on his strong grasp on Heaven Suppression.

Recently, Gu Zun's whereabouts had been a secret. The only person who was privy to his location was Ye Jiuzhou.

Moreover, Gu Zun has been very mysterious as well. Disciples who have seen him believed that Gu Zun rarely stays in the same location for too long. Who knows why he has been changing places so often?

He quietly sat there like an ordinary old man sleeping while enjoying the warm sunlight. After a while, he opened his eyes and smiled: "Have a seat since you're here, Brother Zhantian."

Space fluctuated and was suddenly torn open. A stalwart middle-aged man came out with an angry expression. He had a golden glow just like a true dragon while possessing an air of authority, allowing him to criticize the nine worlds.



He sat and started with a scowl: “Gu Zun, this is not the proper conduct of a man. You watched without lending a hand. My Ao’er is grievously wounded yet you didn’t take action!”

His name was Long Zhantian, known to others as Ancestor Long. The few who were fortunate enough to know of his background were quite scared of him.

This was the person in charge of Soaring Immortal in the current period. He was the leader of the young faction, someone with enough influence to change the direction of the nine worlds.

Even though Zhantian and Aotian weren’t master and disciple in a formal manner, that was essentially their relationship. He personally instructed Aotian on his Immortal Physique. Zhantian was far stronger with a better cultivation and a perfect grand completion physique.

“No need to be hot-tempered, Brother Zhantian.” Gu Zun didn’t mind the condemning tone at all and calmly responded: “Isn’t Imperial Prince Long still fine? It’s only an injury, nothing to worry about with Soaring Immortal’s supreme alchemy skill. Moreover, this was a sharpening opportunity for him. Defeat isn’t scary to cultivators like us, only when one loses their confidence after losing. The prince has never lost before since his debut. Having a taste of defeat is good for his future aspiration. After all, after his ascension, there will be more challenges. He is too inexperienced right now, this hardship will be good for him.”

Zhantian could only snort in response after hearing this reasonable explanation. He eventually uttered coldly: “Is this Li Qiye really who you say he is? Immortal Emperor Min Ren’s son?”

“I’m eighty to ninety percent certain, at worst. Such powerful bloodline and talents and coming from Cleansing Incense on top of wielding the Benevolent Saber and Armament? Who can he be outside of Immortal Emperor Min Ren’s son?” Gu Zun chuckled and said.

“But the world believes that the emperor does not have any descendant.” Zhantian replied.

“That’s only a rumor.” Gu Zun shook his head: “How can the ignorant future generations know about the emperors? There are too many closed curtains and unknown questions, beyond the means of ordinary men to find out.”

He paused for a moment before continuing: “In the past, the emperor was still in love with that woman and secretly had a child with her then hid him at Cleansing Incense. Brother Zhantian, think about it. Immortal Emperor Min Ren had the love of that person and was one of his favorite emperors. If Li Qiye wasn’t Immortal Emperor Min Ren’s descendant, why would that person teach him so well?” Gu Zun’s expression became serious at this point.

Zhantian’s eyes turned cold with a murderous glint after hearing about “this person”.

“If we kill Li Qiye, he will come out?” Zhantian stated with a brutal tone while gritting his teeth.

“Of course!” Gu Zun said: “He’s notorious for backing his own people. If you attack someone he had trained, he would certainly appear. That will be the time for your Soaring Immortal Sect to try and do the impossible. Eliminate that person and you will be able to unite the nine worlds. No one will be able to touch your sect any longer. Soaring Immortal will become eternal at that point with the nine worlds firmly in your grasp. You will be able to groom the sixth, the seventh, and all the successive emperors. At that point, the world shall be your garden!”

Gu Zun was a pleasant speaker. There was something stirring and tempting in each of his words.

Zhantian’s eyes slightly batted while listening. He stared at Gu Zun intensely for a long time before speaking: “Don’t forget, he is the ruler of the nine worlds, the dark hand behind the curtain!”

“I’m aware.” Gu Zun smiled: “But he’s no longer the same or he wouldn’t wait so long before coming out again this time. The war with Immortal Emperor Ta Kong back then had expended all of his resources. He no longer has the same power as before.”

“He was able to be arrogant back then because he had Immortal Emperor Qian Li and the Black Dragon King as his backers. That wasn’t the case against Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. Right now, he has no emperor or the Black Dragon King, not even the Black Dragon Legion. Think about it, with him and a few young recruits, are they capable of fighting against a behemoth like Soaring Immortal?” Gu Zun slowly speculated with reasonable logic.

Zhantian didn’t reveal his opinion right away while carefully pondering.

“Brother Zhantian, you know my background so do you think I know more about him or you? Don’t forget, I was with the Black Dragon King for three generations and had been taught by him as well. To be frank, if I’m not completely confident, would I dare to oppose him? It is precisely because of his weakening period that I dare to do so. This is our best chance to kill him!” Gu Zun said with a smile.

Long Zhantian replied: “There’s something I haven’t forgotten. He is the founder of your Heaven Suppression and even trained the Black Dragon King on top of helping you, thus, he can be considered your master. What I don’t understand is why are you opposing someone who has given so much to your sect and you personally?”

Gu Zun answered: “All of that is true. He indeed gave me the grace of his guidance before but don’t forget, Brother Zhantian, one sentence from him had sentenced me to a lifetime of suffering.”

“Who am I? Supreme talents, one of the ten eonic geniuses. Even if he didn’t teach me, plenty of other great teachers would have

done so. My talents alone would have made me emperor.” He continued: “Alas, he said that I had a natural disposition for treachery and betrayal and even ordered his generals to throw me into the eye of the sea. It didn’t end there. He even removed my fortunes and destroyed my cultivation, subjecting me to three generations of torture!”

“Brother Zhantian, do you think the guidance matters after the three generations of torture? I must have my revenge even if he is the ruler of the nine worlds, the dark hand behind the curtain! Vengeance shall be mine for that is my nature!” Gu Zun also gritted his teeth at this point.

Gu Zun chose his words carefully and avoided revealing other important details. More importantly, it can be said that revenge wasn’t the most important thing on his mind!

Long Zhantian carefully mused over this response and found it to be reasonable.

“Brother Zhantian, don’t tell me you want to back out now?” Gu Zun looked straight at him and said: “Very well, I won’t force you if that’s the case. After all, you are responsible for Soaring Immortal and do not want the same thing to happen again!”

1. This is a reference to Zhuge Liang and Wei Yan in the Three Kingdoms. Zhuge Liang said the same thing about Wei Yan.

# Chapter 1638: Gu Zuns Resentment

---

Long Zhantian's expression turned cold when Gu Zun brought up the past. A murderous glint flashed in his eyes that was more than enough to make Godkings tremble.

"Hmph!" He snorted and said coldly: "Our Soaring Immortal Sect is not afraid of anyone! If it wasn't for Immortal Emperor Qian Li leading the vanguard with the Black Dragon King in the rear, we wouldn't have backed down like that. One day, we'll show him who is the real master of the nine worlds!"

"That's why we take his life when he is at his weakest." Gu Zun said: "There are no more emperors backing him up right now so it is an amazing opportunity. If we wait till he grooms another emperor, then he'll rise again and your sect will have no chance to kill him."

Zhantian stared intensely at Gu Zun with a stern expression and uttered coldly: "Gu Zun, Soaring Immortal shall take action but you mustn't forget, you have a part in this battle as well. If we help you obtain revenge, what can you offer in the war effort?"

"Brother Zhantian, are you forgetting who I am? You might not like to hear this but you will be requiring my assistance eventually! Your Immortal Physique might be strong but I'm certainly more powerful than you!" Gu Zun flatly stated with a smile despite Zhantian's unfriendly question.

Zhantian simply scowled and didn't refute the claim. Both he and his sect wouldn't cooperate with the weak. If Gu Zun wasn't strong enough, they wouldn't have formed an alliance with Heaven Suppression.

"Regardless of how strong you are, you must show some sincerity in this collaboration." Zhantian said.

Gu Zun replied with a smile: "No need to worry about this. I am

someone who can keep my words. If it is an alliance, all problem will be ours together. As long as you lead that person out, I shall be the shining beacon and be the first to try and capture him!”

“Looks like you have complete confidence!” Zhantian slowly spoke. There was a subtle hint of mockery or requiring further explanation.

Gu Zun still maintained his friendly demeanor: “I know what you are trying to say. Yes, I was captured back then and thrown into the eye of the sea but there’s no shame in that. Brother Zhantian, to be frank, if I, an eonic genius, wasn’t able to do it, you definitely couldn’t have done anything back then either. Trust me though, my killer move isn’t something you can imagine.”

“Hmph!” Zhantian was very unhappy with Gu Zun’s comment.

“Rest assured, just lead him out and you will be able to see my hidden card. Don’t forget, we’re on the same boat now and are stronger because of it. We must work together!” Gu Zun stated.

Zhantia ruminated his options before speaking: “Gu Zun, I trust you but there is one condition. When we capture him, dead or alive, we will take him back to Soaring Immortal!”

Gu Zun slowly said: “I know that you want to pry precious information and artifacts out of him so you want him alive.”

“Have you not thought of it too?” Zhantian sneered confidently.

To which Gu Zun leisurely responded: “Brother Zhantian, those are some strong words. You don’t only want to have the same status as me, you even want to seize everything for yourself.”

“Gu Zun, your strength is undeniable.” Zhantian smiled proudly: “But don’t forget, I have a behemoth in Soaring Immortal behind me, I’m not alone. To borrow your words, our power isn’t something you can imagine.”

“I’m aware.” Gu Zun laughed heartily: “I heard that Immortal Emperor Ren Xian’s sons have escaped from the Immortal

Confinement. Looks like your branch will be able to maintain hegemony for a long time.”

“It’s good that you’re aware.” Zhantian didn’t hide it at all: “The real imperial princes are back. You should understand the significance behind this.”

“I know.” Gu Zun said: “But lest you forget, a few old men from your sect are friends with that person. I’m afraid it won’t be that easy for your branch to make all the decisions. If they try to stop you, how are you going to be in control?”

“No need for you to concern about that. Our sect is unified, no one will try to stop me in this generation.” Zhantian spoke coldly: “You know that when our five branches are of the same heart, we shall be invincible. With that, are we strong enough to take all the spoils now?”

“Fine, if you are that confident, I have no more objection. I agree with that condition then. If we are successful, that body will be yours.” Gu Zun smiled.

“Good, it’s a deal then.” Zhantian looked at Gu Zun and said: “Let’s talk about how to lead him out then.”

“Not hard.” Gu Zun replied: “Start with Pearl City. Poke the nest and the bees will come out. You just need to do this at that point...”

After coming up with a working plan, Zhantian finally left. Gu Zun watched his departure with a faint smile.

Ye Jiuzhou emerged out of nowhere by his side and asked: “Master, will Soaring Immortal really muster all of their strength?”

“Yes.” Gu Zun said: “They still consider the forceful search back then to be humiliating. Their young faction is ambitious and wants to rule the world. That’s why they are reneging the vow and returning to the world after making sufficient preparation. They simply won’t stop for anyone!”

Ye Jiuzhou was still skeptical: “But their strongest cards are their previous generation, the old generals of the emperors. I’m afraid these ancestors won’t agree to fight against His Excellency.”

Gu Zun smiled in response: “Those generals know who they will be facing but they are old now. The imperial princes have returned, just surviving from the confinement shows that they have reached a terrible level.”

His smile grew wider: “Long Zhantian is only the vanguard. There are characters behind the scene still. When he searched back then, so many people in Soaring Immortal were scared out of their mind and committed suicide with the imperial children running into the prison. The matter this time definitely has something to do with them and yes, they will want revenge.”

“If those ancestors try to stop them, there will be a great internal struggle. Who knows who will win but a disaster will come to Soaring Immortal, ending that sect completely! Wouldn’t that be my chance to take advantage of the situation? Capturing him and destroying Soaring Immortal then the nine worlds will be mine!”

Ye Jiuzhou paused for a moment before speaking softly: “Master, your life goal isn’t hegemony.”

“Is that so?” Gu Zun smiled leisurely.

Jiuzhou responded in a serious manner: “If you wanted to reign, you would have followed His Excellency to become an emperor, no need to oppose him. On the contrary, you chose the course of actions that ended with your imprisonment for three generations. That can’t be just for the nine worlds since it would be a lack of foresight on your part. Emperors don’t care for the nine worlds and your view is definitely not that shallow either.”

“Jiuzhou, you are being disrespectful towards your master.” Gu Zun’s expression became strict.

Jiuzhou calmly bowed and said: “I’m merely speaking the truth.



Master, if you think my words were improper, I accept any punishment.”

Gu Zun looked at him and answered: “You have followed me your entire life. You don’t owe me, it is the opposite. I have no regret with regards to passing my arts down because I have a disciple like you. My only regret in life is not defeating the Dark Crow! In his eyes, I am but an ant!”

His eyes turned cold at this point: “If I am only an ant, so be it, I’ll show him that an ant can still break a dam. Even an ant can become trouble for him in the future.”

“He was only a mortal yet he could rule the nine heavens and ten earths on top of surpassing Immortal Emperors and time. Why can’t I do the same?! I am one of the ten greatest geniuses, I just need enough time to accomplish the same things as him!” Gu Zun showed his determination with a sharp gaze. This was a completely different demeanor.

“Master, your talents are peerless.” Jiuzhou said respectfully: “But His Excellency’s achievements have nothing to do with his talents. It is because he possesses an unshakable dao heart, as solid as the most precious metal.”

“Jiuzhou, you sound just like him when talking about the dao heart.” Gu Zun laughed in response: “That dao heart, I just need enough time and I can also do the same!”

Jiuzhou slightly opened his mouth but refrained from speaking. He could only sigh in the end.

“What?” Gu Zun looked at his favorite disciple and said: “I don’t blame you if you want to back out. You have done many things for me already, I won’t force you to do something you don’t want to.”

“You are a father to me, master.” Jiuzhou calmly responded: “It’s just that sometimes, I feel that it is a waste of your life to oppose His Excellency. He didn’t have ill-wills towards you in the

beginning.”

“Not from the beginning?” Gu Zun snorted: “If that wasn’t the case, then why did he hide everything? He had the Physique Scripture yet he taught me what kind of physique law? Hmph, if he really wanted to train me, why did he groom Yin Tian to become emperor instead? He knew full well that I am a better candidate than Yin Tian but he chose to ignore that.”

“Hah, it’s because he thought I have a treacherous nature so he was always vigilant towards me, not allowing me to take a single step into his treasury! Fine, he can keep on thinking that, I will show him treachery, to show him that my life will not be decided by his first evaluation! I shall oppose him, true to his initial impression!”

# Chapter 1639: Master And Disciple

---

Jiuzhou had no response after hearing this either. He kept his opinions to himself.

“Hmph! If he is no longer immortal in this generation, one of us will die before the end! This is my only chance to usurp him!” Gu Zun scowled and said.

“Master, I have no problem with you wanting to fight against His Excellency. However, leading Soaring Immortal into our sect, just one misstep will make all your plans awry like leading a wolf into our home. It could bring eternal damnation to Heaven Suppression.” Jiuzhou pondered before speaking from a different perspective.

“Don’t worry, just Long Zhantian alone wants to play against me? He’s still too inexperienced. Hmph, if it wasn’t for his backing in the shadow, I would kill him, sooner or later.” A frightening glint flashed in Gu Zun’s eyes.

To which Jiuzhou responded: “But this will turn our sect into a battleground, a truly negative outcome.”

“There are battlefields everywhere in this world.” Gu Zun said: “In this momentous generation, no one should just worry about themselves unless they want to hide forever, never coming into being. If people did that in the past, our sect wouldn’t be as successful as we are now, reigning for three generations.”

Jiuzhou became tongue-tied and couldn’t respond.

“Even if self-preservation is the key, it’s not always possible.” Gu Zun explained: “We have the authority in Heaven Suppression, you think he’ll just let us do as we please? In his eyes, Heaven Suppression is his own property and won’t share it with us. It doesn’t matter if we are allies with Soaring Immortal or not, he will eventually make us disappear from this world!”

“If we can’t play nice, then it’s time to fight to see who will be the last man standing. Everyone dies eventually, even emperors can’t escape fate. If I lose and die to him, that’s not shameful at all. Emperors have been killed by him, let alone someone like me. But, if I were to be successful, then I will be an ant that has bitten a dragon to death. I shall surpass the constraint of time, my name will be immortalized!” Gu Zun revealed a peaceful smile as if he had seen through life-and-death.

Jiuzhou eventually asked: “Master, you have been wise your whole life but His Excellency’s calculation has been flawless as well. Please excuse my impudence but I don’t think you have a good chance of defeating His Excellency at all.”

Jiuzhou finally revealed his opinion that he had been keeping to himself in the past.

Gu Zun looked at him and said: “Jiuzhou, there is fear in your mind. This is not suitable for your dao heart.”

Jiuzhou earnestly said: “Yes, I do have fear about your fate, master. I don’t mind dying. It will just be His Excellency condemning and killing me. It’s not my first time facing death either, it’s not that scary. What I’m worried about is if you take action again, losing will result in certain death. His Excellency won’t spare you in this generation.”

[Gu Zun](#) pondered for a bit before laughing: “Right, I know that he will kill me since I’ve done the unforgivable in revealing the coordinates of the Immortal Demon Grotto and led Ta Kong there. Even my brother-in-law wouldn’t forgive me, let alone him.”

He smiled freely without any sign of guilt. Of course, the brother-in-law, in this case, was the Black Dragon King.

“But...” Ye Jiuzhou said. Gu Zun interrupted him and waved his hand: “Jiuzhou, I am not afraid of death either since I rather die compared to being imprisoned in the eye of the sea. That was my most humiliating period! Only brother-in-law thought that being

alive was still better than death! In my mind, there's no shame in dying to an existence of the Dark Crow level."

"Brother-in-law only wanted me to live in order to keep his promise with my sister. Hmph, but that left me with a fate worse than death!" Gu Zun said flatly: "I have been unbeatable for so long with peerless talents yet I have to live under the shadow of the Dark Crow, relying on the Black Dragon King's relationship with him. That's no different than death!"

"With my power and grand dao, I would have been emperor long ago if it wasn't for the Dark Crow. I would be up above the nine heavens to become the most brilliant of them all." Even the calm Gu Zun scowled at this point.

Jiuzhou didn't speak since he didn't want to judge his own master on this matter. Right and wrong didn't matter, he would stand with his master. In his mind, his master was like a father who gave him life and directions. Because of this, even against the legendary master and the rest of the world, he would still pick to stand by his master.

He wasn't afraid of death, but he didn't wish to see his master loses all of his fame before eventually dying!

\*\*\*

After defeating Long Aotian, Li Qiye continued exploring the Grand Sea. He eventually remembered the full geographical momentum of the place, every single detail and branch.

In the end, under the great momentum, Li Qiye connected the entire area in order to borrow the strength of the earth. With the help of the girl in the yellow cloth, he took one step at a time inside this momentum.

"A bit interesting." He said slowly: "No wonder I didn't find it before. So all of you left behind these seals back in your epoch, but due to the vicissitudes and polishing of time, they have changed

completely. Future descendants couldn't see these little details."

"Hmph, how can you imagine our epoch? We were the most resplendent..." She said smugly since she was very proud of her golden epoch.

"Alright, no need to flatter yourself." Li Qiye interrupted her: "I know of your epoch, an amazing one indeed but the reason why the mysteries in this place can pass down has nothing to do with your epoch's strength. It is because this place is blessed by the high heaven, your group only added a little to it."

She wasn't unhappy with this evaluation and snorted: "You didn't live in our epoch so you wouldn't know how incredible it was. Hmph, if you were there, you would be scared silly. Maybe you'll just be an insignificant nobody there."

"If your Archtruth Epoch was as powerful as you said, then it should have been lucky enough to survive till now instead of disappearing in the river of time." Li Qiye had no interest and retorted with a smile: "Your epoch is no different from the others, including ours at the present. The only big difference is the cultivation method."

"Hmph, what do you know? We were once at the top of all ages. Our experts in that period are beyond your imagination, same with our cultivation method..." The girl immediately boasted.

"Is that so? Then why did it disappear? Why is there nothing passed down including your amazing cultivation methods?" He leisurely said.

"You!" The girl became quite annoyed and angrily said: "You don't know what this world truly faces at the very end of the path, you don't know the terrible changes incoming in the future..."

Li Qiye chuckled: "No, you are mistaken. I am fully aware, even more so than you. Don't forget, I am someone who has returned alive from that location. Because of this knowledge, I want to fight

again to end in all in this generation.”

With that, he stared straight at her and asked: “I dare to go all the way again for another attempt at the final battle, but you, if you come back to life, do you dare to fight again? Or rather, if your entire epoch has another chance, do all of you dare to face it once more?”

The girl pondered quietly. In the beginning, she was only having a bit of fun with him. After all, after being trapped in the cloth for so long, a verbal bout could be very enjoyable. But now, he brought up a heavy topic.

1. Something of note is that Gu Zun never call the emperors by their full title, it shows a big disrespect Even Li Qiye calls them by their full title 90% of the time, outside of people he knows like Min Ren or Tun Ri

# Chapter 1640: Cleansing Temporal Crystal

---

The girl in the cloth kept to herself for a long time before replying: “We’re not the only ones who have failed.”

“I know, so many people have tried in the past with great effort and determination. All ended with failure.” Li Qiye didn’t tease her this time, only nodding his head.

“This path is covered with bones and too many dead men to count.” She added.

“Would one be able to escape death by not taking this path?” Li Qiye chuckled: “Have enough people died just yet across the ages? Perhaps people live a different life but the final outcome will always be the same, returning to the earth as bones. Immortal Emperors and invincible characters, it doesn’t matter who you are, death will come. Even the lord of an epoch can’t avoid this either.” He said with a tinge of emotion.

“But so what if it is impossible to escape death? The world is still beautiful enough. Knowing that death is imminent, one should still fight to the end in order to see why the journey of life is so bright. After each golden era, more wise sages pave the road.” He ended with a comment full of determination and acceptance.

“But you think you alone can fight to the end?” She couldn’t help pouring cold water over his head: “Some people used the power of the entire world, only to become ashes. But you, you are alone. Success is not possible.”

“I will be because I am Li Qiye! That’s why I shall accomplish it.” He said with a smile.

“Hmph, delusions of grandeur.” She said coldly: “Among the epochs were people like you who have spent generations, searching for a method. In the end, none amounted to anything. Why are you so confident?”



“Because I am Li Qiye.” He leisurely repeated.

The girl had nothing to say. The word “egotistic” alone wasn’t enough to describe him.

“Whoosh!” Everything vanished where he was standing along with him. The spatial area here suddenly sank downward.

When Li Qiye could see again, he was standing in a blinding area, a room full of mirrors.

There were scintillating crystals everywhere of all kind of colors in the form of pillars. However, they weren’t crystal and seemed to be alive and breathing. A sort of liquid was also dripping from them.

This liquid was radiant with a strange and alluring light. The liquid beads fell to the ground and gathered into tiny streams that came together to form a puddle in an indentation on the ground.

Li Qiye stood by this puddle and found it to be surreal as if this was a dream because the water was sparkling and translucent to an unimaginable level.

A jade bottle was on top of the puddle. It was old, elegant, and had a softness to it. It seemed to be carved from the same piece of jade without any blemishes.

It didn’t sink despite being on the water surface. Strange enough, the water was actually crawling up the bottle before dripping inside. It seemed that this was the natural flow of the tiny streams.

Such a strange scene was happening here as if it was normal. Li Qiye looked at everything and said: “Cleansing Temporal Crystal. So you’re not here for a treasure, only to use this crystal to reform your body.”

“You know about it?” The girl was surprised.

Li Qiye answered with a smile: “There aren’t that many items that I don’t know. The Cleansing Temporal Crystal is indeed

ancient, rumored to be a type of rock upon the creation of the world, extremely rare too. It took form in the deepest location of the main vein. People wouldn't be able to know of its existence, let alone dig for it."

He then looked around at the walls and said: "This whole place is formed in a natural manner, never been carved before. More importantly, it had severed from the ordinary temporal sphere and is now completely independent in a different realm. It would be apt to call this place Cleansing Temporal Sphere."

With that, he stared at the piece of cloth again: "So this is what you all have done. Though you didn't change this place at all, you still locked its space and time. This allowed it to be independent for who knows how many years? It didn't matter how the world was changing and how many epochs have come and go, this place continued to exist."

"Hmph, you know a lot." The girl scowled after Li Qiye revealed their method.

"So this is the first step of your re-emergence to the world. Even though your calamity had passed, you still need to recreate and cleanse before coming out from the cloth." He smiled at the girl.

"That's right, in order for me to leave this cloth, I need a lot of time and an extremely pure crystal. That's the only way to sever the curse." She said coldly.

Li Qiye shifted his glance towards the floating bottle and said: "This bottle is incredible. It must have been personally created by a top master from your epoch. It could absorb essences here and remove any impurity, the best possible thing for cleansing."

He then looked at the puddle full of water: "According to the records, it needs ten thousand years for the crystal to create one bead of liquid. There is enough liquid here to be a pond, all of this liquid is then further purified by the bottle, only the purest liquid is stored inside."

“It’s definitely prime material. The liquid here can purify everything in this world - darkness, power, curses, and foulness.” He said slowly.

“I’ll be able to leave this cloth faster after removing my curse. That will be a good thing for you.” She said.

“That’s true, I won’t need to spend as much energy on this.” He replied: “However, I’m a little bit surprised. What was your past, who was it that hated you enough to use this method to imprison you, never letting you see the sun again for an eternity?”

“In my opinion, your current state isn’t because of the villainous heaven. It wouldn’t do something so tasteless. But then, which heaven-defying character made you into an ink spot on this cloth?”

“Hmph, none of your business.” She didn’t like talking about the past.

The girl indeed came from an ancient era. She used to be invincible but was cursed by someone else and trapped inside the yellow cloth. Moreover, this curse lasted for an eternity. Even though she was sealed for many years, the curse here was still enough to corrode the area around her. That eventually led to the destruction of the [divine school](#).

One could only imagine how terrible the person who did this to her back then must be on top of their deep hatred towards her.

“It really isn’t any of my business.” He shrugged in response: “But all have turned to ashes. Even if you had some deep desire for vengeance, you can’t carry it out anymore.”

She fell into silence. He was right, their epoch no longer existed. It had disappeared into the river of time. All the hatred in the past were gone now. That person had died long ago, there was no way for her to get revenge.

“Put me inside the bottle for purification.” She said coldly.

Li Qiye chuckled: “As you wish. I hope you will be able to come

out soon with a new body.”

“Hmph, so that I can work for you, right?” She scowled.

“I won’t deny that.” He smiled and said: “Didn’t you say your cultivation method was extremely amazing? After you recreate your body, I want to widen my horizon.”

1. The sect where Li Qiye got it with the draco-bull

# Chapter 1641: The Time Is Ripe

---

The girl in the yellow cloth simply snorted at his comment. He didn't mind at all and took the bottle from the water before inserting the cloth inside.

A sizzling sound immediately came about as if something was melting inside with smoke coming out. It looked as if this smoke was poisonous

Li Qiye chuckled at this sight: "Such a frightening curse. After so much time within the seal and the earthen jar, the remnant curse is still so terrible."

Li Qiye put away the bottle and looked at the puddle then smiled: "Trash they might be but can't waste them, can still be of use."

Though the essences in the crystal liquid have been sucked dry, it was still a very rare immortal grade material. People from this world simply couldn't take them at all. The other reason was the ten thousand years it took for just a single drop of liquid to form.

Li Qiye was calling it trash but it was still very precious to other people.

"Coincidentally enough, I have something requiring purification." He opened his fate palace and took something from his alchemy garden.

A yang vine was released and it cheered right away. It became too excited after seeing the puddle of crystal water and immediately jumped inside.

This so-called "trash" water was incomparable with regards to its cleansing property. Other immortal liquids had no chance against it.

The vine crazily absorbed the water with loud sucking noises. It was shiny with each branch and leaf seemingly cast from gold. There was a red glimmer flowing through its body just like a flame,

capable of incinerating everything.

It was a very rare immortal vine and indeed contained a terrible refined fire within. This powerful fire had the name, Puresun Flame.

A gourd was growing on this particular vine. It was ripe but it still hasn't fallen just yet. After the long years, one could hear thunders within this gourd. It contained an ancient power.

It was mature yet it still wasn't time for it to leave the vine since it wasn't perfect. In fact, Li Qiye had expended great effort and a lot of amazing liquids for this gourd. Both Li Qiye and the vine had high hope for this gourd but it was still lacking just a little bit.

The vine continued to absorb the liquid and finished the puddle in just a short time. It looked quite satisfied at this moment. Smoke and evaporation occurred all around the vine. Hot water vapor took over the area.

A faint green flame jumped within the vine. So it turned out that this vine used its flame to refine the crystal water in order to take out all of the essences.

Finally, one could see tiny water drops flowing towards the gourd. A faint layer of liquid covered the gourd and slowly seeped inside.

A long time after, something was flowing out of the gourd. It was crimson and looked just like gold slags left behind after a gold-smelting process.

This was the reason why the gourd didn't drop just yet. It was still impure with these dregs affecting its grade. Even though it was very little, it had a great effect on the entire thing. After removing it, the gourd would be an entire grade higher.

Finally, under the purifying property of the crystal water, the gourd lost all of its impurities.

Next, with a slight explosion and cracking sounds, lightning

rushed from the gourd and turned into two wings. The gourd seemed to be wanting to fly away.

“Badump!” An immense heartbeat resounded, the signal of maturity. The gourd dropped from the vine and wanted to fly away. However, how could Li Qiye let this happen? He grabbed it in just a split second.

It was flashing in his palm like a golden gourd while emitting thunderous noises that were long lasting and powerful. It seemed as if this gourd was containing an expanse of primordial chaos, ready to turn into a new world.

Even the ignorant would know that this was an amazing item while holding it in their hand.

“Good stuff.” Li Qiye commented: “Truly an unpolished piece of jade. I will take my time sculpting it so that it will be brilliant in the future.”

This gourd was unique and after refinement, it would become an incredibly powerful treasure.

\*\*\*

The Grand Sea was very quiet but this was the calm before the storm. This oppressive atmosphere took people’s breath away. The big shots from the last generation were especially sensitive about this incoming turmoil.

Few people dared to talk about how Li Qiye blew Aotian flying in public. There were only a few discussions in secret.

Despite his defeat, Soaring Immortal was still a heavy boulder looming over everyone’s shoulder. In recent days, more disciples and experts from the sect were teleported to this region. The atmosphere became tense with the emergence of warships, divine peaks, and temples in the sky.

In just a short time, Soaring Immortal seemed to be mobilizing all of their legions in order to go all out. Everyone understood that

the storm was coming after seeing so many experts arriving.

Any lineage would tremble in fear when a sect with five emperors was about to start a war in the Grand Sea. Perhaps this would cause a monumental change and many sects would be erased in the process.

“I hope Fiercest will be unstoppable and sweep through everything.” Many ancestors from the great powers began to pray.

Even though Fiercest was not a nice guy, people understood that he had no interest in the Grand Sea. This wasn't the case for Soaring Immortal since they took camp here and created a foundation. With this, they could mobilize at any moment. The sea monsters and the demons were prime examples.

Of course, none of them dared to speak up or oppose Soaring Immortal. No one wanted to be the first to step up because the first would surely be destroyed. Thus, they all tucked their tail between their legs. That's why the ancestors placed their hope on Fiercest instead but they weren't confident at all.

Fiercest was indeed insane but sweeping through Soaring Immortal was easier said than done. A sect with five emperors had ample resources after standing strong for many generations. No one could touch it outside of Immortal Emperors.

The experts from Soaring Immortal coming to the Grand Sea began to gather outside of the Pearl Archipelago. They seemed to be forming a formation to siege Pearl City.



# Chapter 1642: Ye Jiuzhous Dilemma

---

The atmosphere in the Grand Sea became tense after Soaring Immortal mobilized against Pearl City.

The city itself was under more duress. In order to avoid being killed in the process, the citizens there evacuated. Only the experts stay behind to protect the city even though their opponent was Soaring Immortal since this was their home.

The great powers were startled to see this scene while certain cultivators were very confused.

“Isn’t Soaring Immortal an ally of Heaven Suppression? Why are they sieging Pearl?” A young disciple had a confused expression.

A senior explained it to him: “This is related to the internal politics of Heaven Suppression. Pearl might be under the sect’s jurisdiction but it doesn’t obey a direct order without an extremely complex procedure. You can say that it is an independent city as well.”

“But it’s still under Heaven Suppression. They shouldn’t let Soaring Immortal attack their own.” The junior was still perplexed.

“Not quite the case.” The senior shook his head: “I heard Pearl is part of Ancestor Shan’s branch while the Bright Peacock Monarch and Ye Jiuzhou don’t see eye to eye. This is a good chance for Jiuzhou to kill with a borrowed knife by using Soaring Immortal to capture Pearl. If he were to win it back after Soaring Immortal took it down, it would be a great contribution. Not only would he gain Pearl, it would solidify his status at Heaven Suppression too.”

In fact, there was a very simple reason and excuse for Soaring Immortal to surround Pearl. They wanted the defeated demons and sea monsters hiding within.

Not long ago, Soaring Immortal plowed through the sea trenches

and killed many hiding demons. Only a small number managed to escape into the nearest location, Pearl.

The monarch refused Soaring Immortal's demand for the refugees: "Pearl is a free trading port in the Grand Sea. As long as there is no existing violation of the city's laws, anyone can stay here. Pearl will never hand over a guest to anyone or any sect!"

Her formal response shocked many cultivators and made them feel ashamed. No one dared to protect the sea monsters and demons outside of Mount Qingcheng that had deep ties with Hai Lin. Pearl was the next right now but it had nothing to do with the two factions. It was simply protecting the rules of Pearl.

These two factions were virtually destroyed right now by Soaring Immortal. No other lineages in this place would oppose Soaring Immortal for their sake but Pearl chose to do so.

"The monarch is just as brave as any man can be." An ancestor said with shame: "Not just anyone can be undaunted before authority yet she can, putting men to shame."

Pearl was ready to fight as well. All the gates were closed with the disciples situated in key positions. The ancestors there personally came out in order to protect their city as well.

The two armies made the atmosphere very tense with their weapons drawn. An aura of war permeated the entire archipelago. At this moment, a loud blast resounded as a man made his appearance in the middle of the scene.

It was a stalwart old man with a silvery beard and a conspicuous red cloak. When it fluttered with the wind, it looked just like clouds of blood.

"Ye Jiuzhou!" The spectators murmured in shock.

"Monarch, Soaring Immortal is our ally, we should be on the same side. You shouldn't involve Pearl just because of a few remnants." He spoke.

The monarch appeared on the city wall and replied with a solemn expression: “Ancestor Ye, Pearl is part of Heaven Suppression but according to the ancestral guidelines, it has its own rules. If the ones staying in Pearl have committed crimes, then we would hand them over. However, if they are innocent, we will not acquiesce to anyone!”

After hearing this, the spectators nearby became emotional. One of them murmured: “Pearl dares to stand up for strangers. We have so many sects in the Grand Sea so why are we letting Soaring Immortal does whatever it wants?!”

Nevertheless, these sect masters and royal lords remained silent. No one wanted to be the first to oppose Soaring Immortal despite being unhappy about the current situation.

“Monarch, open the gate and let me in to talk?” Jiuzhou told the monarch.

“Ye Jiuzhou, just because you want to be a hound for Soaring Immortal doesn’t mean we want to do so too!” An unhappy ancestor coldly uttered: “We don’t have an entrance for a dog like you at Pearl!”

A few ancestors here have been unhappy with Jiuzhou’s faction since it had tried to seize power several times. The two sides were like water and fire!

“Then excuse me.” Jiuzhou stepped forward and made it to the gate in an instant.

“Cease your haughtiness!” The ancestors here shouted and took action. However, Jiuzhou’s long cloak swept by and created a terrible storm that blew these ancestors flying.

“Boom!” Jiuzhou walked in a dominating fashion and made it to the government hall inside the city.

He himself was a Legendary Godking. Ordinary ancestors were no match for him.

“Ancestor Ye, halt.” The monarch appeared right outside this building and said with austerity.

“Monarch, I come with sincerity in order to discuss this with you. I hope to resolve this in a different manner, no need for Pearl to fight against Soaring Immortal. I don’t want to fire of war to spread here.” He said sincerely.

To which she responded: “It’s not hard to end this whole thing. Tell Soaring Immortal to send their troops back. When the sea monsters and demons are outside, Soaring Immortal can do whatever but when they are inside Pearl, no one can force us to compromise!”

He persuaded: “Monarch, you should know I can’t decide for Soaring Immortal.”

“Then there’s nothing I can do.” The monarch shook her head: “They can either leave or fight. No need to waste words.”

Jiuzhou took a deep breath and said solemnly: “Monarch, then I must take over Pearl temporarily and sentence you.”

“Ancestor Ye, you want to forcibly seize power?” The monarch’s eyes turned cold.

“I can’t change your mind. Excuse me, then.” He continued stepping towards the government hall.

However, he slowly walked backward when he got closer. At this time, a woman came out from a palace inside. This wondrous beauty was the lord of Heaven Suppression, Zi Cuining!

“City Lord.” Jiuzhou bowed deeply with a respectful attitude.

“Ancestor Ye, rules are rules.” She stated: “You should know that you alone can’t decide who will be in charge of Pearl.”

“City Lord, I’m only doing this for Pearl’s sake.” He had no sign of arrogance.

She shook her head in response: “You have the power in Heaven

Suppression at this moment and can change many things. However, don't forget the ancestral teachings. Pearl is independent of Heaven Suppression. If you want to take over, you need to bring an official decree with the unanimous agreement of all parties and signed by me. Go do that if you want to make the change."

"City lord, you know that I'm not doing it to take over but Soaring Immortal won't give up. This is my way to buy more time, hoping that Pearl will come out fine." He pondered for a moment before answering.

"Fighting against Soaring Immortal is unwise." He added.

"Then what do you think is the wise course of action? Leading the wolves into our home? You know that leading Soaring Immortal to the Grand Sea is the start of a disaster. Once they take roots here, they'll certainly aim for us!" She looked at him and retorted.

He could only sigh after hearing this.

"If you truly want to talk, then fine, tell Gu Zun to come here himself. This started with Gu Zun so let him come to deal with it. I don't care about the underlying goals but he brought Soaring Immortal here, he is responsible for this!" She said solemnly.

# Chapter 1643: The Battle Begins

---

Ye Jiuzhou disagreed and gently shook his head: “City Lord, I still don’t know my master’s whereabouts. His venerable is leisurely traveling so I can’t find him.”

“Then there’s nothing to say.” Zi Cuining uttered coldly: “If Soaring Immortal wants to come, let them come. Pearl isn’t so easily bullied.”

Jiuzhou replied with a calm tone: “City Lord, Soaring Immortal isn’t messing around this time, they are going all out. It won’t just be Ancestor Long alone, even more powerful people will show up. Once they use their full arsenal, even Pearl will turn to ashes.”

“If that is its fate. But regardless of the result, Pearl is ready to face it!” She said.

“Is it worth implicating Pearl just because of a few demons and sea monsters? People will lament because of this decision.” He asked.

“Ancestor Ye, you and I both know that this has nothing to do with them, it is only an excuse. If it wasn’t about them, another excuse would come up. Soaring Immortal’s goal is something different and I’m sure you are aware. Even without Soaring Immortal, you yourself want control over Pearl, same with your master.” She accused.

Jiuzhou eventually replied: “City Lord, it doesn’t matter what you and I think about this power struggle, I personally want to minimize the casualty of our sect. My personal wish is for Heaven Suppression to remain strong. This has never changed.”

“Ancestor Ye, you have always been a contributor to the sect. Ancestor Lu had always brought this up.” She said solemnly: “But if you really want what’s best for Heaven Suppression, then please, convince Gu Zun to give up. We both know that he has been

controlling Suppression from the distant. So many high elders and ancestors are afraid of him while obeying all of his orders.”

Jiuzhou had no response. Even though he was in charge of Heaven Suppression, his master has been giving orders in the shadow. Even without him, his master could still control Heaven Suppression.

Too many high-ranking members in the sect feared and wanted to flatter his master. Because of this, the majority of ancestors and elders were influenced by Gu Zun outside of the few who opposed him.

In the end, Jiuzhou took a deep breath and made up his mind. He gritted his teeth and said formally: “City Lord, let me meet Young Noble Li? I wish to speak to him.”

Cuining shook her head: “Ancestor Ye, he isn’t here right now. Come back another day if you want to see him.”

“City Lord, I’m taking a considerable risk to see Young Noble Li. Please, go send the words.” He hurriedly said.

She shook her head again: “I’m not stopping you from seeing him but he really isn’t in the city right now. I don’t know where he is.”

This made Ye Jiuzhou change his expression and blurted out: “If he isn’t in the city, how can Pearl fight Soaring Immortal?!”

“Ancestor, if you are really worried about Pearl, get Soaring Immortal to withdraw their troops. I don’t care who was in charge in the shadows but don’t forget, you were the one to sign the alliance pact. You are the most suitable person to get them to leave.” She said.

He didn’t have much to say for she was correct. Soaring Immortal wasn’t here for the sea monsters and demons. Their main objective was Li Qiye.

They wanted to force out the dark hand behind the curtain and deal with this mythical existence.

“Ancestor Ye, please leave.” She eventually told him: “The disciples of Pearl will be busy dealing with intruders. We don’t have time to entertain you.”

Jiuzhou couldn’t change anything at this moment unless he were to go against his master’s will. Of course, he would never betray his master.

“City Lord, Bright Monarch, take care. I hope you can protect Pearl.” He gently sighed and cupped his fist towards the two women before leaving quietly.

A while after his departure, a loud bang ensued. Soaring Immortal was waiting for the order. Their disciples were armed with armor and ready to invade Pearl.

At the same time, the disciples inside Pearl were ready to fight to the death in this battle as well.

“Rumble!” A supreme path came and situated in the sky. A youth in great spirit stood above it and looked down at everyone.

“Long Aotian, he’s still alive.” The spectating experts found this surprising.

A few days ago, Aotian was pushed into a different spatial sphere after being struck flying by Fiercest’s annihilations. Everyone thought that he was dead for sure. No one expected him to be alive and well.

“That’s heaven-defying indeed.” People couldn’t help but comment after seeing his lively state.

Everyone knew that after being struck by a Heavenly Annihilation, the lucky survivors would be crippled. Aotian was struck by so many; anyone else would be turned to ashes yet he was still perfectly fine. Even annihilations couldn’t kill him.

“His dao heart is still as tough as before. Looks like there’s no lingering effect from the previous battle.” The experienced big shots from the last generation could still see some clues since



Aotian's vitality and aura were still the same as before.

"I guess there's a reason why he's the successor, no lasting demon in his dao heart." People couldn't help but admire his tenacity.

Fiercest's barrage of annihilation was too much to take, even for someone with a grand completion Immortal Physique. Anyone else would be haunted after this defeat and might choose to never come out again.

Since the start of time, so many arrogant geniuses failed to raise their head again after the first defeat. They would live in seclusion right after, drowned by their own despair. There was no sign of this in Aotian.

"Those who can become emperor all have an indestructible dao heart." An old God-Monarch said emotionally: "Only those who are not afraid of defeat will be the last one smiling. Though Aotian had lost once, he still has a chance."

No one mocked him at this moment. They wouldn't do so either even if he wasn't from Soaring Immortal.

Though he suffered a complete defeat to Fiercest, everyone found that it was nothing to be ashamed about. That was how the fight should have unraveled.

So many emperors have lost in the last millions of years outside of Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng. Even the supreme Empress Hong Tian and the peerless Immortal Emperor Fei have lost before during their youth. Most recently, Immortal Emperor Ta Kong tasted defeat time after time before his ascension.

Aotian's defeat would only be a minor stain to his record. The Denary King still lost in the end, unable to maintain his unbeatable stance.

"Defense!" The monarch shouted an order to the disciples after seeing Aotian.

At the same time, the area on top of her chest lit up and resonated with the Pearl Tower inside the city. It exuded an endless light.

Waterfalls of light descended from the sky. Horizontal beams also emerge around the city and came together with the vertical pillars of light.

In a short time, the tower emitted an expanse of runes among these intertwining rays. It looked like a turtle shell that protected the entire city. Its disciples heaved a sigh of relief after seeing this. Many of them didn't know that the tower could do something like this.

All along, the disciples and citizens here thought that the tower was only a landmark for sightseeing. This was much more magical than expected.

# Chapter 1644: Long Aotians Second Shot

---

The spectators on the horizon held their breath and wondered whether Pearl City can get through this after seeing the defensive perimeter.

Many leaders in the Grand Sea wanted Pearl to make it through this disaster. In their mind, it would be a great morale boost for the other cultivators. At the very least, it would show that Soaring Immortal wasn't unbeatable. Many other lineages would agree to rise against them.

Of course, if Pearl were to fall and become nothing after this battle, it would be a great blow to everyone in this region. At that point, no powers would dare to oppose Soaring Immortal.

Aotian stood on top of his pathway and looked down at Pearl. He said coldly: "Peacock Bright Monarch, it's not too late to hand over the remaining demons and sea monsters or face the consequences."

"Imperial Prince Long, Pearl will not compromise with anyone." The beautiful monarch was heroic at this moment, standing on top of the city wall. She personally presided over the battle like a gallant and charming general.

She continued: "Those who do not violate the rules of Pearl will be allowed to stay for as long as they want. We will not expel anyone or hand them over to any powers. If you have feuds with them, wait until they leave Pearl and settle the score then. But if you want to use force against us, then we shall fight!" She spoke like a true ruler.

"Well said!" Many big shots couldn't help but applaud.

"Looks like you won't cry till you see the coffins." He replied: "Your Pearl City dares to stop us? That's akin to an ant trying to stop an elephant, not knowing your own limitation! If you

surrender now, we will let this go out of consideration for the alliance. Otherwise, we will erase your Pearl City from the Grand Sea.”

The monarch was firm earlier so Aotian didn't show any reservation. He aggressively stated his demand.

The experts at Pearl angrily glared at him. Everyone knew about how strong Soaring Immortal was but Pearl was no slouch either. But now, Aotian treated them as if they were nothing. How could they swallow this anger?

“We'll take you on then.” The monarch's attitude remained the same: “Let fate and the heavens be the deciders!”

The disciples from Pearl felt their blood boiling after the common battle cry and repeated: “That's right, let fate and the heavens be the deciders!”

In just a moment, morale was at an all-time high for Pearl. The disciples wanted to rush out and fight without any intention of compromising or surrendering.

The battle was on the verge of starting but the monarch was still in charge while Zi Cuining was nowhere to be found.

Zi Cuining didn't need to show her face because the monarch was the lord of Pearl. She had the authority to make all the decision while Cuining as the sect master only needed to give her assistance.

“Fine, then I'll personally destroy your city today.” Aotian claimed.

“Such boldness. Long Aotian, you really think your sect can destroy whoever it wants in the Grand Sea?” A loud shout came about: “I, Hai Lin, don't believe it!”

“Boom!” A dragon roar came about. A four claws golden dragon shattered through space and appeared in the sky above Pearl.

There were two people standing on the dragon. The first was a fierce youth while the other was an old man - Hai Lin and Ding Yuanhou.

“They’re here to help Pearl!” Someone shouted at this sight.

People weren’t overly surprised to see the two since Hai Lin was Aotian’s mortal enemy. Aotian destroyed their home and massacred their people. It was an irreconcilable feud.

It was more surprising to see Ding Yuanhou helping Hai Lin. It looks like their relationship was quite deep. Many big shots nearby were slightly shaken to see the reinforcement. It showed that Pearl wasn’t fighting alone and that some people were willing to oppose Soaring Immortal.

“Hai Lin is really an unkillable cockroach, won’t die after so many close calls. If he can survive, his future will be quite good.” One expert smiled wryly after seeing Hai Lin completely recovered.

“Only a loser, can’t reach the apex!” Aotian simply glanced at him and arrogantly mocked.

Aotian didn’t care for Hai Lin. He was only annoyed that Hai Lin was saved by seniors from the sea monster faction again and again before certain peril.

“Long Aotian, with regards to cultivation and power, I am not your match. But it’s not like you haven’t lost either, Brother Li made you run like a dog losing its master.” Hai Lin smiled and said. He didn’t find losing to Aotian shameful at all.

Aotian didn’t like this being brought up. He scowled with murder in his eyes: “A sharp mouth is useless. Come, I’ll teach you another lesson.”

“That’s precisely why we came. Let’s go!” Hai Lin shouted as he soared to the sky with his trident like a dragon.

“Moo!” Yuanhou assumed his true form, a black bull capable of devouring the sky. Its stomp could determine victory and defeat.

“Rawr!” The golden dragon also roared and rushed to the sky with the ability to call for winds and rains on top of creating a tsunami.

In a short time, the three combatants took positions and were ready to fight.

“Mere insects!” Aotian wasn’t afraid at all and yelled. An imperial weapon appeared as he also stepped into the sky vault to fight against the three by himself.

“Rumble!” They fought a star-crushing battle up above and gambled with their lives. Their tyrannical aura assaulted the world.

“The Heaven’s Will is about to come out so the war will be even more devastating. The sky shall be punished like this more often soon.” A big shot who had seen the previous competition murmured.

Successive battles have been fiercer than the previous. Everyone began to get used to such magnificent scenes. They understood that this particular star-crushing fight would become a common sight in the future.

This was because during the competition, the Emperor Candidates, their dao protector, and their sects would go all out especially nearing the end. The nine worlds would tremble at that point!

Aotian wasn’t using the Virtuous Sword but he still had an imperial weapon. Any of them became amazing in his grasp as if an emperor was here in person.

The four of them went all out but they still couldn’t stop him and was forced back continuously. He swept through like a True God with his imperial weapon and his aura rampaged causing the spectators on the horizon to shudder. He was truly ferocious at this moment, causing others to have the urge to submit.

“Soaring Immortal’s successor is really invincible.” Someone commented.

The golden dragon and Ding Yuanhou were considered to be Legendary Godkings. Hai Lin was a bit lacking but he was young and vigorous with ample blood energy. This meant that his battle prowess was incredible. Alas, this was still not enough.

“Wooo-” At this time, the horn to battle resounded from Soaring Immortal.

With loud explosions, their experts joined the battlefield.

“Kill!” Several ten thousands of cavalries rushed towards Pearl like a steely flood. There were plenty of experts among them with the leading commanders being Godkings.

“Rumble!” Their blaring march echoed in the sky and their roars threatened the heavens!

# Chapter 1645: The Magical Pearl Tower

---

With five emperors, Soaring Immortal was a battle-hardened lineage and had experiences beyond others with regards to both battle formations and strategies.

Godkings personally led the cavalries so they came with an unstoppable and majestic momentum. Their auras made many big shots turn pale in the distant.

Their sects wouldn't be able to stop this flood of steel; destruction would be inevitable.

“Rumble!” Powerful weapons began their attack. The world seemed to be exploding with mountains and rivers trampled.

In a short time, the city and even the entire archipelago were shaking. Tsunamis were formed in the process like the ocean was being flipped over.

Such power scared everyone and made them realize just how terrible the legion of Soaring Immortal was. Such a legion could sweep through the world.

“Boom!” Pearl was feeling the effect but it was still fine. An unbelievable scene happened before everyone. The blinding light emitting from Pearl as a defensive barrier nullified all attacks from the legion.

The legion didn't give up after the first failure. They rallied again for an even more powerful attack.

“Boom!” Pearl was shaken this time but still unbroken. The barrier of light had runes flowing through it as if it had experienced the augmentation of an Immortal Emperor.

This astonished the crowd. The big shots watching from far away and Pearl's own disciples were shocked. They didn't think their defensive barrier was so powerful, able to stop Soaring Immortal's offense!



“No wonder why Pearl dared to challenge Soaring Immortal. So they have this power.” Another great character found this surprising.

“Rumble!” Soaring Immortal launched one attack after another but the barrier remained strong.

Despite the shaking territory, the Peacock Bright Monarch could sense the pendant in front of her chest lighting up even more. With Soaring Immortal’s attack becoming stronger, she felt the tower becoming stronger as well.

The little tower inside her mind resonated with her pendant and it exuded a light as well.

At this time, she felt an illusion as if she was becoming one with the tower. She felt it coming back to life and borrowed the power of the earth using her vitality.

Its supreme laws and her grand dao created a bridge to connect their power. The stronger she was, the stronger the tower would be. She never felt this before; this was like an awakening to her. There was another grand dao inside the tower waiting for her to comprehend.

The failed attacks made Soaring Immortal pause their advance.

“Is the cavalry giving up?” A spectator commented.

However, their disciples took out some strange metallic items. Who knows which metals they were made from but each piece had been refined and was full of power.

“Click, clack!” After the disciples laid out the foundation, the items actually put themselves together at an increasingly faster pace.

“Clank!” In just a short time after the metal pieces came together, a huge giant appeared before the world.

“Click, clack!” A total of eight giants were formed with the same

process in eight different directions around Pearl.

What shocked people the most was that their body was engraved with many perfect Immortal Emperor Refined Jades! Each piece of jade was spewing out an immortal energy. They were bright and desired by everyone in the world.

“What are those things?” Another person yelled in astonishment.

“They must be sieging weapons, powered by Immortal Emperor Refined Jades.” One God-Monarch speculated: “They either came from emperors or some other invincible beings in Soaring Immortal.”

“Rumble!” While people were wondering what they are, the eight steel giants began their attack on Pearl.

Their hands turned into rapidly rotating drills. They came from the sky with an all-breaking momentum to attack the bright barrier. In the blink of an eye, the archipelago seemed to have been pushed deeper into the ocean.

A large area on the barrier was slightly pushed down, nearly being penetrated.

Fortunately, this barrier was extremely powerful. The eight giants still couldn't pierce through it but some cracks have appeared on the affected locations.

The disciples in Pearl who were relieved just now felt their heart hanging on a thread again.

Luckily, the Pearl Tower's light became even more binding. All the cracks came together again.

“Just who the heck created this tower? It can actually stop Soaring Immortal.” Many became startled after seeing this.

Other great powers wouldn't have been to handle this. Their defensive lines would have crumbled but not Pearl.

Someone reminded the crowd: “Don't forget, the Black Dragon

King reigned for three generations. Would he be able to do so without some invincible means? The three emperors were very respectful to him so one could easily imagine his strength. In my opinion, this tower definitely came from the king. Only someone of his level could create such an amazing barrier!”

People found this comment to be reasonable. Alas, the truth was the tower came from the Dark Crow. There was a great secret inside the tower. Moreover, some of the construction materials came from the Crystalfowl Immortal Mine!

The leftovers from the mine were used to create the tower. Despite being called leftovers by Li Qiye, they were extremely precious to the world.

“Rumble!” The eight giants went all out like the storm. They must pierce through Pearl’s barrier. Since they were empowered by imperial jades, they had enough power source to attack without rest. This was Soaring Immortal’s amazing sieging weapons. During a siege, the attackers would feel fatigue eventually. However, these giants could go on forever as long as there were enough jades to fuel them.

For other great powers, imperial jades were too precious but they were nothing in Soaring Immortal’s eyes.

The monarch was clearly affected as the giants raged on. She continuously faltered with her strength wavering.

The giants were directly shaking the tower. As the master of the tower, her grand dao and strength were directly connected to the tower. Thus, she felt the pressure as well.

“No time to play around with you three!” Long Aotian noticed something while fighting in the sky against Hai Lin’s group. He unleashed an invincible blow with his imperial weapon and pierced the sky. Darkness ensued and the three couldn’t withstand this attack at all. They were blown away towards the horizon; their fate unknown.

# Chapter 1646: Immortals Blood Spear

---

After blowing Hai Lin's group away, a buzzing noise came from Aotian's body as his body became resplendent just like the blinding sun.

In this split second, he had pushed his physique to its limit and soared for Pearl City. He wanted to use this extraordinary speed to cross through the defensive barrier.

"Boom!" Long Aotian was imperceptibly fast. When the two sides collided, the barrier sank far down but he still couldn't break through it.

"Boom!" Next, he went flying from the resulting push-back.

"That barrier is too strong, even Aotian isn't fast enough to get past it?" Many people were astounded to see this.

Aotian glanced at the barrier before turning to leave into the crevice of the sky.

"What is he doing?" One cultivator couldn't believe it: "Is he giving up?"

He didn't think this was right. Aotian wasn't someone who gives up so easily, same with Soaring Immortal.

"More, he needs a bigger distance." A Godking used his heavenly gaze to look at the sky. Only people of this level were able to understand.

"It's starting." Another old Godking murmured after knowing Aotian's intention.

The rest of the crowd couldn't see anything so they were lost.

The old Godking was right. Long Aotian wanted to use an extremely long distance since it was no problem for his physique. As long as he had enough space, he would be able to exert the ultimate speed in this world, capable of surpassing everything,

even time itself.

Though many cultivators didn't know what he was doing, they could sense it because time seemed to have skipped a beat in this particular instance.

In the blink of an eye, everything in the world became slow. Everyone could see a faint shadow but they knew it was Aotian.

Next, the stagnation disappeared. Time was flowing normally again but the situation was different.

People could see Long Aotian was grabbing the monarch by the neck. Without a doubt, the supreme genius had found a clue and knew that the barrier was closely related to the monarch. Only by capturing her would they be able to solve the barrier problem.

“Whoosh! Bang!” Finally, the sound of him crossing through the area finally caught up with remnant shadows. Many finally saw Aotian piercing through the barrier but this had happened a while ago.

He was unreasonably fast. The monarch was quite powerful but she couldn't evade him. Being gripped by the neck rendered her out of breath with her blood energy running amok. The light in Pearl Tower turned dim immediately.

“Bang!” The eight giants finally broke through the defensive barrier. The dome broke down into little pieces of light.

“Kill!” The members from Soaring Immortal roared after seeing this rare opportunity and immediately jumped into the city.

“Fight!” The disciples from Pearl didn't relent and also maintained their position to fend off the enemies.

“Pearl is finished.” Aotian sneered.

Alas, in a split second, the pendant in front of the monarch's chest exuded a boundless light. People couldn't keep their eyes opened.

Her forehead flashed and a little tower appeared with a terrible storm. Even someone like Aotian couldn't imprison her any longer. His five fingers were aching and had to let go of the prince. A split second later, the monarch used an unbelievable speed to retreat.

He snorted and used his Immortal Physique again to leap towards her. In his mind, she was no match for him in terms of agility even if she was faster.

However, he only took the first step before hastily running backward. At this second, his intuition was telling him that something dangerous was coming. He fortified his stance and crushed the earth behind him.

He looked up and saw a woman standing before the monarch. She was supreme and transcending just like the goddess of the sea!

Zi Cuining stood there with a spear in her hand. It was red with a flashing bloody glow. Even a character like Aotian was horrified by its appearance as if it could pierce through his neck at any moment.

Keep in mind that very few things could scare him to this level but this spear managed to do so. It didn't matter how strong he was, the tip of this weapon could still easily pierce his throat.

He suddenly had a thought - this spear wasn't only capable of piercing him. Even an Immortal Emperor would become its victim.

The spectators in the horizon felt a chill by their throat. It didn't matter that they were so far away. The moment they saw the flashing tip of the spear, they still became suffocated with their legs turning weak.

This spear was simply too horrifying especially when Zi Cuining was the user. It seemed as if nothing could stop it. It was a sure-kill weapon!

“What is that weapon?” An old Godking murmured in a daze.

Immortal's Blood Spear, once known as the Black Dragon Spear. No one could stare at this weapon and remain composed. The blood there seemed to be from an Immortal Emperor.

After stopping Long Aotian, Zi Cuining told the monarch: "Go protect the city, leave this to me."

The monarch acknowledged the order and turned to leave. With a buzz, the Pearl Tower lit up again with its dazzling light.

"Ahh!" Miserable screams resounded. During the skirmish, the Soaring Immortal Sect still had the upper hand. Even though Pearl had the number advantage, it couldn't stop this sect. Many disciples were forced back while the city lost many key areas.

Blood stained the earth. So many pavilions were broken with holes appearing on the walls.

"Go!" At this moment, Hai Lin's group of three joined the battle. Hai Lin had his trident and fought against a Godking. The golden dragon roared and tore apart the enemies. Ding Yuanhou in his bull form rampaged everywhere and crushed groups of combatants.

Because of their presence, the situation turned for the better for Pearl City. The survivors from the demon race and sea monster faction fought together with the Pearl disciples. In their mind, Pearl was their last haven. If Pearl were to fall, there would be nowhere left for them to go in the Grand Sea.

"Whoosh!" The monarch was controlling the tower again with its boundless light. Rays poured down on each of the disciples from Pearl. In a short time, it looked as if they had a new armor made out of light. This was the protective blessing from the tower.

"Kill!" They regained their morale and battle intent. Even though they were no match for the enemies, they still rushed forward and wished to take down as many as possible before dying.

Meanwhile, Zi Cuining was stopping Long Aotian on the city

wall. With the spear in her hand, a murderous aura was born as she stood upright like a general that had killed countless enemies. The spear continued to instill fear into its enemies.

“Clank!” The heaven’s favorite didn’t dare to underestimate the enemy. A sword hymn echoed in the sky. He slowly unsheathed the Virtuous Sword with an austere expression.



# Chapter 1647: Bare Hands, Still Unstoppable

---

With the Virtuous Sword ready for battle, Aotian became much more confident with an imperial aura erupting and surrounding his body. It looked as if he was wearing the armor of an emperor, allowing him to be the sole master of the nine heavens.

Despite his surging will to battle, he was still cautious and gazing at the Immortal's Blood Spear.

Back in the fight earlier against Hai Lin's group, he still used an imperial weapon, albeit an ordinary life treasure.

But that wouldn't do any longer against Zi Cuining and her spear. Aotian had to take out the Virtuous Sword because he would be the one to taste bitterness by underestimating her.

"Heaven Suppression Goddess! The City Lord!" Many cultivators were shocked to see her.

In a short time, they glanced at each other and felt that this was quite bizarre.

The alliance between the two sects was known by everyone but now, Pearl and Soaring Immortal were in battle. It was one thing for Pearl to be independent but even the current master of Heaven Suppression was fighting against Long Aotian.

More importantly, this was a marriage alliance determined by the seniors of both sides. This made people think about Fiercest taking the bride away and this ignited their gossip side.

"Looks like the goddess wants to follow Fiercest and doesn't care for the marriage. No wonder why she is going against Long Aotian. That's why Pearl is going up against Soaring Immortal too because they have her as their backing." One youth stated.

"That's Fiercest for you, stealing other people's wives so easily. This level of marriage alliance is really a big deal but Fiercest doesn't give a damn. More importantly, the goddess is smitten

with him. His charm really has no bounds.” Another youth began to admire Fiercest.

A different cultivator who had visited Eastern Hundred Cities in the Grand Middle Territory also said with envy: “Fiercest isn’t only ferocious but he’s also very charming as well. I heard Fairy Mei and Sword Goddess Bai follow all of his orders. Other princesses are also head over heels for him. What more can a man ask for?”

In a short time, many youths were envious or even jealous of him. Just marrying any of the girls above would be the accumulation of good karma from three generations. But now, Fiercest had so many. How could they not be jealous?

“Sister, don’t forget about the agreement between our sects.” Long Aotian said slowly while looking at Cuining.

Aotian wasn’t embarrassed about the bride-stealing incident but he didn’t wish to dwell on it either. It was a political marriage without any romance so he didn’t mind.

“Imperial Prince Long, the moment you attacked Pearl, our agreement is no longer effective, at least in my eyes!” Cuining said.

“But Heaven Suppression is still our ally.” Long Aotian fiercely said.

“Gu Zun does not represent my Heaven Suppression.” She said slowly: “This is all his doing. If you want to show goodwill to my sect, then send back your troops or we shall be enemies!”

“Then we have nothing to say.” Aotian shook his head with a firm attitude: “This isn’t something you or I can decide. However, keep in mind that the path towards the throne is cruel. If you stand in my way, I will kill you.”

Aotian was an extraordinary person. In his mind, the grand dao was the most important; romance was insignificant. It didn’t matter whether he liked her or not, he wouldn’t show any mercy

towards anyone standing in his way.

He had the right qualities to become an emperor - the right mindset, firm dao heart, and an unyielding determination to never look back.

“Very well, I’ll have a look at your techniques then.” Zi Cuining responded strongly without any fear!

“So be it!” Aotian fiercely proclaimed: “No one will hinder my step today, I shall flatten your city!”

“Clank!” A tsunami rushed out from the Virtuous Sword. Just its reflection alone could flip over the stars in the sky.

“Boom!” Aotian had yet to attack but a foot came from the sky with an unstoppable momentum, capable of suppressing all the realms.

Aotian’s expression dimmed down after seeing this foot and had to unleash a sword strike to stop the tyrannical stomp.

“Bang!” His amazing sword strike, incredible vitality, and supreme style were useless. He slammed into the city wall and was buried by the rubbles.

“Eat this!” In the next second, he suddenly appeared in the sky with an unbelievable speed. No one saw how he got out of the rubbles or slashed.

“Clank!” The strike split apart the primordial chaos, the galaxy, and the myriad dao with its incomparable sharpness. Godkings would be decapitated and the gods trembled in fear before this move.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” With a loud series of explosions, twelve fists instantly became one. This move crushed through everything and slammed into the sword strike.

The sky vault shattered instantly under this contest. A terrible black hole appeared. This would be an indelible mark on the sky

for years to come.

Everything became dark. It took a while before the light came back. Everyone saw two people standing in the sky, one was Long Aotian.

“Fiercest! Fiercest is here!” A spectator shouted after seeing the other person.

The atmosphere became tense. All eyes became excited and the battle in Pearl could no longer hold their attention. Everyone only cared about Fiercest and Long Aotian as well as the second battle between them.

“So strong, fighting against an imperial weapon with his fist.” The last generation took a deep breath after seeing this.

It wasn't like this was unprecedented. But this particular weapon was different. It was the Virtuous Sword that could even deter Legendary Godkings. They wouldn't think about fighting it with their bare hands.

However, just his one fist alone could stop the sword. Just how tough and terrible was it? People became creeped out and felt that his fist could match any weapon in this world.

“Li Qiye!” Aotian's bloodthirst erupted.

The two of them wouldn't share the same sky. For Aotian, he needed to kill Li Qiye in order to become an emperor or it would be far out of his reach. However, even if he were to somehow become one but Li Qiye was still alive, the guy would forever be a shadow and a threat in his mind.

Thus, one of them must die for Aotian to have peace again!

Li Qiye looked at him and smiled leisurely: “You got well pretty fast after just several days. Looks like the medicine in your sect isn't bad.”

Aotian simply snorted. Being struck into a different dimension by

Li Qiye was his first taste of defeat. However, Aotian didn't crumble or lost his self-confidence because of it. His dao heart became even tougher; he wanted to challenge the guy again and thought that Li Qiye would only be a paving pebble on his path towards the throne. This would make his journey even more complete and perfect.

“Not a bad dao heart, it's no wonder why you have your current achievements.” Li Qiye glanced at him and smiled.

He was praising the boy. Many would have apprehension after losing to him once but there was only a negligible effect on Aotian. It showed how tough his dao heart was. It wasn't a coincidence that he could become the successor of Soaring Immortal. His talents and dao heart together made him who he is.

# Chapter 1648: Long Aotians Strategy

---

Long Aotian and Li Qiye were hovering in the sky. Aotian's eyes were sharp enough to pierce through all things while Li Qiye stood there leisurely as if he was only facing a random stranger on the street.

The countless spectators held their breath. They knew that a great battle was coming and ruminated about the victor.

“Li Qiye! You are about to become a skeleton on my imperial path!” Aotian stared at him and uttered coldly.

Each word was sonorous and powerful. They represented his undying will to kill Li Qiye.

This prompted Li Qiye to shake his head and smile: “You alone won't do. Despite having a grand completion physique, your power is still far lacking compared to a real Emperor Assailant.”

“There's no way.” The experts nearby became skeptics. Everyone knew that grand completion users could become Emperor Assailants. His statement went against the common belief.

“Hmph!” Aotian snorted without agreeing or retorting.

“No need to be unconvinced.” Li Qiye smiled cheerfully: “Triple saint talents and the arts of five emperors, those are incredible achievements. Unfortunately, you have been too hasty and forcefully reaching grand completion before the perfection of your grand dao. This resulted in flaws within your physique, something that can't be fixed even if you were to become an emperor. With your current strength, you can't handle one thousand moves against one. Even five hundred moves might be challenging.”

This statement made the crowd ponder and looked at each other. They felt that there was something else to this common belief. They thought that grand completion users could assail an emperor but maybe this wasn't the case?

“So what?” Aotian was unperturbed: “The grand dao is endless. I can make up for this flaw after becoming one!”

Aotian was completely confident even after losing the first time. In his eyes, the throne was his for sure due to his incredible strength and peerless achievements.

“Being confident is not a bad thing.” Li Qiye smiled and said: “It shows your ambition and will to surpass the former sages including the emperors from your sect. You believe that you will become an emperor stronger than them or even become someone comparable to your progenitor, Immortal Emperor Fei...”

“And then?” Aotian uttered coldly. He wasn’t in a rush to attack and kill since Li Qiye was the only rival at this level.

“I’m not looking down on you.” Li Qiye shook his head: “Even if I let you become an emperor, with your current state, you can’t surpass Immortal Emperor Tun Ri and Immortal Emperor Ba Mie. Your talents might be better than Immortal Emperor Tun Ri but you have been too impatient, unable to calm down. The best you can be is an average emperor.”

The crowd was surprised to see the two mortal enemies talking. They thought a battle would break out upon sight but this was only a discussion about Immortal Emperors. Perhaps only people at their level would understand their train of thoughts.

“Hah, I’m afraid you won’t live to see that day.” Aotian was unaffected and sneered: “After I step on your body, you’ll see what kind of emperor I shall become.”

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Still a firm dao heart. Fine, I’ll take you down again. We’ll see how many defeats are necessary before your dao heart is affected.”

Aotian snorted in response: “Li Qiye, the one shaken will be you!”

“Rumble!” A huge portal appeared in the sky with people rushing out. This was another legion of ten thousand men, enough to

instill fear into the crowd.

It was a forest of armors and spears. The soldiers stood upright with a murderous aura and battle intent, even the ocean would lament before their might. This was a legion of steel, capable of crushing everything.

The swift teleportation of ten thousand troops showed just how amazing Soaring Immortal was with their resources. This type of forces seemed so common to them.

“Boom!” In the blink of an eye, loud explosions shattered the sky. Five Godkings came out of nowhere. They were extremely old with white hair and despite their withered lifespan, their eyes were still spirited with the flames of Godking. Inside their eyes were the derivation of the grand dao’s myriad laws. A boundless power was being cultivated within.

The five Godkings didn’t hide their aura at all and let it roam free like a disaster-level tsunami. It slammed into the sky and ferociously shattered all the stars above.

The five Godkings immediately surrounded Li Qiye with Long Aotian and blocked all of his escape paths.

Li Qiye was still all-smiles: “Hmph, the quality is a bit bad with imperfect dao foundation, but this is indeed the first step into the Legendary Godking level. Of course, the five of you are only poor imitations compared to the real things.”

The five Godkings glared at him with terrible bloodthirst. They were Legendary Godkings yet Li Qiye called them poor imitations. This really drove them crazy but since they came from Soaring Immortal, they could still remain relatively calm. The moment Li Qiye made the slightest action, they would deliver the fatal blow.

“Legendary Godkings!” The sect masters nearby felt a chill running down their spine after hearing this.

For a great power, it was already amazing to have a Godking. A



Legendary Godking would be the prized jewel of the sect. Now, Soaring Immortal had five of them appearing out of thin air. This was enough power to flatten any lineage in the Grand Sea with the exception of Heaven Suppression.

This gave everyone a new perspective on Soaring Immortal's legacy. It was much more frightening, beyond their imagination.

However, Li Qiye's comment left them speechless as well. These were Legendary Godkings that would be respected no matter where they were and there were five of them. Alas, he was calling them poor imitations, as if such Godkings couldn't get into his sight and not worth mentioning.

They could only smile helplessly. It wasn't their first time experiencing his domineering and arrogant style.

"One isn't enough so gotta increase the number now?" Li Qiye looked at Aotian and smiled.

"No, I only want you to watch those on your side die a miserable death! If they have chosen you, then let them die a meaningful death. You will only be able to stand and watch each of them being killed one by one!"

The crowd was frightened upon this declaration. They could imagine rivers of blood and mountains of bones scattering all around Pearl along with wails of torment!

They understood that Soaring Immortal and Long Aotian wanted to make an example out of Li Qiye. This was a warning to everyone in this world that those who stood by Fiercest would be destroyed mercilessly!

The scared spectators thought that if they were to make a choice at this moment, no one would pick Fiercest's side.

"Let's see how long you can watch and if your dao heart can remain strong under this massacre." Aotian sneered with a terrible murderous glint in his eyes!

This was also a way to take Li Qiye down. That's why he had five Legendary Godkings trapping the guy. It could be said that he wasn't in a rush to kill Li Qiye. His goal was to torture him by letting him watch his friends die. This was a way to affect his dao heart.

Meanwhile, the crowd found themselves thinking that being enemy with Aotian was a very scary thing.

# Chapter 1649: Undying Soldiers

---

Li Qiye couldn't help but smile while looking at the five Legendary Godkings and the legion: "Looks like you don't understand me at all, same with the ancestors backing you up. This is really disappointing, Soaring Immortal producing some idiots. Your forefather, Immortal Emperor Ren Xian, was a visionary. Who would have thought that his descendants would be a bunch of fools?"

"Kill!" Aotian shouted with no needs for more words. He wanted to use action to harm Li Qiye and let the world know the fate of those who oppose him. It wouldn't only end in death, even friends and families were going to be killed as well.

"Kill!" The legion from Soaring Immortal responded to his order. They rushed for Pearl like an unstoppable flood.

"Clang, clang, clang..." The warning bells echoed across the city as the inhabitants fell into a terrible panic.

"Fight!" The disciples from Pearl also let out a battle cry. They had no other choices; it was either fighting to the death or running and be killed. Thus, they dashed ahead in order to desperately face their foes.

"Rumble!" The world and Pearl continued to shake. Pearl was a city that could disappear in this storm of crisis at any moment.

It was already having a hard time dealing with the first legion from Soaring Immortal and was forced back continuously. Now, another legion of the same strength made resistance even harder. Screams and blood scattered across the city. The defensive lines inside the city crumbled instantly so the remaining troops fell back to the central area.

"Li Qiye, open your eyes and watch the destruction of Pearl. Get used to this feeling since you have Soaring Mortal as an enemy."

Aotian coldly uttered.

“Soaring Immortal, only a bunch of fools.” Li Qiye shook his head: “Come now, Azure Dragon, it’s your time to roar and protect the nine worlds. Let them taste your rage!”

“Boom!” The sky shattered with a battle platform. It instantly teleported a legion to this place.

This legion was surrounded with primordial chaos and an ancient yet vigorous aura. It seemed to have been buried for millions of years. The soldiers all wore an azure scaled armor with an Azure Dragon raising its claws embroidered on the front. These dragons were extremely tyrannical, capable of tearing apart everything.

The legion itself was the sharpest spear with nothing in this world capable of stopping its thrust. Even imperial legions and emperors could fall prey to its sharpness.

The legions from Soaring Immortal looked like greenhorns compared to this legion. This became even more apparent after seeing the important old soldiers in this legion. Their eyes were cold without any sign of fear. Even when an emperor stood before them, they would still raise their spear and take the vanguard. They dared to fight against any existence in the world. It was as if they were natural-born warriors with experience added at this point.

Their war banners fluttered in the sky. It was also the same image of an Azure Dragon. It looked like it wanted to fly out of the flag to tear apart its enemies.

When this legion appeared, the nine worlds turned cold. People shuddered everywhere regardless of who they might be. Even the god of war would still feel fear.

“Aooo!” The legion landed and rushed towards the other two legions from Soaring Immortal with the cry of a dragon.

“Ah!” Skulls went flying amidst the wails. Blood spurted everywhere before this war machine, the harvester of skulls. They fought to kill with every single technique. Their murderous bloodthirst and wanton regards for their own safety were the scariest aspects of their combat.

“No!” Screams continued endlessly. Even Godkings were lamenting as their head went flying with their eyes wide opened. This was the most terrifying legion they had ever seen.

The draconic legion rampaged across the battlefield like a true dragon. The other two legions couldn't slow it down at all.

The old soldiers in the legion were even more incredible. Five old soldiers formed a team that could instantly put an end to a Godking in a scene of carnage.

The crowd was shocked to see this. In their mind, Godkings were supreme existences but just these old teams were enough to tear their body apart.

The scariest part was the expression on these old soldiers. Their dismembering and decapitating techniques were flawless. It looked as if they weren't operating on humans, only helpless livestock.

“Ah!” The disciples from Pearl weren't the ones screaming any longer. In a short time, the harvest continued and there were few left in the Soaring Immortal legions.

The strongest cultivators among the spectators were afraid as well. They would find it difficult to forget this battle for the rest of their lives.

“Clank!” The clanging of metals continued. While the legion was killing the disciples, a halberd strike came out of nowhere and aimed for the five Legendary Godkings trapping Li Qiye.

“Kill!” The five Godkings reacted swiftly with enough power to flatten the heavens. Crazy imperial laws crushed space and time.

However, this particular metallic clanking had a strange rhythm

to it. It crushed all the imperial laws even though they came from Legendary Godkings.

The halberd continued with a godslaying momentum. The moment this strike came out, everything was a foregone conclusion.

“Open!” The five Godkings worked together to unleash a tyrannical move. A divine wall that had surpassed all physical limits appeared to stop all attacks.

However, the halberd slammed into the wall and instantly penetrated it.

“Pluff!” More blood came out. The five Legendary Godkings had their throat pierced. They were still lost in disbelief. They were five Legendary Godkings working together yet they still couldn’t stop this halberd!

Aotian was shocked to see this as well. His grand completion Soaring Physique reacted even faster. His Virtuous Sword slashed through the sky with a devastating imperial aura. It was a Heavenly Annihilation.

“Boom!” The annihilation turned the world dark. The sun in the sky was blotted out. It looked as if the end of the world was coming.

“Clank!” The impact resounded across the entire Mortal Emperor World. Just this sound alone seemed to be eternal like a supreme authority in existence. Nothing could shake it!

The annihilation was stopped by the halberd, resulting in fiery sparks flying everywhere and shattered the stars. The initially dark sky was brilliant with the new fireworks.

Ordinary cultivators dropped to the ground, paralyzed. They simply couldn’t withstand this aura. Even Godkings lost their colors and felt completely worthless before this power.

“Is that the attack from an Immortal Emperor?” In this split

second, everyone had the illusion that an emperor was around.

“Clank!” The halberd suddenly moved and reversed the universe with it. This next strike was simply unstoppable.

“Boom!” Long Aotian went flying for more than ten thousand miles and vomited blood under the pressure of the halberd.

# Chapter 1650: Worldkeeper True God

---

Everyone was stunned by this shocking scene. The five Legendary Godkings from Soaring Immortal have been slain in no time at all. Even Long Aotian with his grand completion physique lost after just one move. How terrifying was this character?

This was the reason why everyone thought the newcomer was an emperor.

In the corner of their eyes was an old man with an austere expression. His face seemed to have been polished by time itself. In the end, nothing could ever change it again. Each feature and lines were clearly defined.

He was riding a divine stallion. Despite being made from bronze, it was full of life and its muscles were animated. The old man didn't have a frightening aura or a sky-engulfing vitality. He simply stood there in the sky and time seemed to have been frozen.

No one could ever get past him or even think about defeating him. He was the most fortified line of defense in the world. Nobody knew the origin of this old man, not even the most knowledgeable Godking.

“Child, your cultivation is not bad.” The old man looked at Long Aotian and said slowly: “Unfortunately, the only person who can fight me from your sect is Asura. The rest won't be able to stop a single blow!”

People listened attentively to each of his words. They didn't know who Asura was but this must be a terrifying character as well.

In this world, how many would actually dare to make this statement? Even Long Aotian was aghast to hear this since he certainly knew who Asura was.

Forefather Asura was once the strongest among their old



ancestors. Some ancestors in his sect once said that outside of Immortal Emperors, if Forefather Asura wasn't the strongest, he would still at least be second place!

Due to having such a powerful existence as his dao protector and stood up for him, Immortal Emperor Ren Xian was able to come out to win the throne.

Unfortunately, even this powerful forefather couldn't survive the tribulation of time. In the end, his lifespan withered and he left this world!

Right now, this old man had just said that only Forefather Asura could fight him from Soaring Immortal. He could easily imagine how strong the old man was.

"May I ask who you are?" Long Aotian took a calming breath before speaking with a serious expression.

"Worldkeeper True God." The old man said flatly without too many thoughts.

Worldkeeper True God! Many experts glanced at each other after hearing this title. Even the Godkings from the last generation haven't heard of it before.

However, inside the depth of one imperial lineage, an extremely ancient old man sat up from shock. His profound eyes became dazed as he murmured: "Worldkeeper! He's actually still alive. This is a surviving True God from the Immortal Slaying War! An ancient legend but there is only one existence in this world that can summon him!"

Having thought to this point, this undying existence shuddered and immediately climbed back into his coffin without saying anything else.

"Worldkeeper!" Long Aotian was astounded and took a step back in horror.

He had heard of this name before since he was the successor of

his amazing sect. This was a name full of legends.

Worldkeeper! How many people would dare to claim this magnificent title on top of the True God designation? But both of these things were part of this old man's title.

This was an existence with an extremely precious bloodline, an old general that had participated in the Immortal Slaying War and still managed to survive.

"I'm not here to harvest your lives so I won't trouble you any further." The true god looked at Long Aotian then glanced at some hidden people in the sky and said leisurely: "If your sect still has some imperial princes who think they are amazing, then go for it already. In this generation, my Azure Dragon Legion has received the order of his Excellency and shall trample your sect!"

His tone was calm but the content was domineering. Anyone would feel a chill after hearing the old man's declaration towards Soaring Immortal.

"Ah!" This was the last of the screamings. The legion had finished sweeping through the entire battlefield and eliminated all enemies. Not a single man from Soaring Immortal was left alive.

They then stopped inside Pearl. The guards from Pearl trembled while looking at them, especially the cold eyes of the older soldiers. They kept on walking backward and didn't dare to look into their eyes. There was a sharpness within that could pierce the heart, a truly nightmare-inducing endeavor.

"Boom!" In a trice, the entire legion left Pearl and floated to the sky. They lined up in an orderly fashion in front of Li Qiye.

Meanwhile, Aotian calmed himself and knew what kind of legion he was facing. It wasn't shameful for their legions to lose to this one so quickly because this was a force that had participated in an ancient war. They have even massacred the most terrifying race of them all, the Ancient Ming!

This legendary legion worked together with the old sages of the nine worlds to destroy the Dragon Ming Ancient Dynasty and stopped their reign.

“Very well, we will meet again and my sect will have our payback!” Aotian solemnly said. With that, he instantly disappeared into the horizon.

In his eyes, they have lost this battle completely! However, they were still fine since they had another powerful legion!

At this time, the true god jumped down from his stallion and came before Li Qiye. He kneeled down without saying anything.

“Whoosh!” All of the soldiers from Azure Dragon formally kneeled down before Li Qiye.

This scene shocked so many people. Some felt their blood boiling while looking at this invincible legion. However, it was submitting to Li Qiye at this moment. Any man who could stand at such a glorious position would feel an uncontainable excitement. There wouldn't be more to ask of life.

“Azure Dragon protects the Son of Heaven. One hundred fight to slaughter the immortal!” The true god's voice echoed across Mortal Emperor and deterred all existences. The nine worlds trembled once more.

“Azure Dragon protects the Son of Heaven. One hundred fight to slaughter the immortal!” Each soldier shouted in unison and threatened the world again. All existences would shudder before their rallying cry.

When Azure Dragon's horns sounded again for their second glorious coming, the world should brace itself. Everyone in the crowd was shaken, either from horror or astonishment.

Li Qiye felt the corners of his eyes moistening while looking at the legion and the old soldiers that have survived the previous war.

“Azure Dragon protects the Son of Heaven. One hundred fight to

slaughter the immortal.” He said slowly: “The old valorous shall be undying, Azure Dragon shall be eternal!”

“The old valorous shall be undying, Azure Dragon shall be eternal!” The young ones in the legion applauded while the older soldiers with their austere expression shouted as well. They inevitably became sentimental.

Back in those years, they fought against the Ancient Ming and risked their lives together. Now, they were finally back under the banners of the Azure Dragon Legion, back before His Excellency. They shall see glory again in this generation by protecting the nine worlds!

Li Qiye’s frozen heart felt warm after seeing each of the old soldiers’ face. He secretly wiped away his tears, not wanting others to see his moment of weakness.

Next, he placed his palm on the true god’s head and stated: “All of you are my pride, my reason for arrogance! Rise, no need for formality.”

The entire legion stood up with the true good. The old soldiers stared at Li Qiye while trying to carve his appearance into their mind.

Li Qiye had done the same for them in the past. These were comrades who fought alongside him, stained with blood.

He had buried many soldiers and brothers. He once watched their blood flow on the ground. They have experienced the cruelest and hardest period during the dark era of the Ancient Ming. They laughed loudly together and cried quietly together...

# Chapter 1651: Legend Of Azure Dragon

---

Any lineage and big shot would be overwhelmed with chills while looking at such a legion.

Soaring Immortal's troops were completely massacred in a short time. Moreover, the older soldiers from Azure Dragon dismembered Godkings as if they were mere cattle. That was the frightening part.

It was unfortunate that not too many people knew about this ancient legion. Those who once knew about it have returned to the earth.

"Azure Dragon Legion." However, some were still alive. In a sect with three emperors, an ancestor woke up while sitting on his throne inside a palace deep within. He focused his gaze at the Grand Sea and felt his hair standing on end after seeing the legion.

"The Ancient Ming Race turned to ashes after the Immortal Slaying War because the Azure Dragon Legion and the wise sages of the nine worlds surrounded and slaughtered the Dragon Ming Dynasty. During that period, the Ancient Ming had many supports so Azure Dragon took the vanguard to stop their waves of reinforcement with blood. This particular battle lasted for forty-nine days. The earth was covered by a bloody paste and in the end, Azure Dragon with sheer determination protected the last defensive line to stop any reinforcement. Finally, Immortal Emperor Long Ming was crucified on a peak. The screams of an emperor echoed across the nine worlds. That might be the most terrifying thing in all the ages. The emperor of that arrogant race was actually killed during their own era..."

"That battle astounded the inhabitants of the nine worlds. It was the fruit from the wise sages working together. However, without the Azure Dragon Legion, it wouldn't have been as easy to massacre that dynasty, let alone killing their emperor!"

This particular ancestor became emotional while thinking about the old war with heartfelt admiration for Azure Dragon and their tyrannical heroism.

How many lineages dared to accept such a risky order during the Ancient Ming's reign but Azure Dragon accepted this responsibility and completed it without letting anyone down.

In a different sacred ground, another eternal existence woke up and gazed at the legion: "The first, Azure Dragon Legion, the most amazing legion in the world, daring to fight against the Ancient Ming when no one else did. Alas, their casualty was too great. So many brave generals and soldiers fell in that battle so they could only retire afterward. Otherwise, it wouldn't be Soaring Immortal's turn to do whatever they want now. Just Azure Dragon alone would easily sweep through Soaring Immortal."

In the Barren Earth, a dying old man in an ancient clan sat up with tears in his eyes the moment he saw the legion.

"Azure Dragon protects the Son of Heaven. One hundred fight to slaughter the immortal!" He murmured: "It is a shame that I only have one breath left or I shall contribute for His Excellency again on the battlefield. For glory!"

"The old valorous shall be undying, Azure Dragon shall be eternal!" The old man quietly mumbled as tears dripped down his cheeks.

Back in those dark years, they weathered through perils together. With no fear of death, everyone held the last line of defense without a single thought of giving up!

The phrase was their battle cry and their symbol. It represented their entire will and determination. As long as they were still alive, they would protect their prince and the last line of defense for the nine worlds.

Their ambition was to protect his Excellency and the nine worlds

on top of killing the Ancient Ming's emperor!

They worked towards these goals from beginning to end. Ultimately, they finally did it with the death of Immortal Emperor Long Ming by cutting off the reinforcements. Their illustrious battle exploits were built on their blood and tears.

They shocked the world with the battle today. Though no one had heard of the previously, the name, "Azure Dragon", will be repeated everywhere henceforth. People were speechless even while others felt great admiration for the legion.

After the battle, the legion camped inside Pearl. The city was completely quiet and no one would dare to step inside. Many big shots were terrified to see the older soldiers in the legion. Their legs would uncontrollably tremble.

Meanwhile, inside the main hall of Pearl, Li Qiye and Wordkeeper sat together. After so many years, the master and servant were together again.

"Though you can't live for another generation, you are still vigorous enough. Your vitality isn't as strong as your peak but it isn't much weaker." Li Qiye looked at the true god and smiled.

"It is all because of the love you have shown me, Your Excellency." The true god smiled back: "If you didn't bestow immortal treasures to me, allowing me to recover, I might be a pile of mud right now."

Li Qiye chuckled and shook his head: "No need to thank me, you deserve them. Our brothers paid a heavy price back then but unfortunately, I couldn't keep everyone alive through the long years."

The true god couldn't help but sigh after the past was brought up. Both him and Li Qiye felt the same awe when thinking about the glorious sacrifice of old.

The true god changed the topic: "Your Excellency, when do you

want to attack Soaring Immortal? Our brothers are ready. Just give the order, we shall flatten them!”

“No rush.” Li Qiye said: “I actually want to see what kind of cards they have up their sleeve. I heard Immortal Emperor Ren Xian’s sons have escaped from the Immortal Confinement so I want to see what kind of trouble they can bring.”

“If Immortal Emperor Ren Xian was still in this world, then maybe they can do something. But just some imperial princes alone, there’s nothing they can do against you, Your Excellency.” The true god replied.

“Princes or princesses, whatever.” Li Qiye was nonchalant: “I’m just curious about what they hid back then and the bloodline. I want to see who was the one who had their bloodline changed. I didn’t find it back then but I’m certain it is in Soaring Immortal.”

His eyes flashed with a terrible glint. Even an emperor would feel trepidation after seeing it. The true god naturally knew the significance of this glint.

“If Soaring Immortal dares to let the Ancient Ming’s bloodline appear again, this is more than enough to kill them all!” The true god became bloodthirsty as well. He had experienced the darkest years so he naturally wouldn’t allow it to happen a second time.

“Yes.” Li Qiye was in no hurry: “It’s just that I couldn’t find the changed bloodline back then or Soaring Immortal wouldn’t exist right now.”

Back then, with Immortal Emperor Qian Li and the Black Dragon King, even Soaring Immortal had no other choice but to submit and let the Dark Crow search every inch of their land.

Alas, the forceful search didn’t yield any result. The participating ancestors all committed suicide while the imperial princes went hiding in the Immortal Confinement.

“No need to talk about Soaring Immortal, they’re already fish on



the chopping board.” Li Qiye shook his head: “Outside of giving Azure Dragon the well-deserved glory, I have another personal reason. I hope that after I leave, the legion will still be famous across the nine worlds in order to deter a few people from having the same thoughts in the future.”

“Your Excellency, your burden is too heavy.” The true god cupped his fist and said: “If this was the past, I would want to follow and pave the way for you again with our brothers.”

“I know of your devotion.” Li Qiye nodded and sighed: “However, there was too much casualty back then and I don’t want it to happen again to the legion. You all have paid enough. In the future, the war above the nine heavens will be even crueler.”

“You love us too much.” The true god said with sincerity.

“No, it is because I owe everyone.” Li Qiye replied with a tinge of sadness: “I personally recruited each of you but how many brothers have been buried now? Their blood still stained the battlefields.”

# Chapter 1652: Three Branches Failure

---

“War is cruel; soldiers are wrapped in a horse’s hide after death instead of a proper funeral. Their blood sprayed all over the battlefield.” The true god powerfully said: “We brothers were mentally prepared the moment we followed you for this fate!”

Li Qiye gently sighed: “Perhaps that is the case. War is cruel so this is the time for Azure Dragon to enjoy the glorious period. Let me handle the wars as the paver of the future.”

“I’m certain victory is in your grasp, Your Excellency.” The true god ceased. He understood that this was His Excellency’s sympathy for the legion and not wishing for the legion to fight with him till the bloody end.

“Yes, I shall return triumphantly eventually.” Li Qiye stared at the horizon and eventually responded.

A while later, the true god half-jokingly said: “Your Excellency, you have gotten your body back so maybe you should let the goddesses and saintesses in this world have your offsprings.”

Few would dare to say this to Li Qiye in this generation. Only the true god would bring up this topic. After all, he has followed Li Qiye for so long and wanted, more than anyone else, for Li Qiye to have some descendants. At the very least, his branch would continue regardless of what may come in the future.

“In due time.” Li Qiye shook his head. He wasn’t in a hurry about this matter.

“Your Excellency, if you are willing, I can find candidates for you in order to leave behind the strongest descendants.” The true god couldn’t help but offer.

Li Qiye smiled again: “Worldkeeper, I have never cared about leaving my bloodline behind. Let this be up to fate. The woman who is meant to do so shall do so for me.”

Worldkeeper gently nodded and understood Li Qiye's thoughts. This was someone who had experienced many generations and met many amazing women, including female Immortal Emperors. However, few could win his attention and even fewer could get him to agree for them to have children together, as rare as the autumn leaves.

\*\*\*

The cultivators in Mortal Emperor were holding their breath while Azure Dragon camped at Pearl. Everyone knew that a storm was coming, one that would be stronger and fiercest than the rest. It could even destroy the entire Grand Sea.

They understood that Soaring Immortal wouldn't take this defeat lying down. However, vengeance required a great war since Soaring Immortal would hold nothing back.

There were both anxiety and anticipation. Would the final victor be the sect with five emperors or the mysterious and frightening legion?

Many sects were afraid of the flame of war spreading to them as well. A battle of this level would destroy everything nearby. Many sects would be engulfed by this disaster as well.

"Let's withdraw right now or our sect might be destroyed." A few intelligent strategists encouraged their sects to leave their home in the Grand Sea.

However, very few were willing to leave. For anyone, abandoning their foundation was very difficult. How many would actually make this choice?

Before the start of the war, Li Qiye saw another guest back at Pearl. It was Heavenly Emperor Lin from Soaring Immortal.

He changed quite a bit versus the last visit. He seemed to be tired, not as spirited as before.

"Looks like you're here to tell me the bad news." Li Qiye smiled

after noticing the youth's dejected appearance.

Lin smiled wryly and said: "Brother Li, we have failed. Our ancestors lost power when the imperial princes came back. Soaring Immortal is under the control of the princes and Ancestor Long now."

Li Qiye wasn't surprised at all to hear this: "Looks like your imperial princes not only didn't die in the prison but had great harvest as well. Such good fortune, huh?"

"They're very strong." Lin bitterly smiled: "The ancestors from our three branches lost to the princes and have lost their freedom. They're under house arrest now."

Initially, their three branches aimed to take over again. However, Immortal Emperor Ren Xian's princes came back with great ferocity. The ancestors of the three branches worked together but still lost so now, Soaring Immortal was firmly under Immortal Emperor Ren Xian's branch.

"Looks like they're capable enough to defeat your strongest ancestors." Li Qiye smiled: "They must have had some amazing encounters in there. The agony in there had become a great treasure."

The Immortal Confinement was found inside an ancient ruin by Immortal Emperor Fei. It was extremely dangerous. Not to mention Legendary Godkings, even nine out of ten Emperor Assailants would die.

All along, so many disciples have entered the prison but the only real survivor was Immortal Emperor Can Long during his youth.

Right now, the imperial princes endured the harsh time and all came back alive. One could easily imagine the great fortunes they have gained inside.

Lin didn't know what to say. Despite being one of the best disciples in Soaring Immortal, there was nothing he could do to

change the political climate within the sect. He was only an ant before the powerful branch of Immortal Emperor Ren Xian.

In the end, he said: “The ancestors told me to give you a message. The imperial princes are missing right now.”

“Missing? What does that mean? They disappeared without a trace from Soaring Immortal?” Li Qiye chuckled.

“Well...” Lin found it difficult to comment on certain topics.

“I got it.” Li Qiye said flatly: “Your ancestors are suspicious that there is someone else behind the scene outside of the princes. They believe that this can absolve Soaring Immortal from the sin.”

“Brother Li, that’s not the ancestors’ intention. They are only speculating because back then, the imperial princes alone weren’t enough to convince everyone.” He hesitated while revealing this.

“A bit interesting. These boys were sealed by Immortal Emperor Ren Xian at a young age. Though they came out later, it was no longer their time. They alone couldn’t convince the big shots from Soaring Immortal to join this plan. The ancestors from your sect certainly know that creating the bloodline of the Ancient Ming is a crime punishable by sect-destruction!”

Lin turned slightly pale. He was aware of the situation’s severity, having heard his ancestors talked about it.

Li Qiye said coldly: “This is a sky-piercing matter. If it is done by a bunch of kids, then we can attribute that to ignorance. However, several old big shots from your clan were involved as well. Though they committed suicide later, it doesn’t change the fact that they were participants. Perhaps in their eyes, this isn’t only a changing of bloodline. It is a way for Soaring Immortal to become great and produce more Immortal Emperors to rule the nine worlds.” Li Qiye smiled mockingly at this point.

“Brother Li, I’m, I’m sure my ancestors didn’t have this idea.” Lin jumped from fear and hurriedly said.

“I’m aware.” Li Qiye responded: “If they were part of the plan back then, they wouldn’t be alive right now to enjoy their retirement.”

Lin heaved a sigh of relief but his heart was still heavy.

“This is a very amusing matter. The big shots from your sect have seen many storms. How could a few young imperial princes have convinced them to take this sect-destroying risk? It’s impossible. Perhaps during their father’s generation, they could use his prestige to ask but the emperor wasn’t around at the time of the planning.”

“Only Asura could convince these old geezers to take this risk.” Li Qiye finished.

“No, it’s not Forefather Asura.” Lin quickly said. The forefather was the strongest ancestor of Immortal Emperor Can Long’s branch and contributed greatly in the past. Though he had made some wrong decisions before, he would never think about starting the blood exchange plan.

“It’s not him. Though he was the one who supported Immortal Emperor Ren Xian, he is still an upright and resolute character. Indeed, he couldn’t have been the one.”

Lin felt safe again. At the very least, their Can Long branch was spared from any suspicion.

# Chapter 1653: Who Is The Real Mastermind?

---

“The old men sent you here, are they interested in talking about the mastermind this time?” Li Qiye looked at Lin and smiled.

This made Lin quiet because he didn't know whether he should talk about this. Before leaving, the ancestors told him to play it by ear with great caution. After all, this could besmirch someone's reputation.

“I also know that your old men are thinking that it is Immortal Emperor Ren Xian.” Li Qiye could read the youth's thoughts.

“Surely not, the ancestors are only thinking about all possibilities. They definitely don't think so.” Lin quickly answered.

He was very careful about this matter, same with his ancestors. This could negatively affect Immortal Emperor Ren Xian's glorious reputation. Moreover, their entire sect vouched for him back then.

“It's not him. I'm certain about this after some rumination.” Li Qiye shook his head.

There was a reason for his firm belief about the emperor's innocence. If the emperor actually had such thoughts back then, he wouldn't have become an emperor.

“I knew it.” Lin felt a weight off his shoulders. In his mind, an emperor being involved in this conspiracy would be too much. A descendant like him didn't wish for this stain on the emperor's reputation.

“Regardless of the past, the emperor has always been an insightful man with great self-control. That's why he won the battle for the throne, not to mention his amazing achievements afterward. Perhaps your sect and his descendants did not inherit the same qualities, thinking that as a five emperors sect, you deserve hegemony in the nine worlds!” Li Qiye chuckled and

praised.

Lin had nothing to say again. After a long lull and great hesitation, he softly asked: “What does His Excellency think about it?”

It took all of his courage to inquire about the opinion of the eternal ruler, the dark hand.

Li Qiye stared at the youth before laughing: “You are asking for His Excellency, the Dark Crow’s opinion? It’s fine to tell you that he suspected the imperial queen back then!”

“The imperial queen?” Lin was shocked. After calming down, he blurted: “That’s impossible. The queen had passed away long ago. Moreover, she, she is a human.”

“That’s where it gets interesting. During the search back then, he also examined her remains. She had indeed passed away early.”

The truth was that he was very skeptical about this back then but he couldn’t find any concrete evidence. The opponents planned everything well, not leaving a single hole.

“Someone that can hide this from Immortal Emperor Ren Xian isn’t simple.” Li Qiye concluded.

Lin was in a tough spot the whole time. He eventually handed a scroll to Li Qiye and said respectfully: “This is the ancestors’ record, please present it to His Excellency.”

In fact, Lin didn’t know whether he would be handing over this scroll or not. The ancestors said that if Immortal Emperor Ren Xian wasn’t the prime suspect, then hand this scroll over.

Li Qiye accepted and opened for a look. He then closed it and chuckled: “Your old men want to plea for leniency. Unfortunately, the relationships alone are not enough.”

“They are aware.” Lin spoke weakly: “They only want to leave behind the dao legacy so that the lineage can continue on.”



These ancestors knew that there was no going back on this. Once Soaring Immortal lost the battle, they would face destruction. Thus, they were asking for mercy with their dao legacy.

“It’s not impossible.” Li Qiye smiled and said: “I can make a decision with a simple demand. Find the bloodline back then and I shall let your sect leave behind its legacy. Soaring Immortal might be gone but at least some seeds will remain.”

Lin couldn’t speak because this demand was impossible. He smiled wryly again: “The ancestors don’t have any clue. The nine worlds are too large, there’s nothing they can do.”

“No, trust me. This bloodline is absolutely hidden in your sect. There was no way for it to escape but who knows where it is right now.” Li Qiye chuckled.

“There’s no chance. The ancestors said that they have been paying attention. There’s no place to hide in Soaring Immortal since they have basically searched every single inch. If this is true, the only possible location is the Immortal Confinement.” The stunned youth replied.

“That’s not it.” Li Qiye shook his head: “The prison won’t allow for this bloodline to exist, destruction will come. That’s the reason why the Immortal Confinement wasn’t searched back then because the imperial princes didn’t have this bloodline. A pure Ancient Ming bloodline is exceedingly difficult to conceal.”

Li Qiye was extremely familiar with this bloodline. The whole thing piqued his curiosity. He wondered how the mastermind back then hid this particular bloodline from everyone.

Lin couldn’t do anything but shake his head in response: “I don’t think it’s there.”

“No rush, it’ll appear soon enough.” Li Qiye said: “I also want to see to what level has this bloodline transformed. This is indeed worthy of further research.”

This was another reason why Li Qiye didn't go all out back then. Since the mastermind back then was able to hide this bloodline from him, it meant that the bloodline itself had undergone a great transformation.

Because of this, he wanted to see the full extent because it has been some time since he last saw it. This will be a prime example to satiate his curiosity.

Lin sighed and understood that his sect has become Li Qiye's prey. Though he wished to change the situation, he was powerless.

In the eyes of others, he was an amazing genius. But for the true overlords, he was only an insignificant junior.

"Brother Li, I'll be going then, goodbye." He stood up and cupped his fists.

Li Qiye looked at him and said: "Leave Soaring Immortal now before the start of the battle. Out of consideration for our friendship, I won't make it difficult for you."

Though Li Qiye was going to destroy Soaring Immortal, he didn't want Heavenly Emperor Lin's life. The youth had nothing to do with this.

Lin pondered for a moment before. He then bowed and said: "Thank you, Brother Li. I'll remember your kindness but I am a disciple of Soaring Immortal. It doesn't matter if the sect is right or wrong, I will not be a deserter. Soaring Immortal do not have deserters."

"Courageous indeed. Go then, life or death, leave it to your own fortune." Li Qiye nodded.

Lin cupped his fists again before leaving. He returned to Soaring Immortal and met the ancestors from the three branches. Though they were under house arrest, they could still meet their disciples.

After hearing his reports, the ancestors who used to be generals under emperors became silent. These were prominent characters

that once threatened the nine worlds.

“Child, run as far away as possible. Do not return.” In the end, the oldest ancestor among them told Lin.

“Ancestor!” Lin was astounded to hear this: “The battle hasn’t even begun, we don’t need to be so pessimistic. There is still hope.”

“None.” The ancestor shook his head: “You don’t know how terrifying the existence we are facing is. Even if an Immortal Emperor was in this world right now, they still wouldn’t be able to shake the position of this existence. If His Excellency had made his decision, there is no changing our fate.”

“What if everyone comes to plead? Ancestor, you said that you had some ties with His Excellency? Maybe if you and the others can see him in person...”

“It’s no use.” The ancestor shook his head again: “We have already used up all of our face back in the previous search. The sentiments have been spent. Soaring Immortal had crossed the line, there is no saving this.”

“His Excellency has his own rules. Pleading is useless now even if we can meet him.” A different ancestor agreed.

The ancestors’ expression dimmed down after this point. Another smiled wryly and said: “I wonder if Asura would regret his decision? If he didn’t support Immortal Emperor Ren Xian back then, maybe Soaring Immortal wouldn’t be standing before this cliff.”

The other ancestors quietly contemplated the question. Forefather Asura eventually died from old age. Outside of a reduction in his life-prolonging resources, perhaps he had begun to question his own choice and gradually lost his will to live. Maybe he didn’t wish to see Soaring Immortal being in its current perilous situation.

# Chapter 1654: The Situation Is Set

---

Silence engulfed the hall; the grave atmosphere suffocated all the participants.

“We, we really have no hope?” Heavenly Emperor Lin spoke feebly without any confidence.

“None.” The oldest ancestor shook his head: “Everything is decided the moment the Azure Dragon Legion is out. But nothing changes otherwise anyway. There are the Brave Tiger Legion and others still.”

“The moment we crossed the line, everything has been determined. Even emperors can’t do anything about it, they will only manage to struggle for a bit and cause the war to be even more devastating. Our sect is very powerful but can it compare to the Ancient Ming back then? Even if we can produce an emperor right now, they won’t necessarily be stronger than Immortal Emperor Long Ming either.” Another ancestor sighed.

To which the oldest ancestor responded: “The Ancient Ming was still rendered into ashes. Immortal Emperor Long Ming was crucified on top of the divine peak, his screams echoed across the nine worlds... How unfortunate that our sect will be lost during our generation. We are all sinners, there is no escaping this. We have shamed our ancestors.”

The other ancestors had nothing to say. They were invincible and well-respected by other cultivators and sects. However, they were helpless before this disaster and finally felt their age. Their spirit was willing but the flesh was weak.

“But we can still go convince the imperial princes about giving up on revenge. Maybe we can get His Excellency and the princes to have a peace negotiation.” Lin still didn’t give up. Soaring Immortal had given him so much; it was a second home to him. There was no way he could stand and watch.

“You don’t know them.” The oldest ancestor shook his head: “Their vengeance cannot be stopped, otherwise, we wouldn’t be under house arrest.”

The ancestors sighed again. If they were still young and brimming with vitality, they would have had a chance for victory when fighting against the imperial princes.

Alas, they were old now and couldn’t last long in a fight. Meanwhile, the imperial princes didn’t grow old in the prison. Their age was the main factor in their victory against the ancestors.

“Despite being forced to hide in the prison, they still profited from the disaster.” The young Lin commented.

“This isn’t only for themselves, they want revenge for their father as well.” The oldest ancestor said.

“For Immortal Emperor Ren Xian? Why?” Lin was surprised to hear this.

A different ancestor explained: “The humiliation, at least in their eyes. Soaring Immortal is a sect with five emperors. Their father is an invincible emperor yet he still had to concede and forced to submission with chains on his limbs. They felt that this was the biggest disgrace in their father’s life. That’s why they want vengeance for their father’s sake.”

“That’s probably the reason why they participated in this plan.” Another ancestor added: “They probably knew they had no chance of opposing His Excellency, so they want to groom the strongest bloodline in order to produce the strongest Immortal Emperor from a pool of the best disciples in our sect in hope that this will be enough to defeat him.”

“What about the emperor himself?” Lin had to ask.

The other ancestors glanced at each other. They were the strongest ancestors in the sect so they were privy to information

unavailable to others.

“Even His Excellency praised the emperor for his insight.” The oldest ancestor explained: “Despite all the unpleasantness back then, the emperor remained at peace after his ascension and never spoke an ill word about His Excellency.”

In fact, some ancestors wondered if the emperor had done something or left an item behind which eventually allowed for the current mastermind to carry out the plan.

However, even the Dark Crow denied this. It showed that the emperor had nothing to do with this and didn’t let down Asura who supported him back then. His restraint made it possible for the Dark Crow and Soaring Immortal to coexist peacefully.

“If the princes aren’t the masterminds, then who?” Lin couldn’t come up with anyone else in Soaring Immortal who could order the princes.

The oldest ancestor helplessly said: “That’s the crux of the problem. We have someone hiding among our ranks, quite an elusive fellow. It is a leech that is latching onto our sect in the darkness but we have no idea who it is!”

Lin felt a chill after hearing this. The so-called strongest sect in the world was being engulfed by darkness. Outsiders would never believe such a thing.

“We can’t find this mastermind?” He said in disbelief.

“No.” The youngest ancestor shook his head: “This devil is hiding very well and probably has been doing so for a very long time now through crafty planning. This was the reason why I came into being before the appointed time. It was to investigate this matter but nothing came of it. In fact, it’s not just me. The other ancestors in the past couldn’t either. In the end, they died after running out of lifespan.”

These near-death ancestors would never leave their hibernation

because one more day was one more day closer to death. However, several extremely powerful ancestors personally investigated this matter but they all failed.

“It’s a shame that time doesn’t wait for us.” The oldest ancestor said dejectedly: “Maybe if I had another thousand years of life, I would be able to bait out the mastermind.”

“Or maybe if you were born several generations earlier before we were sealed, you could have become an emperor too. That probably could have baited this person out or an available emperor could have eliminated this threat.” He continued while looking at Lin.

Lin became ashamed and lowered his head: “I have let you and Soaring Immortal down.”

“It’s not your fault.” The ancestor shook his head: “You were simply born in the wrong period. Even without Long Aotian, you couldn’t have become one either. All of this was already decided by fate.”

“Then we can only wait for death?” Lin murmured.

A different ancestor replied: “There’s nothing we can do. The Ren Xian branch already had control even before the princes came back. Now, their grasp became even tighter.”

“The ancestors from the Ren Xian branch and the princes aren’t the only ones with this belief. This is the ambition of all the youths in our sect. They crave power and an even larger stage, the nine worlds. They want to shine brighter than everyone else. This irresistible ambition made the disciples break the pact. The current situation was decided then and there. Our old bones can’t do anything even if we want Soaring Immortal to calm down. The youth will not accept boredom by being locked in this domain. Because of this, it didn’t matter whether the princes came back or not, or Ancestor Long having control, Soaring Immortal would eventually come into being. We can stop them for a generation but

not forever. Old people like us will eventually die and the young faction will take over. This boundless ambition has overwhelmed our sect. Even if the princes weren't there and no Ancestor Long, people like Long Aotian would still show up."

He sighed and continued: "In other words, the moment we picked Immortal Emperor Ren Xian, this outcome was decided. Perhaps this was all part of someone's scheme - the cultivation of the Ancient Ming bloodline, the forceful search, and the current youthful ambition."

"This is a devious strategy, planned for many generations now. There are only two outcomes for us because of this. First, victory and become the invincible sect for the ages. Second, defeat and destruction!"

Lin found it astonishing. Just what kind of characters was preparing this plan for many generations behind the shadow? The other ancestors were quiet because they realized this way too late. They have lost control of the situation and couldn't do anything about it.



# Chapter 1655: Who Is The One Hunting?

---

Lin had a better understanding of the situation after listening to the ancestors. Albeit, he was powerless as well.

“If the imperial queen was alive, maybe she would be able to change our fate.” Another young ancestor mused.

“Perhaps.” The oldest one answered after a short lull: “Imperial Queen Ren Xian was an intelligent and kind woman. She was aware of the ebbs and flows of politics and trod carefully as the emperor’s supporter. One had to speak of her contributions when talking about his successful campaign. Alas, she died too early and didn’t bask in the glory befitting of an imperial queen.”

“Yes, given her kind nature, maybe she would be able to resolve the princes’ resentment. Under her guidance, the princes could have become benevolent people and one of them could even become an emperor. Her presence had a chance of eliminating the darkness looming over our sect.” A different ancestor agreed.

Lin didn’t respond since there was no going back in time.

“You have learned all that you needed to learn.” The oldest ancestor told Lin: “Take some disciples and leave Soaring Immortal, as far as possible. Do not return.”

“We have already selected them. Go quietly in the night, no need to say goodbye or tell anyone.” Another ancestor handed Lin a list.

The oldest one continued: “Though there is no saving this, our three branches still have some resources left. We have packed them up for you. Take them and see if you can continue our three branches in the future.”

“Ancestor...” Lin didn’t want to leave. He hurriedly said: “I want to stay behind to the very end. There are other candidates to become the leaders of the backup plan. I cannot leave during times of hardship when you have spent so much effort on training me.”

“No, there is a reason why we picked you to do this and for you to go see His Excellency.” The oldest ancestor said: “No one is more suitable than you. His Excellency likes you so he won’t chase when you run away. This might not be the case for other people.”

“But...” Lin opened his mouth.

The oldest ancestor interrupted him: “No but. The decision has been made. This is the time for you to repay us and the sect. The greatest possible repayment will be in the form of continuing the inheritance of our three branches.”

While looking at the ancestors, Lin understood that this matter was finished. In the end, he took a deep breath and respectfully prostrated to the ground. His head touched the ground nine times as he spoke: “I’m sorry that I can’t be with you all, please take care.”

“Go, do not turn back and look. Remember, do not think about revenge. Take care of our inheritance so that our seeds will be everlasting. That’s more than enough.” The oldest solemnly said.

“Your disciple obeys.” He bowed again before leaving while gritting his teeth. Tears have virtually blinded his vision but he knew that this was their last meeting. He wouldn’t be able to return to Soaring Immortal again.

The sitting ancestors slowly closed their eyes after Lin disappeared from sight. They have accepted the situation and no longer tried anything else.

\*\*\*

At Pearl, Li Qiye was still sitting in the same spot after Lin left. However, Matriarch Yu was by his side.

“The world was shocked with the coming of the Azure Dragon Legion. Those who are aware of the legion know that you will come back to rule and no one will have a chance for the Heaven’s Will. Who will still fight in this situation? Will Soaring Immortal

still try for revenge?” She smiled and said.

Li Qiye smirked as well: “Soaring Immortal will muster all of their strength this time, gambling everything they have on this battle!”

“The emperor’s sons might be powerful but they can’t be this blind. They should know the significance of Azure Dragon’s appearance. Since the war hasn’t formally started, there is still time to turn back. If they’re not stupid, they will go and find old generals back then to come and talk to you. That’s what I would do in order to protect Soaring Immortal since they have zero chance of winning this war.” The matriarch was surprised.

“That’s why you’re not them and they’re not you.” Li Qiye smiled: “They have never thought about a peace negotiation. Plus, even if they wanted one, it’s not up to them anymore. The person in the shadow will definitely try something!”

“What kind of thing is giving this person enough confidence to fight you, Your Excellency?” She found the whole thing quite strange.

People who knew about the Dark Crow was aware that this was an eternal tyrant, the dark hand behind the curtains in the nine worlds. This was a generation without an emperor. Any power and force trying to fight him was the same as throwing an egg at a rock. But then again, it wouldn’t end well for emperors opposing him either.

“It’s not just their battle potential. They’re definitely confident but more importantly, time is not waiting for them!” Li Qiye explained.

“Time isn’t waiting for them?” She was slightly caught off guard.

“Because I have personally come into being in this generation, no longer immortal. The mastermind is aware of this and the fact that I don’t have an Immortal Emperor behind me. This is their last

chance and only time to kill me. That's why the mastermind will go all out!" He elaborated.

"Gu Zun believed in this as well. There won't be another opportunity after this one. Thus, since the mastermind has been planning this for so long, they wouldn't be able to endure the anger from letting me leave just like that." He revealed a smile full of amusement.

"So for the master and Gu Zun, they must do something in this generation since I'll be up above the nine heavens in the next. So in the future, it doesn't matter how strong they are and if they can actually get up there, they will be nothing in that place. At that point, I can crush them like ants. The two of them also understood this so they would never waste generations of planning by not trying in this one."

The matriarch was shaken with a terrible guess. She blurted out: "You have always known who the mastermind is!"

"About that..." Li Qiye only smirked and didn't answer directly.

"You knew during the search too!" The matriarch was a long-time follower so she naturally understood this smile from him and realized it.

In the past, he didn't talk about this so she thought the lack of evidence was the reason why he couldn't sentence a judgment. Now, it looked as if this wasn't the case.

"It's only a guess, not like I am hiding it, you'll know eventually." Li Qiye chuckled.

She wasn't too surprised. In this world, who was better at scheming than this man in front of her?

"Back then, why didn't you simply capture everyone and eliminate Soaring Immortal?" She was curious.

Li Qiye pondered for a moment before sighing: "Perhaps I couldn't bear to do so. The old men were all kneeling there,

slamming their forehead on the ground till blood started to flow. They have contributed and risked their lives for me. That's why I gave them a chance, hoping that they can find and eliminate this darkness. Unfortunately, they were too old to be a match for the mastermind. This person hid very well so they failed to find anything."

Having said that, he revealed a murderous glint: "Plus, the Ancient Ming bloodline has always troubled me. All along, people have been trying to research and evolve this bloodline. It can be said that the mastermind in Soaring Immortal has done the best job in this endeavor. I want to see to what level they have achieved. This will allow me to understand the evolution of this bloodline. If the mastermind had spent many generations to deal with me, then I'll give them a chance. After a successful attempt, I'll check it out and future generations will have a deeper understanding of this bloodline. Know yourself, know your enemy; one shall win a hundred battles without tasting defeat." He grinned at this point.

"Your Excellency, you want to take advantage of this mastermind to observe the evolution of the Ancient Ming bloodline." The matriarch understood.

"Since people have always attempted this, I'm actually a little worried that this bloodline would suddenly change and sneak into our own bloodline to the point where we can't distinguish between a human and a Ming bloodline. Thus, if someone has reached such a high level, it would be good reference material so that people in the future can learn how to protect themselves against this bloodline." He chuckled.

# Chapter 1656: The Heavens Will Nearing Formation

---

The entire Mortal Emperor World held its breath before the inevitable battle. This phenomenon struck the Grand Sea even harder. Many great powers were scared out of their mind. Their experts maintained their vigilance.

The Grand Sea would become a battlefield soon enough. The fire of war would spread to many great powers. At that point, so many existences would wail in lamentation.

However, while people were too anxious for this war, something extremely strange happened to the nine worlds.

“Buzz!” A pleasant yet moving sound occurred. Despite not being too loud, the trillions of existence heard it clearly. Even the deaf could hear this sound since it came from the heart.

On this night, the nine worlds were boiling with excitement. Everyone woke up from their slumber, even the old monsters sleeping underground.

The night sky suddenly turned bright with the same pleasant noises that reached all the corners of the nine worlds - the plains, deep valleys, deserts, and even in the sea of pedestrians...

People could see astral rays of grand dao descending from the sky to all places in the nine worlds. They looked like rivers that were both near and far at the same time, flowing towards the unknown or the origin of the myriad dao.

Water wasn't flowing from these river-like rays, only bright particles and lights. Each grand dao had a different color and form but all were pure. This was the purest form of power and energy in the world.

Such grand dao weren't created from cultivation and accumulation. It came from the source and encompassed the

power of an entire generation. It would only appear at the formation of a generation.

When all the powers in the nine worlds came together to form these grand dao, it would eventually form the thing cultivators have always dreamt about for generations, the Heaven's Will!

Some of them were in the shape of a gurgling creek. More looked like an endless river while the others looked like an expanding galaxy up above...

Everyone in the nine world was in awe to see these grand dao flowing in the sky. Not everyone was lucky enough to see this magnificent scene in their life. It would only happen once per generation.

“What is that?” A junior pointed at the sky since this was his first time.

“The gathering of the Heaven's Will, the power of a generation shouldered by the nine worlds. The Heaven's Will is about to appear along with our future emperor.” A senior that had seen this before explained.

“The Heaven's Will...” The junior's expression changed to excitement.

All cultivators wanted to possess the Heaven's Will; this was their ultimate pursuit. It meant a lifetime of invincibility and being the ruler of the generation as an emperor. So many people worked hard only to become dried bones along the way. Nevertheless, the dangers and effort required didn't stop people from trying. The temptation of the throne was irresistible.

“Where are they going?” A junior asked his senior with curiosity while staring at the flowing grand dao.

The senior shook his head: “No one knows. Some say that they are flowing towards the high heaven. Others believe that they are going towards the origin of the world or our dao hearts. The real

answer is still a mystery.”

“What is the source of its power?” Another junior wondered about the purest power accompanying these grand dao.

“That is a question for Immortal Emperors. Rumor has it that they rarely use their full power after shouldering the Heaven’s Will. Some older people even say that they wouldn’t ever use the ultimate power of the Heaven’s Will. Nevertheless, you can still imagine its power. It shouldered the nine worlds and contained the power of a generation so just use your imagination.”

The juniors were dazed to hear this. Just how crazy was this power? No wonder why so many people wanted the Heaven’s Will.

When the grand dao were flowing, a light slowly emanated from portals in the sky. The dusty platforms became clean and started to shine again.

Many people were excited to try after seeing the recovering dao portals. The people from the last generation wanted to see other places in the nine worlds and meet their old friends. Needless to say about the young generation, they have never left their own world. Of course, they were excited to have the chance to visit the other worlds.

Some experts rushed to the sky while the grand dao were flowing up above. Some people took out their treasures and holy artifacts on top of using their peerless arts. There was only one goal - to grasp the power of the grand dao by seizing them.

Unfortunately, all were useless. They couldn’t grab a single strand of power from the grand dao. None of them were stopping.

“It’s useless. No one can oppose the heaven and earth regardless of their might.” An experienced senior shook his head: “If you could steal the power from these grand dao, it means that you can destroy the heaven and earth, the nine worlds. If that is the case, then you don’t need the power from the grand dao. Just one word



from you would be able to swallow the nine worlds. Alas, no one has ever reached this level since the start of time.”

The experts trying this could only give up one after another after failing to steal the power of the grand dao. The senior was correct. If they were able to oppose the heaven and earth, then they would be even more powerful than Immortal Emperors. It would be silly for them to steal the power here by that point.

Meanwhile, Li Qiye was standing under the moonlight inside Pearl and gazed at the flowing grand dao. He smiled at their pure power.

“This is the only time in each generation that I really look forward to. It makes my numb heart beat again.” He murmured.

Worldkeeper and the matriarch were standing to his left and right. They were staring at the same thing.

“Such a beautiful scene. Such a shame that some people won’t get to see it in their lifetime.” The matriarch said with emotions.

“Yes, it only happens once in each generation. After this beautiful night will be the extremely cruel competition. The excitement is palpable but so are the horns of war from the geniuses in the nine worlds.”

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Regardless of all that, it’s impossible to be bored watching this. Each generation is different in some ways. Watching this scene means that one is still alive, their heart is still beating.”

“It’s a bit different this time.” The true god stared carefully and eventually said.

He has lived for longer than the matriarch so his knowledge was even more exceptional. He was able to see something different this time around.

# Chapter 1657: Path Towards The Future

---

The matriarch looked up at the grand dao again after hearing Worldkeeper. She didn't notice anything and said: "What's different?"

The matriarch had only seen the Heaven's Will once so she was not a match for his keen insight.

"The power, the grand dao, and the laws of the heaven and earth." The true god slowly explained: "There is something lacking about them or maybe they're resonating with something. In short, there is something different about this gathering compared to the past."

"Worldkeeper, quite keen you are." Li Qiye smiled and said: "This generation is definitely different from the rest of the generations and even all of the lost epochs. This is completely unprecedented, this epoch will be special because of this generation."

"We're at the pinnacle of the epoch?" The true god was surprised.

"No, we still haven't reached the maximum point just yet." Li Qiye shook his head: "But this epoch will be different because of me, Li Qiye. It isn't the pinnacle but it will shine even brighter! It will be able to reach the end of the world and shine brilliantly. Future generations won't be able to reach this height again!"

Li Qiye seemed to be boasting but Worldkeeper and the matriarch felt that this was a matter of course. They knew that His Excellency has been preparing for this through the long years. No one had ever planned something as thorough as him in the past.

Worldkeeper had participated in the immortal war before with Li Qiye. He was aware that Li Qiye's ace cards were terrible beyond imagination. This was the reason why the guy was able to stand

strong through the ages.

“The throne is mine in this generation but for me, the Heaven’s Will itself is only a decorative piece.” He grinned and said slowly.

“The Heaven’s Will is only decoration!?” The matriarch was stunned to hear such a bold statement. She naturally knew how heaven-defying he was but this sentence still shocked her all the same.

The Heaven’s Will might not be everything to an emperor but it was their invincible power and strongest backing. Outsiders would never believe Li Qiye but the two people here understood that this was the truth.

“There are other things above the Heaven’s Will?” The true god had to ask.

“Maybe, maybe not. There’s no good definition for this. But as you know, there is a time period greater than a generation, the epochs.”

The true god carefully contemplated this answer because he knew what an epoch was.

An epoch was a time period consisted of many generations and eras.

History consisted of many generations belonging to the emperors or an era such as the Desolace Expansion Era before the Emperors Era. All of them were part of an epoch.

Thus, this particular epoch consisted of the Desolate Era all the way to the current Emperors Era.

Some believed that the Desolate Era was indeed the start of this epoch. Alas, no one could really verify this claim and know the true start of this epoch.

“Then what kind of power are you looking for?” The normally calm matriarch found herself out of character.

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “Qingfeng, your view on the end of the world is too simple. That last battle won’t be so easy. The Heaven’s Will alone is not enough. Otherwise, so many Immortal Emperors and Immortal Monarchs would have advanced in waves. So many brilliant emperors and unbeatable giants have fallen. Some unstoppable camps and alliances lost all the same.”

“This war is merciless and the competition for Heaven’s Will is nothing in comparison, only a game between children, not worth mentioning.” He sighed at this point.

“I know you can be the last one smiling, Your Excellency. You have so many hidden cards and the ultimate move is enough to destroy everything.” The matriarch said.

Li Qiye shook his head: “I do have many hidden cards but they are only effective against living beings. They could threaten many existences like burial grounds and emperors. Even above the nine heavens, I still have enough to oppose the emperors and monarchs. However, at the end of the world, these hidden cards are ineffective.”

“Then what about the ultimate move?” The true god felt like asking.

He was referring to the crystal pillar that Li Qiye used to threaten the Crystalfowl Immortal Mine.

“That thing can only be used as a threat.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “It doesn’t matter how powerful it is since when it is used, everything is done for. Even in the most desperate situation, I still can’t use it since it means the end of all. It is used for a gamble, to see who has the better mental fortitude and dao heart.”

Having said that, he looked at the flowing grand dao and said: “Because of this, I need real power. With real power, I can be the last one smiling instead of just playing the threatening game. That’s why the current power of the Heaven’s Will is rather insignificant in comparison.”

The true god and the matriarch were quiet. Despite their own substantial power, they couldn't imagine the level of forces Li Qiye was referring to. They have seen emperors and knew how strong they were, especially when emperors became crazy with their Heaven's Will. However, Li Qiye was chasing a power where the Heaven's Will would only play a minor role. It had exceeded their imagination.

“What a shame that I won't be able to see your invincible style.” The true god said with a tinge of emotion.

Li Qiye chuckled and stared at the horizon: “Not being able to see is a good thing. Victory will be a bright universe while defeat... we shouldn't think about it.”

The other two merely listened and didn't dare to imagine any further. They were veterans and understood that this level of war was much crueler compared to their own experiences.

\*\*\*

The near formation of the Heaven's Will excited all cultivators in the nine worlds. They have finally waited till this moment and were more than eager to try.

In a short time, each world debated about the top candidates for Immortal Emperor. Of course, their lists were different because the nine worlds weren't connected just yet. These geniuses haven't fought against each other just yet so everyone only talked about their own world.

In Mortal Emperor, the top candidates were Fiercest and Long Aotian. Many were very optimistic about Fiercest. Of course, Long Aotian had his fair share of supporters because of Soaring Immortal.

Though many people in Mortal Emperor were happy, this atmosphere didn't last for long. For some cultivators in the Grand Sea, a disaster was coming.

“Boom!” A loud explosion resounded across the Grand Sea. A thick black pillar descended from the sky and looked just like a tornado.

It carried an unstoppable power of the storm that instantly tore the sky apart and rushed for the location of a great power.

This great power reigned over thirteen smaller sects so it was quite powerful. They had produced many Godkings in the past.

“We’re under attack, get ready!” The ancestors here were shocked and shouted.

“Clang, clang, clang.” The warning bells sounded everywhere and the sect readied its defensive barriers.

“Boom!” However, these barriers were useless before this black tornado and collapsed instantly like a dried branch.

“Kill!” Every member of the sect mustered all of their strength to attack. Some ancestors even burned their own blood to unleash their strongest attack.

“Rumble!” The world shook and their effort was for naught. Their attempt was insignificant before the black tornado and all the attacks were broken.

“Ah!” In a short time, miserable screams echoed everywhere. All the disciples were pulled into the tornado and got pulverized into mists of blood. Even the ancestors couldn’t escape.

# Chapter 1658: Descending Calamity

---

In a short time, screams echoed through the world. This great power's ancestral ground contained more than ten thousand disciples but they were instantly cut to pieces by this black tornado, a terrible way to end.

The spectators were horrified by this unknown force, capable of destroying a great power in the blink of an eye.

“Boom!” The tornado continued to drill down and pierced through the ancestral ground completely.

“Rumble!” The entire place started to quake with tidal waves in the near vicinity. It looked like the end of the world was coming.

After piercing through the ancestral ground, the tornado continued to drill into the deepest part where the earth vein was located.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” A series of explosions continued. The tornado suddenly became gentle after reaching the earth vein like a tamed beast. The earth vein wrapped around it like a long chain. The tail of the tornado was still floating in the sky just like a kite.

“What is that thing?” Many people were horrified by this tornado. However, the big shots glanced at each other since they didn't know what it was.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” Amidst the confusion, a second black tornado pierced through the sky and attacked the capital of a country.

“Kill!” The disciples there also cried and soared to the sky to fight. A Godking ancestor from this country was the first to make contact and used his most dominating move to stop it!

The majestic walls of the capital spanning for thousands of miles instantly collapsed before this tornado like a piece of paper.

“Ah!” More screamings resounded with the disciples being ravaged by the tornado into mists of blood.

“Ah!” The Godking cried in anguish and unwillingness. Even the country’s strongest Godking still couldn’t stop the tornado at all. The sharp gale pierced through his chest and made him join his fellow disciples in pieces.

Even a powerful being like him was so insignificant and couldn’t protect his home and children. This was a tragic end for a Godking.

“Boom!” This tornado pierced into the earth vein and became gentle just like the first one while prolonging its tail.

“Just what is going on?” People thought that it could be a natural calamity with the first tornado, but the appearance of the second made them realize that this was no coincidence.

However, who created these black tornados? What was the goal in destroying these sects?

“Boom!” A third tornado added to the panic. This time, an imperial lineage was the target.

“It’s challenging an imperial lineage!” Many were startled at this sight.

“Whoosh!” An imperial defense system instantly appeared to stop the black tornado.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” The first attack was stopped but it continued for three more times. The defense system faltered and with a loud bang, this tornado finally pierced through to attack the ancestral ground of the lineage.

“Ancestor, please protect us!” At this critical moment, the ancestors of this lineage prayed with their longevity blood. The other disciples were kneeling on the ground with blood and tear; they beseeched their ancestor to come back in spirit and protect their sect.



“Boom!” Under the cries of the sect members numbering in the ten thousands, this particular Immortal Emperor showed up. His will instantly erupted in the form of a majestic figure to stop the tornado with his hand.

“Our ancestor is invincible!” The disciples applauded to see their ancestor sealing the sky with his palm and protecting his descendants at this perilous juncture.

“That’s an Immortal Emperor for you.” Many said with emotions: “Great powers can’t compare to imperial lineage. The protection of an emperor is stronger than anything else.”

“Bang!” When people were excited that the will of the emperor had stopped the tornado, imperial auras surged out of the tornado like multiple emperors taking action. They formed into the sharpest, most tyrannical spear in this world and instantly thrust through all things.

The spear pierced through the majestic figure and shattered the imperial will.

“No!” The descendants from the imperial lineage cried out after seeing the will of their ancestor destroyed. The screams were full of despair because they understood that the only thing awaiting them was demise!

“No way!” Many big shots were frightened pale in the Grand Sea. Even the will of an emperor was destroyed, just how terrible was this power?

Among their astonishment, they also finally understood the true extent of their enemy’s power. To the surprise of no one, the tornado pierced through the ancestral ground to reach the earth vein.

“Who is doing this?” Everyone still didn’t understand the culprit’s goal of destroying these imperial lineages.

Meanwhile, Li Qiye’s group was also watching the destructive

tornado from Pearl. He had a smile on his face.

“Soaring Immortal wants to use the earth veins in the Grand Sea.” Matriarch Yu understood the intent right away.

“The mastermind in Soaring Immortal wants to change everything with a single battle by using the earth veins. That’s the only thing that could support their high level of formation.” Li Qiye chuckled.

“What formation is this?” She asked.

He answered with amusement: “This person knows that I’m versed in all the arts in the nine worlds, especially the imperial techniques and grand formations from Soaring Immortal, some even came from me. Because of this, they want to do it differently by using a formation that I don’t know for this battle.”

He continued on: “Rumor has it that when Immortal Emperor Fei got the Immortal Confinement, he also found a few items including a formation. This is an extremely old artifact, not from our epoch. This mastermind being able to understand this ancient item... quite an exceptional feat. It must be someone with supreme talents and intelligence. That’s the only way for them to form this formation.”

“Looks like Soaring Immortal is well prepared. This mastermind must have done so for more than just one or two generations.” The matriarch murmured.

“That’s true. Such a formation couldn’t be comprehended even by the wisest being in a short time. Moreover, refining this formation required a long period as well. You can say that Soaring Immortal has been influenced completely; its young generation wants nothing more than to come into being again.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

“Is there a name to this formation?” The true god stared at this formation with flashing excitement in his eyes.

“If I’m not mistaken, this formation is called Omnidirectional Immortal Annihilation.” Li Qiye answered: “Though I don’t have the blueprint for it, I have experienced the ultimate arts from this epoch before. Others might not understand it after studying for a lifetime, but it can’t elude my gaze.”

“Senior Worldkeeper, are you waiting for the formation to be completed?” The matriarch noticed the true god’s appearance and asked.

“I haven’t warmed up since Immortal Slaying. It’s time for our Azure Dragon Legion to erupt and show our invincibility. Soaring Immortal will be our sharpening stone.” He revealed a tyrannical posture and declared.

The monarch had nothing to say. This legion dared to fight the Ancient Ming back then. In their eyes, Soaring Immortal wasn’t anything. They weren’t afraid of the dark days back then so they weren’t afraid of Soaring Immortal now!

# Chapter 1659: The Start Of The War

---

“Rumble!” In a short time, five great powers have been destroyed in the Grand Sea, including an imperial lineage.

After each explosion, a black tornado would come down and end a great power.

All cultivators were frightened after each explosion. They didn't know which lineage would be next. Some sects have started evacuating, hoping that they would be able to escape this disaster.

“Look, over there.” A strange visual phenomenon emerged after their destruction, garnering the attention of the entire Mortal Emperor World.

“Creak-” Heavy moving noises came from the sky as if something monstrous was moving.

It was a vast world wanting to descend to the Grand Sea. It had divine mountains and rivers large enough to accommodate dragons. There were towering pavilions, making it look like the world of deities. This particular world had its own heaven and earth, allowing it to gestate countless existences.

The most terrible thing was the rich energy permeating the whole place. It was full of power and gave off the presence of many Immortal Emperors.

In different areas were many different auras. One particular mountain had a sword energy capable of creating a new zone with a single slash. One citadel had thunder ringing from it while a different river was full of the power of lightning...

This world looked like a paradise for immortal with countless experts. It looked prime to crush everything in its path. It was being pulled by the five black tornadoes down to the Grand Sea.

This was the reason why everyone could hear this heavy dragging noise.

“What is that?” A junior murmured in a daze.

“Soaring Immortal!” Someone from the last generation said: “The entire sect is coming down to the Grand Sea, not just a disciple or a legion!”

“What’s the consequence of this?” The junior asked again.

“Best case is if it only takes over the Grand Sea. Worst case is the entire Mortal Emperor World.” This senior was a Godking yet he still became worried.

The coming of Soaring Immortal wasn’t a good thing. In the past, Long Aotian and some disciples alone were already enough to sweep through the sea monsters and demons in this zone.

But now, this sea wasn’t enough to satiate the entire sect’s appetite. It would definitely take over the Grand Sea and maybe even all of Mortal Emperor.

“Boom!” Another black tornado came down from the sky. One more ancestral ground of a great power was annihilated to the astonishment of no one. Miserable wails echoed as all the opposing disciples were torn to pieces.

It didn’t take long before everyone in this region and the entire world realized who the culprit was. Many lineages were scared out of their mind about being next!

“Boom!” After a short lull, a legion appeared before everyone before the sea region where Soaring Immortal was.

It almost had ten thousand men, some still maintaining their original demon and beast forms. Some of these sea monsters were extremely large. One crab was as large as an island and a single swing of its claws could cause create a sizable wave.

One could see right away that this legion was recently formed. It was disorderly and lacked proper training. Nevertheless, their blood energy still soared in the sky. Each individual expert was quite mighty.

The leader of this was the recently-famous Hai Lin with the golden dragon and Ding Yuanhou standing to his left and right.

“If we don’t unite now to oppose Soaring Immortal, all of us will be chased out of our home or killed!” Hai Lin’s voice echoed before the start of the war.

“Kill!” He showed no fear against Soaring Immortal and rushed forward. His legion rushed in before Soaring Immortal had completed its descent. Hai Lin wanted to take advantage of this opportunity and stop the entry process.

Several Godkings protected Hai Lin right next to him. The large sea monsters also rushed for the portal.

“Protect our home!” The soldiers followed Hai Lin’s lead. They were willing to sacrifice themselves to fight against Soaring Immortal!

With a deafening explosion, a legion marched down from Soaring Immortal to meet the attackers. The leader was an old general with a divine armor. His saber was flashing with a bloody light. His bloodthirst simply wouldn’t dissipate. It was obvious at first glance that this was an experienced and fierce general.

“You don’t know your own limit, simply courting death!” The old general cried and led his troops to fight against the other army.

He was domineering and unstoppable. Ordinary experts couldn’t stop a single slash. In the end, Hai Lin, the golden dragon, and Ding Yuanhou worked together to stop this old man.

The cries of war resounded through the region along with cries of anguish and sounds of broken bones...

Hai Lin’s effort gave many great powers hope. They began to pray for Hai Lin victory. Of course, people were aware that the chance was virtually zero. After all, a newly formed army couldn’t do anything to a powerful sect like Soaring Immortal.

Their prayers weren’t answered. Not long after the start of the

war, Hai Lin's legion continuously faltered for it was not a match for Soaring Immortal. Despite their unyielding will to fight, their army was recruited in a short time. The soldiers came from everywhere with varying abilities and had no prior training.

"Ah!" As the battle was heading for the end, the opposing region was being massacred. Bodies fell from the sky with severed limbs. A rain of blood began to pour as well.

The lucky survivors tried to run away but Soaring Immortal's legion hunted them down. Their cries of death were driving listeners to tears.

Very few managed to escape alive. Hai Lin was grievously injured and was escorted away by the golden dragon, Ding Yuanhou, and several large sea monsters.

Their defeat extinguished the hope of the great powers in the Grand Sea. Panic became widespread.

"Rumble!" The end of the war was the start of the destruction again. Another black tornado assaulted an ancient lineage.

The lineage didn't try to resist at all. The ancestors and the young disciples ran for their lives from the ancestral ground.

The tornado drilled into the earth vein inside the ancestral ground. Though the escaping disciples didn't try to resist, many of them were still sucked into the tornado and killed.

In the next several days, more tornadoes came down. Each one destroyed a great power and took their earth vein. There were also several resisting attempts but they were wiped out by the defending legion from Soaring Immortal.

A total of ten tornadoes have destroyed ten lineages, some of the imperial level.

# Chapter 1660: Hai Lins Request

---

Ten tornadoes resembling ten black chains pulled the entire Soaring Immortal Sect into the Grand Sea.

The scene was magnificent as if there were two worlds in this location - one in the ocean and one in the sky.

After its entrance, the tornadoes created thick laws. At the same time, multiple old battlefields fell down from the sky. They were full of primordial chaos and power.

They combined with the thick laws and came together to form a gigantic field as large as a continent. This particular battle stage was large enough to mobilize billions of troops to any place in the nine worlds!

One imperial lineage would find it difficult to possess even one of these ancient and powerful battlefields. Now, Soaring Immortal actually had so many. Its abundant resources were no joke.

“What does Soaring Immortal want to do?” Many became curious.

“They are copying the Immortal Emperors who used to build these stages in order to inspect the troops before mobilization.” A big shot speculated.

“It’s not just an inspection or a war rally.” A Godking from the last generation noticed something: “Looks like they want to build a supreme formation. Such a formation could attack any place in the nine worlds and could also act as a barrier. If anyone wants to attack the sect, they have to break through this defensive line first. But what legion is powerful enough to break through this formation?”

In a short time, the Grand Sea fell into a widespread panic. They understood that after this battle platform was formed, Soaring Immortal could attack any sect regardless of the location.



However, others would need to break this formation first.

The old Godking was correct. This battle platform was erected on a great formation called Omnidirectional Immortal Annihilation by Li Qiye.

Meanwhile, another news came out. Hai Lin once again gathered a legion for a counterattack, consisting of more than thirty great powers joining this time.

Furthermore, additional people joined his ranks after the news, even several imperial lineages. His recruitment wasn't limited to the Grand Sea either. Experts and even sects from the other regions joined him as well.

This was because Soaring Immortal's presence pressured everyone. Even those not from the Grand Sea felt that after Soaring Immortal ruled this region, they would send expeditions to other places as well.

Because of these worries, some sects secretly sent experts as well. These ancestors all hid their identity so no one knew where they were from.

This army was quite mighty and became the strongest alliance to oppose Soaring Immortal. Because Hai Lin was always at the forefront in fighting against Soaring Immortal, he was nominated as the commander of the legion.

Despite the great number of experts and sects in this legion, many people weren't optimistic about it.

"This alliance might be powerful but it is still a ragtag group. How can it match the well-organized legion from Soaring Immortal?" People doubted even before the battle.

A sharp Godking commented: "Fiercest is the only one who can handle Soaring Immortal at this moment. For example, his Azure Dragon Legion is so ferocious. Only such a force could compete against Soaring Immortal."

After Fiercest was brought up, everyone turned over to Pearl. However, this legion and Fiercest were inactive. No one knew of their plan just yet.

“Hai Lin’s legion should work together with Fiercest. That’s the only chance for victory.” Many shared this belief. In fact, some in his legion proposed this to Hai Lin.

They were aware that very few characters could talk to Fiercest. Thus, they proposed for Hai Lin to go in person in order to talk about a new alliance.

This was a reasonable proposal since Hai Lin and Fiercest have met in the past. Moreover, Fiercest had even helped him before. Thus, there was no better candidate than Hai Lin to go and talk with Li Qiye.

In the end, under the recommendation of his legion, Hai Lin went to see Fiercest at Pearl.

Li Qiye gave him enough face and granted an audience. He sat high in the hall and smiled at Hai Lin.

“Please excuse my sudden visit, Brother Li.” Hai Lin didn’t dare to show any slight and bowed towards Li Qiye with great humility.

He was famous right now and praised as the leader in fighting against Soaring Immortal. He was very influential and loved by many great powers at the Grand Sea.

Moreover, he was the commander of the alliance at this moment so his fame and authority were only below Fiercest and Long Aotian.

Anyone else would become complacent and smug. However, Hai Lin had near-death experiences before and he knew that there was a big gap between him and someone like Fiercest. Plus, Fiercest had saved his life before so he owed him a debt!

“Have a seat.” Li Qiye gently nodded and said carefreely.

Hai Lin sat down and cupped his fist: “Brother Li, Soaring Immortal is a great threat to the entire Mortal Emperor World. As a member of the Grand Sea, I have the responsibility to resist. I lack experience but was fortunate enough to be supported by everyone. I come here, representing the Mortal Emperor Alliance, to ask you for help.”

Li Qiye smiled at the youth’s humble attitude and said: “Looks like you know how to act, knowing when to push and when to pull.”

“Thank you.” Hai Lin said: “This has nothing to do with personal glory. It is relating to the survival of the Grand Sea. I am here to humbly ask for your help, Brother Li.”

Hai Lin was not a soft person. On the contrary, he was a very arrogant and confident man. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have clashed with Long Aotian so many times. However, this matter was an existential crisis so he let go of his own pride in order to ask for assistance.

“The survival of the Grand Sea has nothing to do with me.” Li Qiye gently shook his head.

“You might not be from the Grand Sea but you were still born in the Mortal Emperor World.” Hai Lin hastily added: “If the Grand Sea were to fall, Soaring Immortal would point its sword at Mortal Emperor next. In the end, you will still have to fight them. It is better to fight them now before they grow stronger.”

“It’s only Soaring Immortal. Destroying them, to me, is a piece of cake, not worth talking about.” Li Qiye said without thinking.

“Well...” Hai Lin had no response.

Li Qiye smiled after seeing this: “You are the commander of the alliance so you can wait until Soaring Immortal and I kill each other, then take advantage of the remaining mess, capturing both sides at the same time. Perhaps you will be the final victor in the

competition for the Heaven's Will. Your prestige will make the world listen to you so you can become the next emperor."

"No, I'm afraid you misunderstood me, Brother Li." Hai Lin said: "I definitely do not have this idea nor dare try to carry it out. No one will be emperor but you in this generation."

Li Qiye gently shook his head: "It doesn't matter what you think. Action speaks louder than words."

"..." Hai Lin became quiet after hearing this. Meanwhile, Li Qiye simply stared at him and waited.

After a long time, Hai Lin took a deep breath and said seriously: "I know that you do not trust me. After all, wars are no joke. This battle will involve the fate of the entire Mortal Emperor World and the competition for the throne. I can see why Brother Li is choosing to not mobilize your troops."

Hai Lin felt that Li Qiye's caution was warranted. If Li Qiye and Soaring Immortal were to be caught up in a costly battle, then he would lose everything that he had been working for.

# Chapter 1661: The Generals

---

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “You misunderstood my intention. It has nothing to do with whether I trust you or not since I’m not afraid of someone else benefiting from the war. It’s only Soaring Immortal, destroying them isn’t hard.”

“Then when can you mobilize?” Hai Lin mused before asking.

“Hard to say.” Li Qiye chuckled: “There are things you can’t rely on others for. For you, what you need to do in accordance with your own wishes is the most important.”

Hai Lin didn’t know what Li Qiye was talking about and had to say: “The truth is that I won’t be competing for the Heaven’s Will in this generation. You have thirteen palaces, no one is more qualified than you to become emperor.”

“You still don’t get my point.” Li Qiye shook his head: “This has nothing to do with the competition either. Everyone else thinks about who will be the best candidate but as for me, the Heaven’s Will is already in my pocket. When to become emperor is up to me. Thus, once again, this has nothing to do with the current situation. War and survival, this is up to you.” He pointed at his own heart.

Hai Lin carefully contemplated before answering: “If you are asking me for my thoughts, then it is very simple - to chase Soaring Immortal away so that we sea monsters and demons will have a place to live. They came and murdered with wanton regards so I have the responsibility to stand up against them, to save the wailing existences.”

“Good intention.” Li Qiye smiled and said: “But there is no savior in this world. You can save them this generation but not the next. The most important thing is relying on yourself and working for what you want. If you place your hope on a savior, then how is it different from being a parasite?”

Hai Lin was surprised to hear this since this wasn't a topic he had dwelled on.

Li Qiye continued: "Why does Soaring Immortal dare to do whatever it wants at the Grand Sea? Why are they so unbridle after coming down each time? The reason is very simple. It is because of the living beings in the nine worlds."

"They endure, relent, or even help the enemies against justice. This is the reason why Soaring Immortal can dominate the nine worlds. Amidst the flame of war, everyone wants to benefit themselves instead of uniting to fight against the invader. This is the reason why the Ancient Ming was able to reign for so many generations."

This was indeed the truth. So many great powers wanted to flatter and earn Soaring Immortal's favor.

"Because of this, you can only rely on yourself during times of war instead of others. Only when you build something with your own blood will it be trustworthy. Without blood and struggle, everything will be taken for granted. Thus, use your blood to trade for peace and prosperity."

Hai Lin eventually looked at Li Qiye and formally said: "I will carve your words into my heart but nevertheless, I still want you to help during this crisis. As long as you are willing, everything is negotiable. Even if you take over the alliance and use us as cannon fodders in the front line, we will still agree as long as this is enough to protect the Grand Sea, allowing future descendants to have a place to stay. Any heavy price is fine. Just like you said, peace required the foundation of our blood, then let us use our blood to pave the way for future generations!"

He spoke in a formal and sonorous manner, full of charisma.

"I have no interest in authority." Li Qiye shook his head: "Of course, the fight between Soaring Immortal and me will happen. It's fine if you want to participate. Mobilize when I do and be true

to my words earlier, fight for your own destiny instead of relying on a savior. If you want your descendants to have a home in the Grand Sea, you must put in the effort. Otherwise, why would the victors give you the fruit of their effort for nothing?”

“I understand.” Hai Lin bowed and took a deep breath: “Just let me know when you are mobilizing against Soaring Immortal. I am willing to take the vanguard and open a path of blood for you. If we don’t go all out and pay with our blood and lives, there will be no place for us sea monsters and demons even if Soaring Immortal were to crumble later on.”

“It’s good that you have understood this logic.” Li Qiye nodded.

Hai Lin solemnly nodded and respectfully bowed towards Li Qiye before leaving.

After he left, the true god came in and sat down next to Li Qiye. He spoke with a slight annoyance: “Your Excellency, the war against Soaring Immortal is our battlefield, is there a need for these shrimps to be cannon fodders? If they take the vanguard, they’ll just go meet their death and get in our way.”

Worldkeeper was itching for a fight against Soaring Immortal. It was the perfect time for Azure Dragon to train their young soldiers.

Li Qiye said emotionlessly: “Let them. Their blood will wake up the stubborn ones. Peace has lasted for far too long in the nine worlds, let them vie for themselves. We’ll grow old one day and won’t be able to protect the nine worlds forever. Let them take the forefront and their descendants will come to appreciate their forefathers’ spilled blood just like the wise sages who fought against the Ancient Ming. Without this heroism, they are no different than sheep and the nine worlds will be a pasture. When the Ancient Ming comes again, there will be a lot of fat meat for them to taste.”

The true god carefully pondered before speaking with a tinge of

emotion: “Right, peace has lasted for too long. No real alliances have formed recently like the myriad races back then.”

Even though there had been a competition for the throne in each generation, they were too different compared to the resistance against the Ancient Ming. Moreover, these competitions were only between sects.

“There will be sacrifices. They are an important message for future generations to remember that their predecessors have banded against foreign invaders before. Let them know that only through solidarity and sheer effort will they be able to maintain their home and future. No one else will give this to you or protect you from one generation to the next!” Li Qiye said calmly.

The true god understood that His Excellency wanted to leave and was leaving the responsibility of protecting the nine worlds to the myriad races themselves.

Others were unaware but the true god knew that although His Excellency was reviled by others with all kind of nicknames. However, he has been protecting the nine worlds all along. Without his protection and necessary massacres, the remnants of the Ancient Ming would have returned already even during the Emperors Era.

Though Soaring Immortal was far from the same threat, His Excellency simply wanted Hai Lin’s alliance to spill blood, not for any other reason but just to pass the torch. His goal was to head to the end of the world in this generation without coming back. He was going all out, not worrying and looking back again.

Li Qiye said slowly: “I’m also tired so it is time for me to let go. Trampling Soaring Immortal and extinguishing the bloodline can be considered my final gift to the nine worlds. They have to rely on themselves afterward.”

“Your Excellency, you still can’t let go completely.” The true god sighed. Others only saw how many the dark hand had killed, not



the weight of his responsibility

“I must let go, no party lasts forever.” Li Qiye replied: “Immortality can be a type of torture since there are too many things one can’t let go in this world. Though your heart had lost all feelings, certain things still remained inside.”

The true god quietly nodded and eventually asked: “When will you mobilize, Your Excellency?”

“Let them prepare. Li Qiye chuckled: “Both Soaring Immortal and the alliance. Most importantly, we need to let Gu Zun and the mastermind behind Soaring Immortal think that victory is imminent for them. Otherwise, some threats will remain if they were to escape. Thus, our enemies need to be completely confident beforehand. When they use their entire forces, that’s when I pull in the net and utterly destroy every single one of them.”

# Chapter 1662: Army Of Ten Millions

---

Soaring Immortal wasn't in a rush to attack the Mortal Emperor World. After building their military platforms, the tornadoes began to rage again, causing the entire Grand Sea to quake.

The cultivators here could feel them crazily sucking the worldly energy from the earth vein like gigantic water pumps.

The ten of them in different locations around the Grand Sea was enough to take over all the earth veins from this region.

They channeled this energy into the platforms, causing them to light up with a sacred light that illuminates the entire world. At this moment, numerous faint shadows emerged. It looked as if the sect was ready to mobilize to any corner of the nine worlds.

Meanwhile, Hai Lin's alliance was also growing stronger with more sects joining, including those from the Hundred Cities, Barren Earth, Grand Middle Territory, and Desolate Wasteland. Some were imperial lineages.

Since Soaring Immortal had created their platforms even before having an emperor, people became even more frightened of their aggressive intention. The imperial lineages right now were afraid that Soaring Immortal would go on a rampage of destruction without scruples or needing any justification.

Because of this, the alliance grew in number. The initial waves of imperial lineages were able to convince more of their peers.

Without a doubt, there was no turning back from this war. It was either chasing Soaring Immortal away or being ruled by them. The determination on the alliance side only grew stronger as time passed.

Soaring Immortal didn't maneuver at all against the increasingly powerful alliance. It didn't send any messenger to negotiate peace or state their intention. It looked like they were ready to go all out

against the Mortal Emperor World.

Not only did this show their determination, it also advertised their confidence in their power. Of course, this fueled the sects in Mortal Emperor, even more, to fight against Soaring Immortal. If Soaring Immortal had sent out some messengers to certain imperial lineages and agreed to cut them some pieces of the pie, the alliance wouldn't have reached this level.

The inaction from Soaring Immortal meant that it didn't care for the alliance. It would take down this force in whole later on. The result would be very few sects daring to oppose them. Mortal Emperor would be theirs for the taking.

“Boom!” After seeing that it was time, Li Qiye gave the order for the Azure Dragon Legion to mobilize straight for the military platforms!

Azure Dragon began its march with a murderous bloodthirst engulfing the entire Mortal Emperor World. Though it was few in number, each veteran had a tremble-inducing aura. It was obvious that this was a machine of war, a gigantic meat grinder, capable of turning a battlefield into hell!

Worldkeeper led the way with his bronze stallion and spear. Each stomp from the stallion shattered the sky. He looked completely invincible and unstoppable. The world quaked beneath his presence. Even the extremely powerful ancestors from Soaring Immortal became serious as Worldkeeper slowly approached. They were uncertain of victory before this man.

Like he had said previously, Asura might be the only one who can match him. Others wouldn't be able to stop a single blow! Though many ancestors were still unconvinced of this claim, they waited with caution!

“Rumble!” Meanwhile, Hai Lin's alliance also joined the fray. A flood of cavalry made its noise across the Grand Sea.

This particular army was too gigantic compared to the Azure Dragon Legion. There were so many battalions and banners. This magnificent scene also shocked the world since few have ever witnessed this kind of number before.

The myriad races and sects were all included. Demons, humans, golems, blood race, charming spirits... the sea monsters were especially going all out. Any surviving sea monsters all joined the alliance and swore to fight to the death!

They claimed to be ten millions strong. Although this number was exaggerated, it did include all the different factions in Mortal Emperor World. Ninety percent of all great powers in the Grand Sea joined in as well. Thus, if it wasn't ten millions, it would at least be seven millions!

Hai Lin was nominated as the commander. There were also certain influential Godkings acting as his aides to lead this great army

He had agreed that when Azure Dragon marched, they would be willing to take the vanguard and open a path of blood.

In fact, the alliance didn't have any other choice. If they wanted a home in the future, they must pay with their blood.

Many cultivators who couldn't join the alliance felt their blood boiling and became excited.

"When united, Mortal Emperor can fight against all invaders. Alone we might be insignificant but together, all foes shall fear us. Let them know that Mortal Emperor isn't so easily bullied!" A hot-blooded cultivator declared.

It didn't matter how this war would end. This time around, everyone in Mortal Emperor was involved. It rekindled a spark of hope for all inhabitants. At the very least, in the time of a great disaster, the myriad races would drop their personal grievances and feuds to band together against the foreign invaders!

The massive army and the Azure Dragon Legion were posturing outside of the platforms, ready to attack at any moment. As long as they took these platforms down, the portal to the Soaring Immortal Sect would appear before them.

“Whoosh!” Immortal lights rushed from the platforms and became thick, crystal walls. They have been augmented by Immortal Emperors before so they were extremely hard to break.

Moreover, the army from Soaring Immortal had already taken formation. They were ready to meet the two incoming forces.

“Brother Li.” Hai Lin personally went to greet Li Qiye as the two armies were preparing outside.

At this time, Hai Lin was adorned with a divine armor with an ancient, majestic aura. It was obvious that this was the ultimate artifact of the sea monsters.

This particular tribe had great hopes for Hai Lin. Thus, regardless of the battle’s result, they wanted him to survive. That’s why they gave him this divine armor. Of course, he also had Ding Yuanhou, the golden dragon, and several powerful Godkings from imperial lineages to his left and right.

These particular Godkings were reminded by the sea monster ancestors so they were especially respectful towards Li Qiye.

Li Qiye simply looked at Hai Lin and nodded while sitting on his throne.

Hai Lin didn’t beat around the bush. He prostrated and said: “Brother Li, the great army is before you, awaiting your command. Just say the word and we will jump into the boiling water!”

Li Qiye glanced at the army blotting out the sky and nodded: “This will be a harsh battle, life-and-death will be up to fate! The Mortal Emperor World will be your responsibility. All of you shall be recorded in the historical annals just like the wise sages in the past!”

Finished with his preamble, he added: “The enemy is before you, begin.”

Hai Lin didn’t say anything else. He returned to his army with the Godkings and shouted: “It’s time for war, begin!”

With his command, the army instantly entered a state of battle, ready to fight Soaring Immortal to the death.

Meanwhile, Worldkeeper and his legion were as emotionless as ever. This type of battles to them was an ordinary occurrence.

In fact, he didn’t give a damn about the alliance since he had no use of them as cannon fodders. If he wanted to start, he would immediately rush for the platforms.

However, His Excellency wanted to sharpen this alliance of the Mortal Emperor World. Thus, Worldkeeper let the alliance have the chance to initiate the battle.

“Clang!” Soaring Immortal have also begun readying their troops on the platform with a battle gong.

# Chapter 1663: Early News Of Victory

---

Li Qiye told Worldkeeper while glancing at the two armies on the verge of battle: “Let them fight for a while until enough blood has flown. When they can’t handle it anymore, you can start.”

“Affirmative.” The true god nodded.

“The Mortal Emperor World is showing tremendous resolution this time. Looks like they will be able to last for a while if Soaring Immortal doesn’t use its ace cards right away.” Matriarch Yu who was once the first general of the Black Dragon Legion commented while looking at the alliance.

Li Qiye nodded in agreement: “Indeed, they’re doing a fine job.”

Calling themselves ten millions strong was pushing it a little but everyone was going all out, agreeing to send so many disciples to participate in this war. They put aside their grievances and banded together during this moment of crisis caused by a foreign invader!

The matriarch said with a tinge of regrets: “Unfortunately, they do have a lot of firepowers but not enough time for sharpening. These battalions are strong but won’t be able to cooperate during a real fight, unable to form real formations and use their combined vitality to unleash an ultimate blow. Otherwise, they would actually be able to stop Soaring Immortal’s ace cards.”

Soaring Immortal had fought against the Black Dragon King Legion before and had swept through the nine worlds. Their legions were battle-hardened.

“This is already impressive enough.” Li Qiye chuckled: “Even if they train a bit more, they would only be able to stop the real moves from Soaring Immortal for a bit, not a full-frontal assault. The crux of the issue is that the majority of the sects are still hiding their resources. Say, if these imperial lineages all take out their imperial true treasures to form a formation empowered by

Immortal Emperor Longevity Blood, they would actually be able to take Soaring Immortal on!”

The matriarch became quiet. This was indeed too difficult. How many imperial lineages were actually willing to use their full arsenals and treasuries for this battle today?

In fact, it was already commendable enough for them to send so many experts.

While the group was talking about the alliance, a series of clattering noises came about. Three huge crossbows placed on three stages far away from each other were situated in front of the alliance. With metallic clanking, the three crossbows had actually assembled themselves.

How gigantic were these crossbows? The stages they were on were the size of a mountain. Their string alone was made from the tendons of flood-dragons and spanned for more than a thousand meters.

The arrow created on top of the crossbow was even longer at ten thousand meters. Such a divine arrow could annihilate a city instantly. This was definitely an amazing artifact for a siege. Just a casual blow could end a great power.

The crowd stared in fear while looking at the black light emanating from the three arrows.

These three arrows had unique marking. The matriarch looked at Li Qiye with surprise in her eyes after seeing the marking.

Ordinary people wouldn't recognize it but she knew that it was the unique marking of the Heaven's Secret Valley.

This particular sect rarely cared about worldly matters. Who would have thought that the alliance would be able to borrow three divine crossbows from this sect. It showed the great effort and solidarity of the Mortal Emperor World.

Of course, it wasn't that easy to borrow these crossbows. Some



imperial lineages must have stepped up because ordinary people weren't qualified to do so.

Meanwhile, the soldiers on the platforms of the Soaring Immortal World only sneered while looking at the three crossbows.

In their eyes, this alliance was no different from a disorganized mob, no match for their army.

Thus, the three crossbows brought here were viewed with disdain. Their crystal walls from the platforms simply couldn't be penetrated by this type of arrows or this newly formed alliance. After their enemy became fatigued from the failing siege, that's when they would instantly annihilate them.

The only real threat in their eyes was the Azure Dragon Legion, not the alliance. Killing this ragtag alliance wouldn't take too much effort.

"Fire!" After the crossbows were done setting up, Hai Lin gave the order.

A whoosh came before a loud bang. The truth was that the sounds came slower than its speed. The crystal walls were struck before the sounds emanated.

Ordinary experts couldn't see it clearly but Godkings saw everything. The three arrows struck the wall and failed to penetrate, only leaving small holes next to each other.

Because of this, the soldiers on the platform sneered at this child's play.

However, their smile froze in the next second. The arrows fell down from the holes and crumbled, revealing three intensely red arrows made of blood inside. They were extremely small, only the size of a thumb. They instantly suppressed the imperial auras that were ravaging the world and everything else.

"Boom!" The wall shattered and the blood arrows continued

towards the Soaring Immortal Legion.

“Shield!” The officers reacted with amazing speed and instantly gave the order. At the same time, the platforms exuded a boundless imperial light to protect its legion.

“Boom!” The three arrows pierced through the imperial barrier and the shields from the soldiers. Everything crumbled before their might.

“Ah!” Blood spattered like a storm. The three arrows left behind three immense trails of blood.

Soaring Immortal suffered a devastating first blow with a casualty of nearly one hundred thousands.

“Immortal Emperor Longevity Blood turned into arrows, okay, they really put it all on the table.” Even Li Qiye commented after seeing this.

These arrows were indeed made of this grade of material and served as the alliance’s biggest ace card. Eight imperial lineages indeed expended their resources and offered the unbelievably precious nine drops of imperial blood. Finally, the Heaven’s Secret Valley refined these drops of blood into the blood arrows hidden inside the regular arrows since the crossbows by themselves wouldn’t be able to break through.

This was part of Hai Lin’s plan after careful deliberation. They needed to catch Soaring Immortal by surprise by instantly breaking through the barrier.

Soaring Immortal underestimated its enemy this time and focused on the wrong foe at this particular juncture. They didn’t expect for the imperial sects in the alliance to actually use some Immortal Emperor Longevity Blood.

“Kill!” The soldiers on the alliance side felt a great morale boost after breaking down the crystal wall. Their battle cries echoed across the entire Grand Sea.

“Rumble!” The great army rushed for the platforms with an unstoppable momentum as if they were primal beasts. The cultivators in Mortal Emperor have had enough and must destroy Soaring Immortal this time. Otherwise, this sect would always be a threat in their mind.

“To battle!” The Soaring Immortal Legion was ferocious as well. They quickly rushed to meet the enemy with the same ferocity. Even some of the wounded members were still as mighty as tigers.

Having their defensive perimeter broken through was humiliating so their bloodthirst surged even more. They would never let anyone challenge their prestige! Massacring this alliance would let them re-establish this authority.

“Boom! Bang!” In a short time, the two sides went all out on the platforms. The Godkings rampaged and everyone used their best killing techniques in order to take the enemy down.

This battle was a fight to the death for the alliance. They would never let Soaring Immortal point their swords at Mortal Emperor! A shocking skirmish ensued to the astonishment of all spectators!

# Chapter 1664: Gu Zuns Appearance

---

“Ah!” Miserable screams became even more common as the battle grew increasingly intense. Skulls and blood went flying. A rain of blood poured down, accompanied by severed limbs. Pulverized flesh was everywhere.

As more of cultivators faltered, there were little piles of corpses everywhere. Their blood accumulated into little ponds with floating corpses and limbs.

The entire battlefield has turned into hell. The platforms were huge meat grinders that ate flesh and lives. No one could run after coming in. Their only thought was to kill or be killed!

The weak-hearted would have fainted after seeing this grotesque scene. Even the braver ones would inevitably vomit.

Alas, Li Qiye and the Azure Dragon Legion simply watched outside of the platforms without any emotional fluctuation.

Such a sight was common to them. One could even say that this was only a minor skirmish to this crowd, only an appetizer. They have experienced much worse in the Immortal Slaying War.

The alliance from Mortal Emperor actually had the upper hand in this battle. They themselves didn't expect this at all and it became a great morale boost. They fought with an unprecedented ferocity.

This was the result of Soaring Immortal underestimating its enemy. Otherwise, their formations wouldn't have become disorganized after the penetration of the blood arrows. It wouldn't have been as easy for the alliance.

The most ferocious was Hai Lin's cavalry. It was entirely made up of experts from imperial lineages on top of being led by Ding Yuanhou and several powerful Godkings. This was the elite force of the alliance. It wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that all hopes

were pinned on this particular group.

And the cavalry didn't let them down. After entering the battlefield, they stopped Soaring Immortal's powerful retaliation like a merciless dagger aiming for the heart.

Hai Lin and the top experts were exemplary as they killed several captains on the other side and won precious opportunities for advancement!

"Reinforcements!" A horn sounded as the alliance seized the upper hand while the Soaring Immortal Legion was pushed back.

"Rumble!" The gate to Soaring Immortal was opened in a split second as more legions joined the battlefield.

The soldiers there emitted an ancient bloodthirst as if they have been stained with countless blood and the souls of their victims still lingered around.

"Imperial legions!" Everyone knew what kind of foes they were about to face. This reinforcement was many times stronger than the first legion.

In the beginning, the first legion was made up of the young generation from the sect. Now, these were imperial legions that have helped Immortal Emperor Ren Xian sweep through the world. They were experienced and adept at killing, allowing them to be completely unstoppable.

"Kill!" Nevertheless, the alliance didn't show any fear and still lunged forward to meet their foes.

Under ordinary circumstances, people would retreat against the imperial legions. But now, the alliance had no other choice. Their eyes were red in a frenzy from the atmosphere and imperial legions weren't enough to stop them! Only by risking it all would they have a chance for survival. Plus, to their back was their home, the Mortal Emperor World!

"Ah!" More wailings came about. It seemed to be storms of blood

in the sky now. All the advantages won by the alliance disappeared after the imperial legions joined in.

At the same time, a figure appeared on the battlefield. It was an old man in gray.

He appeared like a ghost with imperceptible speed and made screams happen. In this split second, the golden dragon, Ding Yuanhou, and the top Godkings were instantly killed. The old man was truly too fast with his fierce attacks.

“Gu Zun.” Li Qiye’s eyes narrowed before ordering Worldkeeper: “I leave this place to you.”

With that, he joined the battlefield as well. After seeing this, Gu Zun’s figure flashed and disappeared. Li Qiye smiled and crossed through space in order to give chase.

The moment the two appeared again, they were already far from the battlefield. Their place of appearance was inside an auspicious ground of Heaven Suppression.

It was a flat field surrounded by mountains with a tiny palace in the center. It was half-buried on the ground and quite old in appearance. Plenty of weeds grew in the vicinity as if no one has been taking care of it.

This inconspicuous and abandoned palace was a forbidden ground for the disciples of Heaven Suppression. No one knew why except that this was a clause in their ancestral teachings.

Gu Zun stood before the palace without escaping. He turned and stared at Li Qiye.

Li Qiye also stood there, as calm as ever with a faint smile and evaluated Gu Zun for a bit.

“Your Excellency, long time no see.” Gu Zun wasn’t afraid nor angry after seeing Li Qiye. He was actually very respectful and cupped his fist: “You are even younger than in my imagination.”

“Is that so?” Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile while shaking his head: “Gu Zun, I’m actually amazed by your courage. You know who you are facing, even emperors are afraid of me yet it doesn’t deter you. It’s quite rare.”

“It is my honor to be praised by Your Excellency.” Gu Zun responded in a natural manner: “You used to teach me back then and said that the most important thing for a cultivator is a fearless dao heart. I have always kept this in mind. And right, you also used to say that, tread forward despite knowing that a tiger dwells on the mountain and try to overcome the impossible. That’s the way of true man.”

“I indeed taught you that.” Li Qiye nodded: “Looks like you have kept them in mind. I don’t know if I should be proud or not to have a student like you.”

“My little accomplishments aren’t enough to get into your eyes.” Gu Zun said slowly: “You have trained so many supreme people such as brilliant emperors. I pale in comparison.”

Li Qiye sighed emotionally and said: “Incredible, I have seen many people in my life. Sometimes, I feel that you are truly special. The truth is that others knew what to do with their lives but your choice surprised me.”

“You said that I had a natural disposition for betrayal.” Gu Zun said with a smile: “Since you have put it that way, why not try doing it so that you won’t be wrong? Moreover, if I don’t do it, I would be letting down my natural disposition, right?”

“Hahaha.” Li Qiye laughed and said: “Though you might not be the most courageous or the most brilliant, you are the most interesting one.”

“You are too kind.” Gu Zun replied.

Li Qiye looked at him and continued: “Gu Zun, what do you think is your chance for survival or victory? Remember, I’m not turning

back this time so there's no holding back."

Gu Zun responded: "I know. I don't have brother-in-law to beg for my sake. Plus, even if he was present, you wouldn't spare me either. You have your rules and a bottom line. Once crossed, there is no mercy!"

"Correct." Li Qiye nodded: "The Black Dragon King's beseech no longer applies in this generation after what you have done, which is why I'm finally here now."



# Chapter 1665: The Treasury

---

Gu Zun said with a smile: “I know that you have given me a chance. Brother-in-law’s sacrifice had redeemed for my sin. Because of this, after you have regained your body, you still didn’t do anything against Heaven Suppression.”

“Unfortunately, you still don’t understand and haven’t changed your mind at all. Still the same Gu Zun as before.” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head.

“Why should I?” Gu Zun smiled back: “If I am a bad person, no matter how much I change my mind and become enlightened, I’m still a bad person. It doesn’t change what I have done in the past.”

“Yes, just the fact that you told Immortal Emperor Ta Kong of the coordinates to Immortal Demon Grotto alone is worthy of a thousand deaths.” Li Qiye nodded seriously.

After Li Qiye escaped from the grotto, he worked together with an Immortal Emperor to banish the entrance to this place into a deep spatial zone. Others wouldn’t be able to find the coordinates of this entrance but Gu Zun was aware of this secret. He told Immortal Emperor Ta Kong so that the emperor could find it.

“That’s why there is no need to change my mind.” Gu Zun smiled: “I’m a dead man anyway, why bother trying to become a good person? Plus, I might have a chance of winning as a bad person, don’t you think?”

Li Qiye became a bit sentimental after seeing the calm Gu Zun. He smiled and said: “With your talents, you can learn things that even the old emperors can’t. Alas, you couldn’t learn certain positive traits outside of this calmness. It does resemble me quite a bit.”

“Immortal Emperors aren’t anything to you anyway. Plus, due to your belief of my natural disposition for betrayal, you wouldn’t

have trained me to become one anyway regardless of how I have acted. Thus, I have thought clearly about this matter. No need to worry about becoming an Immortal Emperor, there are many other things in life worth pursuing.”

“So you want to imitate and become me.” Li Qiye was clear on this as well.

“In this world, it isn’t my sister who understands me the best, not my brother-in-law either, it is you, your Excellency.” Gu Zun said: “If I can’t become an emperor, then it’s not bad to become the dark hand either. I don’t lack talents and strategies, my dao heart can be polished even further. Though my dao heart is no match for yours, I still think it can’t be weaker than the emperors. With enough time, mine will be as strong as yours.”

“But you lack two things. Resources and immortality.” Li Qiye chuckled.

“Yes, Your Excellency. However, you have left behind a treasury that was once watched over by my brother-in-law and Immortal Emperor Qian Li. It was then strengthened by Immortal Emperor Yin Tian later. I heard them saying that this treasury contains your personal artifacts for attacking the tenth world. Thus, there is no need to debate their values. If I can obtain them, that’s enough for me to stand strong in the nine worlds!” Gu Zun remained calm.

“That’s why you have always wanted it.” Li Qiye didn’t become angry: “Though you couldn’t open it, this led to your second idea. If you had immortality, it would mean endless possibilities and time for strategies. One day, you would be able to get this treasury.”

“Yes, that’s why I gave the coordinates to Immortal Emperor Ta Kong so that he could invade the place. Unfortunately, this plan wasn’t that successful. If I could become an immortal being like you were, I could replace you one day.” Gu Zun agreed.

“How interesting.” Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile: “I have met

so many people in the millions of years. Supreme geniuses and treacherous students, but no matter who they are, they all wanted to obtain some treasures or training from me. Of course, becoming an emperor was many people's dream. However, very few wanted to become an existence like me. Immortality isn't all that wonderful like in people's imagination."

"That's indeed the case." Gu Zun said solemnly: "This is something I admire about you. As generations went by with pain, you didn't become a saint or a devil, your heart remained the same. This is the greatest thing about you and what I aspire with great confidence to have one day, an immovable dao heart. Then I can rule the nine worlds just like you, much more interesting than becoming an emperor."

"It's not a bad thought, unfortunately, you are not me." Li Qiye shook his head.

"That's why I have worked hard to become someone like you. After all, my cultivation is still weak after just three generations, not being able to reign the nine worlds just yet. It looks like I have let you down." Gu Zun replied truthfully.

"Forget it, no need to talk about this." Li Qiye shook his head: "My main goal this time in the Grand Sea is taking your life. Since you have chosen on walking the dark path, I shall let you use all your means and ace cards now, so that you won't be dying a regretful death."

"Thank you. Let us finish this matter then." Gu Zun respectfully cupped his fist.

"Clank!" The entire field was locked the moment Gu Zun finished speaking. An iron curtain surrounded the whole place with the two and the palace inside.

Li Qiye wasn't afraid at all. He carefully observed the curtain and commented: "Flawless craftsmanship, cast from the iron of the earth vein. It grew together with the vein and after a long period of

gestation, it had taken roots with the vein for symbiosis.”

“This is all thanks to your guidance.” Gu Zun didn’t become complacent: “You have taught me the art of smelting before so I gave it a try. I’m glad you’re not disappointed.”

“You still want me to open the treasury.” Li Qiye glanced at the palace and understood Gu Zun’s intention.

“I truly want to widen my horizon. Your treasury has been here for a long time. After careful rumination, this treasury was now connected with the earth vein. Without your key, it is impossible to open it. So, I used the arts you have taught me back then and used the earth iron as the base in order to connect this curtain with the earth vein as well. After years of harmonization, my experiment was a success.”

“Hmm, indeed.” Li Qiye agreed: “A very clever design. If I want to leave by breaking down this curtain, I have to open the treasury first. Or, just opening the treasury would automatically remove the curtain as well. This is indeed the finest craftsmanship in the nine worlds. This technique, this planning, this refinement technique... how many people can actually achieve this type of symbiosis with the earth vein?”

If outsiders were to listen to this conversation, they would think the two were discussing a profound art. Who would think that these two were about to kill each other?

Gu Zun respectfully cupped his fist at the praise again.

Li Qiye smiled and looked at Gu Zun: “You want to see the key, right?”

“Yes.” Gu Zun nodded: “Your treasury is unique, the other treasures in the world are mere scraps in comparison. I have coveted your treasury for a long time, you won’t be so stingy as to not let me see it?”

Gu Zun didn’t try to hide his intent at all. There was no need to

do so before Li Qiye since nothing could elude his eyes.

“Are you not afraid of me killing you first?” Li Qiye teased.

Gu Zun didn't become afraid: “I know you're not so ordinary. In your eyes, I am a dead man, it is only a matter of time. I haven't used my ace card so you won't be killing me just yet. I'm confident you will open the treasury first.”

“How fun.” Li Qiye praised: “Fine, since you want it so bad, what else can I say? It's not like I can't let you see it, but, the key is not on me.”

“From what I know about you, Your Excellency, as long as your soul and sea of memories are there, it will not be a problem. Your sea of memories isn't only empowered by brother-in-law's group but also by many other existences. Because of this, it can easily open this treasury.” Gu Zun slowly commented.

Li Qiye gently shook his head: “No, you don't understand. What I'm saying is, the key is not on me. You have the key.”

“Your Excellency, your joke isn't funny at all. If I had the key, I wouldn't need to wait till now.” Gu Zun shook his head.

To which Li Qiye responded in a serious manner: “I'm not joking around. I don't have the key, the real key has always been on you. You, yourself, is the key.”

“Impossible!” Gu Zun couldn't remain calm at this moment. He took one step back with his eyes narrowing.

In this split second, he came up with a frightening possibility!

# Chapter 1666: The Unthinkable Answer

---

Li Qiye smiled at the astounded Gu Zun: “Yes, just like your imagination, you have always been able to open the treasury. Your blood is the key!”

“No, it’s impossible!” Gu Zun turned slightly pale, finding it hard to accept this truth.

Remember, he has been working on this treasury for a long time without being able to open it. Back then, the Black Dragon King and Immortal Emperor Qian Li personally watched it on top of another augmentation by Immortal Emperor Yin Tian. It was understandable that he didn’t have an opening. But now, the real answer was that he, himself, was the key. It was too much for him to take.

“Try and see.” Li Qiye smiled again.

Gu Zun took a deep breath and tried to regain his calm demeanor. Nevertheless, his expression was still slightly awkward since he already knew the answer.

He walked in front of the old, mottled entrance and took a deep breath before stretching out his finger. A drop of blood flowed into the lock while his finger was quivering.

“Creak-” After his blood drop entered the lock, the heavy door slowly opened with exquisite movements.

He seemed to be struck by lightning and took a step back, paled. The answer was finally confirmed.

In the past, he had tried multiple times to find a method of entry or sneaking in. However, this place was created by the hardest material in the world, sealed by the most fortified method with emperors, and guarded by the Black Dragon King and the others.

This impregnable treasury was out of reach even for an eonic genius like him. It was simply impossible to open. He had dreamt

about entering many times but now, it was right before him yet he felt fear and didn't dare to enter.

“Since you have planned for so long, why not go have a look?” Li Qiye said slowly as Gu Zun was frozen at the entrance.

Gu Zun took a deep breath and stepped inside the treasury despite knowing the answer. He chose to face it because he was not a weak coward.

There were no immortal lights in the treasury or the hymns of divine weapons, no beautiful armors either. It was a completely empty treasury!

Gu Zun turned pale inside the treasury. He trembled despite his best effort to calm himself. The treasury he coveted so much has always been empty! Not even in his dream would he ever have expected such a thing.

Li Qiye didn't sneer at him and simply watched quietly.

In the end, Gu Zun regained his composure. His pale face had its color returned.

He couldn't help but smile: “That's Your Excellency for you, I am but a child compared to you in terms of scheming. Using the most precious metal to create a treasury and made all of these big shots stand on guard just for it to be empty...”

It was a very forced smile, even uglier than crying.

“So you have schemed against me from the beginning, even before you taught me cultivation. I was naive enough to think that you were earnest in that endeavor. So I was listed in your list of traitors from the start!” He smiled bitterly.

“You're off there.” Li Qiye shook his head: “I didn't teach you for the sake of it. If I didn't want to, you think the Black Dragon King could have convinced me otherwise? That's right, this treasury was created because of you in the beginning. It is not only because of your natural disposition towards betrayal. More importantly, it

is because you are one of the ten eonic geniuses, such a rare and precious aptitude. Even though I don't really care for talents, I didn't wish to see you being wasted before me. This treasury is only a test for you. Despite your great talents, you ultimately failed the test. You thought your current dao heart is unyielding but you couldn't resist the temptation!"

He continued on: "I was vigilant against you not because of your disposition but because you couldn't resist temptation from the start. I have seen countless geniuses and even the eonic ones. When a genius can't resist temptation, then he won't be bringing good fortune to the nine worlds, only calamities."

"In the end, you are still correct." Gu Zun smiled.

Li Qiye stared at him and said flatly: "Do you know why I still haven't killed you? It is not only because of your brother-in-law but because you have still been able to protect your dao heart to a certain extent. At the very least, you didn't cross the line and experimented with the Ancient Ming. That's why I didn't kill you yet!"

"I am honored." Gu Zun respectfully said.

"You won't turn back and will keep continuing on this path." Li Qiye added.

"You still won't spare me, what begins must end, right, Your Excellency?" Gu Zun had finally calmed his emotions at this moment.

"All of this doesn't matter at this point. It is destined to happen." Li Qiye gently shook his head.

Gu Zun smiled back: "Then I have no regrets. Having a pursuit is necessary for one's life. Being able to oppose you is the happiest thing in my life, my greatest achievement. After the destruction of the Ancient Ming, how many people have actually dared to truly take you on? I am insignificant compared to you. However, even if



I'm only an ant, I want to be one that does not know its limit, one that doesn't want to submit to your wish, Your Excellency!"

"Quite courageous!" Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: "Everyone wants something different. If your pursuit is to oppose me, then I can't do anything else but kill you."

"I know." Gu Zun didn't become alarmed and said: "If you want to see my ace card, then follow me." He disappeared afterward.

Li Qiye smiled and disappeared as well. He crossed through space and gave chase.

In the next second, the two of them emerged above a vast sea. This was still the Grand Sea but it was in the southernmost area. This desolate region rarely had visitors and was without any lineage.

The tides here were fierce and violent as if the sea itself was enraged.

"Your Excellency, this sea region is familiar, right?" Gu Zun smiled and said.

"Rumble!" The sea split and became chaotic. It looked like a portal was opening from below and nine gigantic figures came out. Their aura rampaged like a terrible primal flood!

They immediately blotted out the sky and took away light from this region. The sea only made it up to their knees. One crush alone could annihilate the entire realm.

They were all monsters with different forms. One had a large fish body and a tiny human head; one more had the body of a five-clawed flood-dragon. Another one had a large shell on its back and resembled a clam...

They resembled sea monsters but didn't have the same aura. The nine instantly surrounded Li Qiye while Gu Zun stayed outside.

"Your Excellency, are you familiar with these nine friends too?"

Gu Zun smiled and said.

“How can I forget the nine Sea Kings?” Li Qiye chuckled after seeing them.

“Gentlemen, here’s your old friend, His Excellency, Dark Crow!” Gu Zun smiled and said: “This is the man who suppressed you all at the bottom of the sea. His Excellency had gotten back his body in this generation, it’s time for vengeance.”

The nine monsters immediately became serious. Their eyes shined like the sun in the sky and illuminated the region.

Everyone would be horrified by this terrible scene.

# Chapter 1667: Nine Sea Kings

---

Li Qiye chuckled after seeing the nine gigantic monsters. He didn't care at all even though the eighteen eyes were shining on him like eighteen suns. It had no effect on him.

“Dark Crow!” The monsters' voice struck like thunder, causing the world to quake.

Even Godkings would be terrified because of them.

“You think they can trap me?” Li Qiye cheerfully smiled at Gu Zun standing outside.

“I know it is difficult to trap you, Your Excellency.” Gu Zun smiled back: “But at the very least, this will be more enemies for you. I trust that the nine Sea Kings will trouble you quite a bit since they want revenge from back then!”

People would be scared out of their mind to hear their titles. They used to be legendary monsters that once ravaged the Mortal Emperor World several generations ago. They were rumored to be from the Grand Sea, similar to sea monsters but not part of that tribe.

Their real origin was unknown but they were immensely powerful after appearing and completely unpredictable. Not too many could oppose them in this world.

They became even stronger during Immortal Emperor Yin Tian's generation and frequently traveled around the Grand Sea. There would be a great storm each time that robbed the peace from the region.

Later on, the emperor fought against the nine of them. These kings were strong to an unbelievable level and actually managed to stop the emperor then escaped.

In fact, after the emperor's fight, the Dark Crow had sent several people to find them. However, they were too elusive to be found.

Eventually, the storm and tsunami caused by them truly enraged the Dark Crow. He ordered his generals and even came in person. Finally, he captured and sealed all nine of them beneath this sea region.

As the Dark Crow's enemy, Gu Zun had always thought about how to free them. His effort didn't betray him. After several careful observations, he found that the seal was weakening. Because of this, he tried his best to release the seal and the nine monsters in order to fight against their common enemy, the Dark Crow!

"Why do you assume that they're my enemies?" Li Qiye cheerfully smirked.

"Is this not the case?" Gu Zun's expression changed. He didn't have the same confidence as before after the treasury incident.

"Your Excellency!" The nine monsters dropped down to one knee. Their body as large as amazing pillars bowed towards Li Qiye!

"Rise, you all have been sealed long enough. It is all in the past now." Li Qiye nodded.

"You!" Gu Zun was astounded and stumbled backward. At this time, he stared at Li Qiye in horror: "You tricked me again!"

"Not quite." Li Qiye shook his head: "I didn't do this to scheme against you. It is all a coincidence. Remember, you weren't born yet when the nine kings were in this world."

At this moments, the nine Sea Kings surrounded Gu Zun instead. One of them said: "Brat, you are indeed very smart. Unfortunately, you don't know our origin. Your intelligence has betrayed you."

"You lot conspired together!" Gu Zun felt himself being tricked completely. He thought that he was releasing some powerful enemies against Li Qiye and didn't expect for them to be friends.

Li Qiye shook his head again: "No, I have been chasing and

eventually imprisoned them. This is true. However, I have also done them a favor, there is no grievance here. You also knew of this so you assumed that they are my enemies. I was also certain that you would come to find them so I casually gave them an order. The truth is that ever since you opened the seal, they have been watching over the Grand Sea and keeping an eye on you!”

He smiled and added: “It’s funny, your intelligence and scheming are hurting you now.”

“Brat, His Excellency has given us a new life, you think we would actually work together with you?” One of the Sea Kings laughed.

So it turned out that the nine kings were juniors who have escaped from the Crystalfowl Immortal Mine. Their branch was suppressed and cursed by the high heaven so they couldn’t appear in this world.

Nevertheless, the nine were powerful and clever enough. After escaping, they severed their bloodline and turned into these monsters.

Alas, despite losing their bloodline, they were still strong so they caused quite a stir at the Mortal Emperor World. However, they didn’t come out for hegemony or anything, only to play around.

Li Qiye had promised the pheasant to look for them. That’s why he started chasing after them. However, the nine kings knew that Li Qiye wanted to capture them so they were very elusive and would run at the first sign of trouble.

Unfortunately, certain things couldn’t be avoided. Even though they have severed their bloodline, they were still creatures not allowed to come into being. They failed to erase the aura of their race.

Thus, during the generation of Immortal Emperor Yin Tian, the heavenly curse and suppression returned in the form of a lightning tribulation assaulting them.

This was the reason why there would be a great storm each time they appeared in the Grand Sea. They didn't want to cause trouble, it was due to the curse!

Li Qiye then personally took action and surrounded them with his legion. He didn't only suppress them but also sealed them completely. His sealing technique allowed them to escape the curse from the high heaven.

Gu Zun was aware of this story but he didn't know of the nine kings' origin. That's why he released them in the first place. He didn't expect for them to owe the Dark Crow a great debt!

The people he thought were his allies turned out to be the ones keeping an eye on him the whole time. This turned his expression quite unsightly!

"Looks like I'm still no match for you in terms of scheming and experience." Gu Zun took a deep breath and had to admit.

In fact, he was well aware of this beforehand but he still wanted to give it a shot. He couldn't accept defeat without trying. Thinking that he was inferior to the Dark Crow was unacceptable.

For him, he would never give up until the Dark Crow shatters his confidence completely at the very last moment!

Li Qiye commented: "This is just because there are many things you don't know. You're talented enough, just need more time and experience. Alas, you have chosen the wrong path."

One of the nine kings bellowed with a laughter: "Brat, you are very smart indeed, able to comprehend and break the seal. Unfortunately, it's your unlucky day. Now, we're just waiting for His Excellency to give the command, to throw you into the eye of the sea or to kill you."

Gu Zun took one step back after hearing this. He was very mighty as well but he had some qualm against fighting characters of the nine kings level. If the nine were to fight together, it would be even

more devastating. This was the reason why he wanted to team up with them against the Dark Crow.

He regained his composure and smiled: “I’m sure His Excellency isn’t in a rush to kill me right now.”

Li Qiye stared at him in response: “Gu Zun, you are still so confident, not panicking in this situation. That’s indeed impressive, I am full of regrets, lamenting the waste of your talents.”

“Who I am today is due to your guidance and training. If I can’t do this much, how can I replace you in the future?” He smiled.

Li Qiye replied: “Gu Zun, want to know something? Even if I spare you in this generation, someone else will kill you if you don’t change your way.”

“I know who you are referring to, Your Excellency.” Gu Zun calmly responded: “When brother-in-law sealed me back then, he warned me that if I don’t repent, he will personally kill me. I don’t question his ability, only his determination. Even if he comes back to life, he still won’t be able to do it! That’s his weakness.”

“Nothing is absolute in this world. If the Black Dragon King said he wants to kill you, I’m sure he will do it.” Li Qiye chuckled.

“I’m waiting but I haven’t seen him yet. He was able to live for three generations, will there be a fourth? If he can come out again to kill me, then I will have nothing to say. Dying to him isn’t shameful at all since even Immortal Emperor Ta Kong was killed by him, let alone me.” Gu Zun leisurely retorted.

“Run. Like you have said, I’m in no hurry. I want to see the rest of your ace cards. Do not disappoint me again with little schemes like this one.” Li Qiye looked at him and said.

# Chapter 1668: The Black Dragon King

---

Gu Zun wasn't surprised at all that Li Qiye would let him leave. He cupped his fist and smiled: "Thank you, Your Excellency. You're still the one that knows me best in this world."

"Okay, no need to utter such nauseating words. Go ahead and use all of your ace cards, I know you still have some secrets hidden up your sleeve." Li Qiye leisurely said.

"I'll try my best. Hopefully, my killing move won't disappoint you. That would be too much of a let down since you think so highly of me." Gu Zun smiled.

With that, his body flashed and crossed through space.

"We're done here." Li Qiye waved his sleeve at the nine kings: "The nine of you can continue your hibernation. Oh, right, I forgot. The old geezer from the mine misses you. You all can decide whether to keep staying here or come back for the punishment."

He instantly disappeared to chase Gu Zun again.

It wasn't like the pheasant didn't know that the nine kings have snuck out of the cave back then. In fact, it was impossible for an existence of this level not to detect them. It purposely let them escape and pretended not to know.

Since their birth, these juniors weren't allowed to take half a step out of the cave. The nine brothers wanted to see the outside world but the seniors didn't give them permission. They had even tried to sneak out several times in the past to no avail. Later on, the pheasant became soft and let them snuck out. Otherwise, how could nine little juniors escape from the immortal mine?

\*\*\*

After running away from the nine Sea Kings, Gu Zun didn't bother exerting his speed to its limit. He was in no hurry because



he knew that Li Qiye wasn't in a rush to kill him either before he showed his ace cards.

At this moment, the two of them were playing a cat and mouse game. For now, he was the mouse and Li Qiye was the cat.

Of course, Gu Zun thought that he still had a chance to turn it around if he could grasp the right opportunity. He would become the cat then.

Li Qiye, on the other hand, was indeed taking his time. He had guessed Gu Zun's ace card so killing him now wouldn't end this game. He wanted to capture everything in one fell swoop.

Meanwhile, a booming noise came from the distant Little Sea Village. The entire place shook as if a gigantic bull had just turned over. All the villagers were shaken with the ancestors running out to take a look.

“Rawr!” A dragon roar echoed across the Grand Sea. The ancestors in the village could only see a shadow rushing to the sky. It disappeared instantly.

“That is...” The ancestors couldn't regain their sanity. It looked as if they had just seen the shadow of a true dragon.

Gu Zun still hasn't made it back to Heaven Suppression before an explosion occurred. Space was shattered immediately. Runes descended from the sky and turned into a formation to lock Gu Zun.

He was aghast to see the runes while Li Qiye only smiled and stepped inside.

“Boom!” The runic formation teleported the two of them into a different area.

In an unknown crevice in the sky with rotating stars, sun and moon, the runic formation took the group into a battle stage.

“Raaa!” The runes were of a draconic nature and were issuing

roars as if they wanted to turn into true dragon. The whole place was drowned in the aura of a true dragon as if a real one was there.

Sure enough, Gu Zun looked up and saw a true dragon lying right there. It was completely black with scales seemingly cast from some wondrous and tough metal. Its five claws were extremely sharp with a flashing glint, capable of cutting through everything.

When the dragon opened its eyes, the entire nine worlds seemed to be lit up. The eyes were profound and could see through the true form of everything. Nothing could escape the dragon's gaze.

Anyone would be frightened by its glare, including the most powerful Godkings. It could bring everything back to nothingness with its withering power.

This was no shadow or illusion. It was a real true dragon with the purest bloodline! Few people in the world have seen one, spotting one would be the topic of a lifetime.

Gu Zun didn't seem to be surprised at all. He smiled and asked: "Long time no see, brother-in-law. It's a shame that I won't be able to see your third generation body anymore."

The dragon stared at Gu Zun without replying. Li Qiye gently sighed and waved at the dragon. It nodded towards him but didn't avert its gaze from Gu Zun.

"Brother-in-law, do you need to hate me so much? Your third gen body is dead already. If I remember correctly, you really doted on me during your first generation." Gu Zun cheerfully smiled.

The dragon still remained quiet with its flashing eyes, instilling a sense of respect into others.

"Do you want to capture me with this body? Is this necessary?" Gu Zun was still as carefree as ever.

"Brother-in-law, you promised sister to take good care of me. However, you never did that. I suffered so much when you threw me into the eye of the sea and took away my fortunes. Then, you

sealed me into the depth. Really now, your little brother-in-law had suffered a lot following you for three generations.”

“Raaa!” The dragon roared with a tyrannical aura surging like a storm. Alas, Gu Zun was untouched by it, still with a smile on his face.

“Brother-in-law, no need to be angry. In your eyes, I am a worthless piece of clay that can't be molded. However, our pursuits are different. You only want to fight against the world. As for me, I want to become His Excellency! I'm not as useless as you think.”

“Hmph!” The dragon snorted in response. The world lost its brilliance and its inhabitants shuddered before this sound.

Gu Zun still didn't care: “Maybe you disagree with my ideologies and think that I am a bastard. Maybe you wanted me to become an emperor or someone like you. Alas, my dream is even more magnificent and grand. I want to become an existence that can engulf the nine worlds. If someone with a mortal body and mortal talents can do so, why can't I, an eonic genius, do so?”

The dragon's stare remained cold.

“That glare again, brother-in-law. I know what you are trying to say.” Gu Zun shook his head and said: “You are thinking that I am a frog trying to eat a swan. I don't understand, why does His Excellency command so much confidence in whatever he does but you mock me for trying as if I don't know my own limits? Is it because I was born with a penchant for treachery? Or is it because I covet that empty treasury?”

The dragon answered by pointing its claw straight at Gu Zun.

“Brother-in-law, I won't return with you.” Gu Zun understood its intent and replied: “You took my fortunes and cultivation back then before sealing me but I don't blame you for this since I have indeed committed a crime. However, not this time since I haven't done anything heinous for now. That's why I won't let you

imprison me again!”

The dragon’s claw spread open. “Boom!” It seemed the entire space erupted because of him. This claw was freed from all the restraints of the world. Its power was simply unstoppable.

“You want to do it by force now?” Gu Zun said without being afraid. He smiled and shook his head: “Brother-in-law, you won’t necessarily be able to capture me alive. I agree that your third body could have done so in a short time but the current you won’t do.”

The dragon snorted again after hearing this.

“You were indeed invincible but your first body only has an incomplete soul, far weaker than your top form. In the past, I wouldn’t have any chance but now, I actually wonder if I go all out, would I accidentally kill you? Will sister blame me for doing so?”

# Chapter 1669: Three Generations of the Black Dragon King

---

The true dragon ahead was the first body of the Black Dragon King. It can be considered the only true dragon left in the nine world with a complete body. It retained the divinity of its ancient race!

Back then, the king was only a serpent-dragon. After receiving guidance from the Dark Crow on cultivation, he finally reached atavism and jumped through the dragon gate to grasp a real dragon bloodline.

His blood had reached an extremely pure level. Even the dragons above the nine heavens wouldn't necessarily be better than his bloodline.

At that time, the Dark Crow had a completely new idea about reincarnation. Of course, this was impossible for cultivators. However, the Black Dragon King was an exception. His blood was blessed with advantages by the high heaven. He was a great candidate for this new revolutionary idea.

Because of this, the king had also cultivated the Dark Crow's reincarnation art at the start. This was the reason why he was able to live for three generations.

In the first one, he trained until his blood reached atavism to become a true dragon. This allowed him to have a unique condition. At his peak, he severed his true dragon body and only left behind a weak soul. He then moved to a new body and lived for a second generation.

For the second, he used his dragon soul to train an Immortal Physique. Under great effort from both him and the Dark Crow, the Black Dragon King cultivated the one and only Dragon Soul Immortal Physique.

At the apex of the second generation, he once again severed this Immortal Physique and left a remnant soul behind again with the help of the Dark Crow. This time around, he severed it even more thoroughly. He slashed all of his bloodline and seals. In the end, the new creation was with a mortal physique, mortal fate, and mortal wheel.

For the third gen, he started his cultivation again with these mortal aptitudes, the most primordial of all constitution. At the end of his life, he was able to have two Immortal Physiques at grand completion!

Meanwhile, the two bodies with the weaker souls were sealed by the Dark Crow. He used the power of the world to nourish them and see if this would allow them to come out again.

If all three bodies could come out, then he could make them represent the past, present, and future. If they could reach this level, they would be one step closer to eternal life.

There was one weakness to all of this. The three generations of the Black Dragon King couldn't meet each other. This was the reason why the other two bodies were sealed.

The world knew that the Black Dragon King ruled for three generations but very few were aware that the king in each one was different. Of course, Gu Zun as his brother-in-law was privy to this knowledge.

"It doesn't matter how much you try to bring up the family issue with your brother-in-law, certain things are of the past now." Li Qiye shook his head and said after seeing Gu Zun's long chatter.

Gu Zun looked at him in response: "This art is created by you, do you think my brother-in-law has a chance?"

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: "Gu Zun, I don't know if you want your brother to come out again or to obtain the essences of this art and remove the imperfections. But all in all, I can't tell you

its secret.”

“I know, you won’t tell it to a betrayer.” Gu Zun smiled and said.

After a while, Li Qiye spoke: “If the Black Dragon King is here, I won’t interfere with your family issues. Time to end other things.” Having said that, he took one step and disappeared from the old battlefield.

Only Gu Zun and the true dragon were left. Even if Gu Zun wanted to leave, the dragon wouldn’t let him.

“Make your move.” The dragon spoke with a mantra. It raised both claws to seal the world and the myriad dao. Even the gods would be helpless beneath these claws.

“If this is the case, then I’ll have to try my best. I hope sister won’t blame me if I kill you. Of course, if I die in your hands, I’m sure she won’t blame you either.” Gu Zun took a deep breath.

“Boom!” The dragon responded by slamming its claw down. The myriad dao turned to ashes; laws were shattered.

Gu Zun didn’t dare to underestimate this invincible attack. He roared and unleashed all of his best moves. One attack swayed the realms while another robbed the light from the stars.

With devastating explosions, the two fought an amazing battle on this stage. It was a shame that no one else was able to see it...

\*\*\*

“Ahh!” With screams and rain of blood, skulls rolled all over the ground like potatoes. Severed limbs were even more abundant among the piles of corpses.

Hai Lin’s alliance was being pushed back by the imperial legions. His cavalry was in a terrible state after Gu Zun killed the top members. They found it hard to struggle after being weakened so much.

Although they had the number advantage, they lacked prior

training and preparation. Despite having many God-Monarchs and even Godkings joining, it was still not enough against imperial legions that have once swept through the nine worlds.

Under many waves of attacks, the alliance's blood ran like the river. More than one million members have died.

The imperial legion from Soaring Immortal became stronger the more they fought. A defeat was inevitable for the alliance. Nevertheless, they kept on struggling due to their willingness to die. There was no retreat path for them.

Worldkeeper shook his head while watching this. He finally gave a threatening order: "Go!"

With that, he was the first one to ride forward with his stallion. The Azure Dragon Legion has finally joined the fray.

"Kill!" The legion roared with an emotionless bloodthirst. Their battle cries resembled sharp blades cutting into the enemy's heart.

"Buzz!" Layers of barriers emerged on the platforms in order to halt the legion's advance.

"Boom!" However, this defensive perimeter was useless against their march. They were stomped out completely.

"Ah!" The next waves of screams came from the imperial legion of Soaring Immortal.

Azure Dragon resembled a sharp dagger piercing into the enemy's heart. In a short time, they created a quick path and suppressed the imperial legion.

This legion was very experienced indeed but there was a big gap between them and Azure Dragon.

Anyone would gasp at how quickly Azure Dragon suppressed the imperial legion. This might be the most powerful legion in this world!

"Formation!" The generals on Soaring Immortal's side shouted.



They once again reformed their ranks in order to initiate the next wave of offense.

Meanwhile, Hai Lin also blew his battle horn. The alliance retreated and reformed their ranks for the next wave also.

“Wuuuu-” A loud horn sound came inside Soaring Immortal.

“Rumble!” More legions rushed out from the sect into the battle platforms.

The alliance became nervous while looking at the imperial legions because they were too powerful. Despite being fewer in number, the combined effort of these legions could definitely crush them.

There were a total of eight imperial legions marching together with eight mighty commanders. Their aura burned brightly with a flame that would shame the sun.

Worldkeeper stared at the eight legions and said freely: “Not bad, gathering all legions from the five emperors. Alas, the only flaw is the clear deficit in certain legions. Immortal Emperor Fei and Immortal Emperor Can Long’s legion are only in-name-only with their banners.”

Though the eight legions ahead had the banners of the five emperors, the truth was that Immortal Emperor Ren Xian’s legion made up more than half of this force. The other ones were mostly in name only.

# Chapter 1670: Azure Dragon Eighteen Formation

---

The Soaring Immortal Sect has always been imperious, and same with their legions. They were able to threaten the nine worlds while no one else dared to criticize them.

Moreover, eight legions were present at the same time. Anyone would feel their legs trembling at this sight, let alone commenting.

However, the eight legions were silent before Worldkeeper's criticism because they knew what kind of mighty character he was along with his legion.

"State your name before I kill you." Worldkeeper with his spear pointed at a commander whose power was among the middle of his peers.

This commander wore a dark red armor as if it was painted with blood. The radiance exuding from his body was hotter than the sun while his aura could crush the firmaments.

Despite his accolades, he didn't dare to posture because he was only a junior before Worldkeeper.

"My name is Ma Zhenwen, under the banner of Immortal Emperor Ren Xian." This commander didn't dare to show any slight. He said respectfully: "Your fame resounds like the thunder and we are forever in reverence of the Azure Dragon Legion's tales. Unfortunately, we must fight you because we have our orders."

Ma Zhenwen was an unknown name to the youths but an old God-Monarch from the alliance had heard of it and shouted in astonishment: "[The Soaring Horse General](#)"

This name was more popular with the old characters. Though he was not the strongest general under the emperor, he had the most contributions. He once destroyed ten sects, eight countries, and one imperial lineage within one night. This made him quite

notorious and granted him this nickname.

“Good. Come and witness the destruction of Soaring Immortal.” Worldkeeper calmly said as if this was no big deal.

If such words came from anyone else, the generals would be in a furor right now. However, Ma Zhenwen and the others didn’t voice their displeasure.

They were aware of the legion and Worldkeeper’s tales. This was a legion that could stop the Ancient Ming. It was indeed eligible to challenge their sect. It could even be said that Ma Zhenwen felt like the underdog in this fight.

“Start the formation.” He didn’t waste time and took a deep breath before giving out the command.

“Buzz.” Endless light surged out from the platforms and jumped onto the members of the eight legions. Each expert became shrouded in this light and gained a divine armor. They looked just like gods now.

With an explosion of an imperial power, the eight legions came together with the front and the back sides meeting to form a circle. In a short time, the legions seemingly disappeared from the platforms. Next, all one could see was a forest of weapons, a thicket of destruction. This was an ultimate formation sealing all the platforms.

It would be exceedingly difficult to forge a path out of this formation.

Despite the fatal danger surrounding him, Worldkeeper calmly ordered: “Azure Dragon Eighteen Formation.”

“Buzz!” The entire legion turned into an Azure Dragon in the blink of an eye. This gigantic dragon took over the platforms that were now a death zone due to the Soaring Immortal Legion. There were shadows of spears and blades everywhere. Every single step was filled with danger.

“Clank!” The Soaring Immortal Legion suddenly appeared again in the form of a saber formation trying to make mincemeat of their enemy.

It was indeed capable of chopping everything into thin slices of meat with such fast speed that they would still be moving after the severing process.

As the horde of blades was coming, Worldkeeper gave an order: “Dragon To The Sky!”

The dragon leaped upward. Though the eight legions have sealed the platforms, it still couldn’t stop the movement of this draconic formation.

With a single jump, Azure Dragon instantly dodged the saber formation.

“Raaar!” The dragon descended and clawed at the formation. The unbelievably sharp claws slashed the chest of many experts in the imperial legion.

“Pluff!” Blood went flying. Some generals couldn’t evade in time and were torn into two pieces. They didn’t even have the chance to scream.

“Boom!” Soaring Immortal retaliated against this powerful offense of the dragon. Their formation instantly turned into a Heaven Suppression Seal that rushed down from the sky to stop this beast.

The sky suddenly turned black with the emergence of the seal. Followers were chanting to the seal of an emperor. This looked like an imperial decree, all must prostrate at its sight. All evils would be annihilated.

“Raaa!” The dragon roared and became enraged. A terrible draconic aura engulfed the sky. At this time, the dragon had an imperceptible speed.

With a deafening blast, the Heaven Suppression Seal was torn

into pieces. Next came a series of screamings. The dragon turned into six copies and ravaged all directions. In the blink of an eye, the supreme formation was torn asunder.

This was the Azure Dragon Eighteen Formation. First, it went from “Dragon In The Wild” and changed to “Season Of Six Dragons”.

In the next moment, the eight legions emerged again. Powerful they may be, they were no match for Azure Dragon’s formation.

Just like Worldkeeper had said, the eight legions were in name only, not as strong as they were in the past. Their supreme formation was much weaker while his eighteen formations were just as strong as before on its new debut.

“Rawrrr!” The six dragons continued to scream and rampaged on the battlefield. The eight legions were being massacred.

“Kill!” Despite not being a match, Soaring Immortal was still struggling to hold on. Waves of combatants rushed forward in order to stop the dragons.

“Go now!” The alliance saw an opportunity and immediately joined the battlefield. They followed the dragons and attacked the weakened foes with great success.

The alliance was ecstatic to join again with a risen morale. In the beginning, Soaring Immortal didn’t care for the alliance but now, they were being stomped down by the alliance. Many generals from Soaring Immortal angrily gritted their teeth but there was nothing they could do about it. The majority of their forces was being used to stop Azure Dragon and had no time to deal with the alliance!

“Ah!” Soaring Immortal was no match for the fury of the eighteen formations from Azure Dragon. They were continuously pushed back!

Soaring Immortal suffered grievous losses in a short time. Many

disciples were being massacred to the dismay of the old generals from the imperial legions. This was truly humiliating to them.

“Open the formation, use our vitality!” In the end, an order-giver from the sect couldn’t endure this any longer.

After receiving the command, the soldiers offered their blood energy without any hesitation into the battlefield.

They had no other choice at this moment. It was either being killed one by one by the legion or to go all out. This was a heavy price to pay but at least there was a chance. Once it was time for their ace card to come out, perhaps they would be able to destroy Azure Dragon and put an end to the legend!

This title is weird in English because Ma = Horse. In reality, he just gets the Fei (Soaring) part adds to his title, which is a very prestigious thing. It’s like becoming a duke and gaining the last name of the imperial family.

# Chapter 1671: Omnidirectional Immortal Annihilation

---

The infusion of the eight legions' blood energy made the ancient platforms exude a sacred light.

This sacred light influenced the sky with its holiness. The entire world was engulfed with this particular energy and the Grand Sea was being washed.

With a series of magnificent sounds, it looked like an unprecedented holy creature was descending from the sky. It carried the power of a heavenly tribulation.

“Boom!” A supreme light filled the battlefield and sucked the power from all directions!

Remember that this battlefield was empowered by ten earth veins underground. Outside of Immortal Emperor Refined Jades carved outside, it was the majestic worldly energy from the veins that was simply unstoppable.

The battlefield became heavier after absorbing the energy from the veins. It seemed as if the entire Grand Sea was being refined into this place. More importantly, the battlefield was grasping the entire region's power!

“Buzz!” Scorching flames blazed up in the battlefield. They covered the sky like waterfalls as if this was a punishment from the heaven.

A majestic figure emerged on the battlefield. It was an existence that looked like an angel of great height. It emitted an inviolable light with ten fiery wings on its back.

When these wings spread open, all of Mortal Emperor World was under their shadows. This was the ruler of the world, it came to sentence its judgment.

It was wielding a longsword made from heavenly laws twisting together. The scary part was that it carried the power of tribulation and judgment. It didn't come from the grand dao or the myriad laws but rather, the heaven itself.

It represented the will of the high heaven and its judgment. Because of this, it was also the symbol of invincibility. No other existence could stop it.

Omnidirectional Immortal Annihilation! This was the ace card of Soaring Immortal. It wasn't created by their emperor or anyone else since it was from a very ancient epoch.

In order to deal with the Dark Crow, the mastermind behind Soaring Immortal used this formation that hadn't appeared before. The mastermind was aware that the Dark Crow knew the arts of Soaring Immortal all too well. Two emperors were even taught by him so using Soaring Immortal's arts against him was displaying one's slight skill before an expert.

Thus, the mastermind used this Omnidirectional Immortal Annihilation technique that the world had never seen before. Even if it couldn't kill the Dark Crow, the mastermind still hoped that it would be able to stop the Dark Crow's legions.

Of course, Soaring Immortal had to pay a great price to use this formation. It was supported by the power of the earth veins and channeled by the vitality of its disciples. It meant that the vitality and the worldly energy of the earth were fused together.

A long battle would result in depleting their vitality and aging then death. Alas, they had no other choice against something as powerful as Azure Dragon.

"Clank!" The gigantic sword unleashed a judgment slash! The will of the heavens was truly hard to resist.

"Retreat!" Worldkeeper gave the order. The alliance immediately ran back because the slash was aimed at their legion.



They were also stunned at the immense power and nature of the sword. However, it was too late to run because the slash wouldn't allow it.

“Ah!” A storm of blood exploded. The entire battlefield looked like an ocean of blood like someone splashing ink onto a picture frame. It had become a scene of hell, a spectacle that would shock everyone here.

The entire alliance nearly became ashes after this one slash. Only one out of ten survived. Those who were lucky enough to survive would most likely never forget this nightmare from their mind.

Even though Hai Lin's alliance was rumored to be ten million men strong, this wasn't the case. A generous estimation would land it from five to seven millions. After the skirmish earlier, the alliance was brought down to three to four millions.

However, this slash alone took them down to around three to four hundred thousand men. One could imagine how frightening this scene was.

One slash took down three million soldiers. The survivors were completely pale with fear.

“Clank!” A second slash came downward with the tribulation of the heavens. It was aiming for Azure Dragon this time, wishing to slay the beast.

“Rawrrr!” The dragon clawed at the sky. In this split second, it turned into a straight spear with a dragon coiling around it. A draconic aura permeated through the air as if this was about to be the most powerful thrust in the world. It was born from the world so it could resist the will of the heavens!

“Boom!” The spear stopped the slash then slammed into the sword with fiery sparks flying everywhere. The sparks fell down like meteors into the stage, causing it to shake along with the entire Grand Sea!

“Boom!” The spear ultimately couldn’t handle the tribulation sword and was pushed down to the platform from the impact. A terrible hole and cracks appeared on these platforms.

The sword of this ten-winged creature was too powerful due to the three different forces encompassed within - the earth veins, tribulation power of the heavens, and vitality of the soldiers.

“Rawr!” The spear turned back into an Azure Dragon. However, pieces of artifact suddenly came from the horizon.

“Click! Click! Click!” These exquisite pieces wrapped around the dragon like an armor.

“Clank!” With more metallic noises, a green spear appeared in the claws of the dragon. It emitted a snow-white glow with a murderous aura. It seemed to have been stained with the countless blood of gods and devils.

With this weapon, the dragon could meet god, slay god; meet devil, slay devil.

Everyone could see this scene at this moment and thought that it was a real dragon protecting the nine worlds, not a legion.

With the new armaments, the dragon grew larger. Even the ten-winged existence towering at ten thousand meters seemed tiny compared to the azure dragon.

This was the final form of the legion. It didn’t assume the shape of a formation but of a living existence.

Countless stars exploded under the thrust of this dragon. When its snow-white tip came down, it carried the power of the stars with the ability to destroy everything.

“Clank!” The ten-winged existence didn’t back down. The hymn of the sword resounded with another tribulation slash!

“Rumble!” The two sides went all out and made the sky their victim.

“Whoosh!” During this battle, space fluctuated and Li Qiye instantly appeared next to Matriarch Yu.

“Your Excellency, you have killed Gu Zun already?” The matriarch asked.

Li Qiye watched the battle and gently shook his head: “Not yet, the Black Dragon King is taking care of him.”

“Which generation?” She was slightly surprised despite knowing about the king’s reincarnation.

“The first.” He smiled and said.

“Does he actually want to kill Gu Zun?” She was worried, not about his ability but about his determination!

## Chapter 1672: Fighting Long Aotian

---

Li Qiye chuckled and shook his head: “Either way is the same. Even if I kill him right now, not much will come of it. The Black Dragon King still can’t make up his mind. Forget it, let him deal with his brother-in-law.”

If Li Qiye wanted to kill, Gu Zun wouldn’t be alive right now. The matriarch gently nodded and dropped the subject. She noticed that Li Qiye was staring at Soaring Immortal and said: “Your Excellency, do you want to personally take action or let me mobilize the troops?”

“I’ll go.” Li Qiye answered: “One has to go all out if they want to catch the big fish. Let me be the bait. Maybe we’ll catch the largest of them all, I’ve been waiting for a while now.”

“You’re not trying to bait the mastermind of Soaring Immortal.” The matriarch carefully pondered. At this moment, she realized that His Excellency wasn’t aiming for Soaring Immortal at all or the mastermind in the shadow. He was scheming for some existences hiding even deeper.

She wondered if he was the bait or Soaring Immortal. Of course, all of this didn’t matter any longer. Soaring Immortal’s destruction was inevitable at this point.

When Li Qiye made it to the entrance, a figure descended from the sky to stop his path.

“Li Qiye, it’s time for us to fight to the death!” The person stared at Li Qiye with a ferocious glare.

This was Long Aotian, Soaring Immortal’s successor. He was currently in an amazing state with exuberant vitality and in his peak. There was no trace of depression after losing twice to Li Qiye. This was indeed an admirable quality.

Li Qiye wasn’t surprised at all to see Long Aotian. He smiled and

said: “That’s fine, but I wonder if you are prepared for death.”

“No one knows who will be the last man standing until the end, you won’t be smiling for long!” Aotian retorted.

Despite losing twice already, Aotian still needed to fight because the Heaven’s Will had appeared. A fierce competition was approaching soon enough but he had no advantages to speak of. It looked quite unfavorable since he lost twice to Li Qiye already. Thus, he must defeat Li Qiye this time regardless of the price.

“The result is already determined. You won’t be getting the Heaven’s Will.” Li Qiye chuckled.

The fight between the two attracted the attention of many people. People still didn’t count Aotian out after his two defeats and felt that he still had a chance to turn it around. They felt that losing before becoming an emperor wasn’t shameful at all. This has happened to many emperors in the past already! Some suffered some humiliating defeats too.

“Try and see!” Aotian uttered. He was still as confident as before and ready to defeat all foes. The successor of Soaring Immortal wouldn’t be affected and give up completely after just losing one or twice!

“Fine, as you wish. Use all of your abilities and techniques. There won’t be another chance after this.” Li Qiye looked at him and said slowly: “You can be considered a brilliant genius with a rare dao heart.”

The spectators held their breath as the fight was about to begin. They knew that one of them might fall before the start of the real competition.

Aotian took a deep breath. With a loud blast, he released his blood energy like the flood. It spread across the world as if wanting to start a disaster.

“Whoosh!” His inner physique lit up and caused space to tremble.

His body became shiny and dazzling as if it was a crystal carving. This beautiful scene was his grand completion Soaring Immortal Physique, one of his proudest achievements.

It became brighter and more dazzling by the minute until people couldn't stare straight at him anymore, not even with heavenly gazes. He gave a strange feeling of flight, as if space itself was growing a pair of wings and ascending.

“Buzz.” A very rhythmic series of noise resounded. It was slow and came from space itself. Space and time were being slowed down by Aotian's physique.

In the blink of an eye, everyone became a painting since time had stopped in this split second.

“Whoosh!” Time began to flow again. It wasn't because of Aotian this time. Li Qiye was the cause.

Before anyone realized what was going on, Aotian was inches away from Li Qiye when time flowed again.

At this moment, time once again paused. Everyone could watch this scene and saw Aotian's palm containing a sharp and cold gale that was only three inches away from Li Qiye's forehead.

Aotian exerted his physique to its limit. No, he even broke through it in order to deliver the fatal blow.

Remember that this was a grand completion Soaring Immortal Physique, allowing him to break through the limit of time. This was almost impossible to describe with words. Even a Nine Worlds Godking wouldn't be able to dodge this fatal blow.

Unfortunately, he had met Li Qiye today. During the process of this attack, Li Qiye had activated his Stagnation Domain.

In terms of the physique itself, Aotian still had the advantage since Aotian was at grand completion while Li Qiye wasn't.

Alas, under the Stagnation Domain, even a faster speed would

seem slow under this suppression.

Time flowed once more with a loud boom. People saw Aotian being unable to move an inch forward and they heard the sounds of bones breaking under the effect of the domain.

Aotian was impressive enough. Under this perilous situation, he instantly used his arts from the five emperors for protection. With loud, beastly roars and raging imperial auras, he decisively burned his longevity blood in order to empower his techniques. With that, he managed to escape from the Stagnation Domain.

“Boom!” His full power allowed him to retreat. He shattered space and ran towards the horizon. Nevertheless, he was still grievously wounded with blood staining his clothes and many broken bones.

This still showed his amazing capabilities. The combination of his imperial arts and immortal physique allowed him to escape from Li Qiye’s domain.

Li Qiye wasn’t in a rush to give chase. He watched the injured foe and shook his head: “The flaws in your physique are too clear. If it was perfect, you would have had the chance to injure me with that strike earlier.”

Aotian responded with a scowl: “I don’t just have a grand completion physique. My grand dao can harm you as well!”

“Very well, show me your imperial arts then.” Li Qiye smiled.

Aotian was versed in the techniques of five emperors and had created his own unique grand dao. So many people were envious of this. How many could be lucky enough to study the supreme arts of five emperors at the same time? Just learning the art of one was already the fortune of a lifetime, let alone five.

“I want to see your grand dao as well.” Aotian powerfully uttered. Having said that, he activated his grand dao.

Five Immortal Emperor True Treasures appeared. With clicking

noise, an imperial armor protected him.

It seemed to have been created with strands of snow. There was the image of a silk dragon. It wasn't embroidered but naturally formed on the armor.

Silk Dragon Robe, the true treasure of Soaring Immortal's second emperor, Can Long. It wasn't only meant to be used as a defensive barrier. It was also capable of boosting speed and vitality on top of some other magical properties.

"Clank! Clank!" A harmonious clanking of sword and saber came about after he unsheathed his weapons - a sword in one hand and a saber in the other.

The saber was tyrannical and ferocious, granting its user the courage to fight against the rest of the world alone.

This was the Tyrannical Destruction Saber, Immortal Emperor Ba Mie's true treasure, his weapon of choice to fight the nine worlds.

No need to describe the sword any further. This was the Virtuous Sword belonging to Immortal Emperor Ren Xian, the progenitor of Aotian's branch.

At the same time, two more treasures emerged behind him. One was a feathered fan with many colors. However, one feather was missing. The other was a spear as hot as the sun. It seemed to be cast from a divine solar metal.

Missing Feather, this was their sect progenitor ultimate true treasure. It could be listed among the top ten greatest weapons of the emperors due to its incredible power.

Sun Devouring Spear, Immortal Emperor Tun Ri's true treasure. Rumor has it that whenever he used this spear, he would be able to kill the enemy. It once scared the souls out of his enemies in the nine worlds.

Everyone was lost in jealousy and admiration after seeing one



person using five true treasures at the same time.

These true treasures were powerful but also difficult to use. For many experts, attacking with one of them was already hard enough. However, Aotian had such mastery and ease when wielding five. This was the reason why he was so powerful and worthy of praises.

Though he couldn't unleash a Heavenly Annihilation with all five at the same time, he had combined the grand dao of five emperors and created his own. He relied on the five weapons to empower his grand dao. This increased this particular dao's power by up to ten times!

# Chapter 1673: One Dao Shouldering Five Emperors

---

The moment Aotian's supreme grand dao emerged, the figures of five emperors appeared as well - Fei, Can Long, Tun Ri, Ba Mie, and Ren Xian.

Their own grand dao took form as well. They wove together before fusing into Aotian's.

One Dao Shouldering Five Emperors, this was Aotian's supreme grand dao. It shouldered the will and laws of five emperors. He wanted to become the sixth emperor of Soaring Immortal and surpass his forefathers!

A terrible imperial aura ravaged the world as if five emperors have appeared. This scene made the spectators' legs grow weak.

"Only Aotian would be able to create such a grand dao." Even Godkings were respectful of his achievement.

"A good idea. Unfortunately, it is still walking on the same path paved by your forefathers. Even if you become an emperor, you won't be able to surpass them, let alone your progenitor, Immortal Emperor Fei." Li Qiye smiled and commented.

"I heard my Junior Brother talk about your ultimate fists. I also want to see it today." Long Aotian was completely confident with his unyielding dao heart.

He had heard of Heavenly Emperor Lin's defeat in the past. In fact, Li Qiye's dao wasn't completed back then. It was much better now.

"I shall entertain you out of consideration for your achievements and power. You may die without regrets." Li Qiye felt generous enough.

"Whoosh!" One palace after another emerged for a total of

thirteen. An expanse of boundless primordial chaos took form.

“Thirteen palaces!” No one would miss the chance to watch this scene, the miracle of the ages. This was the first time for many people despite their old age.

“I’ll never get bored of seeing this.” Even some sealed undyings got up from their coffins and commented.

Aotian’s expression dimmed down after seeing the thirteen palaces. Regardless of his current mood, he had to admit that thirteen palaces were incredible. He had many wondrous achievements and accolades but they truly paled in comparison.

His own could be repeated by other people. Some people in the past were even more excellent and brilliant than him.

However, Li Qiye’s palaces were a miracle and completely unique. This feat alone would guarantee his name being recorded in the historical annals even if he didn’t become an emperor!

At this time, a figure slowly walked forward in the primordial chaos. The myriad worlds became bleak with his coming. The heavenly grand dao had to submit. This was the ruler of the world. He represented everything in this world - life and death, yin and yang, heaven and earth... All were beneath his reign; all were created by him. The world could be freed from heavenly laws, yin and yang, and the five elements... However, it needed him!

Nirvana Heavens, created by the thirteen palaces. Everyone was speechless before this magnificent figure.

“Want to see my grand dao? Look all you want.” Li Qiye spoke in his ultimate form.

“Whoosh!” Li Qiye’s supreme grand dao emerged, the Seven Nights Dao! Eternity, time, creation, gods, all beings were being derived...

When this grand dao started, the world didn’t exist, the high heaven didn’t exist, only Li Qiye was around. With his presence,

the world had everything - the cycles of life, yin and yang, and the six dao...

Li Qiye and his grand dao represented and ruled everything at this moment!

When this dao showed itself, everyone felt total despair and became breathless. They came to realize the gap between themselves and Li Qiye. It was impossible to catch up.

Their cultivation was predicated on understanding and grasping laws. However, Li Qiye was the creator of laws. How could this disparity ever be bridged?

Even Aotian's expression turned for the worst. Even his unyielding dao heart and incredible confidence shared the same depressing sentiment. He inevitably became pale.

This was no longer a gap between grand dao. It was a gap in the level of existence. If cultivators were people, Li Qiye was already the heaven. They felt insignificant like insects under his gaze.

"Kill!" Despite despair rearing its ugly head inside him, Aotian still didn't falter or become afraid. He roared and boosted his grand dao with the treasure.

"Boom!" Five emperors took action. Immortal Emperor Fei waved his Missing Feather; Immortal Emperor Can Long wore the Silk Dragon Robe; Immortal Emperor Tun Ri wielded the Sun Devourer Spear; Immortal Emperor Ba Mie grasped his Tyrannical Destruction Saber; Immortal Emperor Ren Xian had his Virtuous Sword!

The nine worlds quaked because of the emperors and their personal weapons. Their auras ravaged Mortal Emperor and its inhabitants. The people trembled in fear and dropped to the ground. Doomsday was approaching in their mind.

"Unfortunately, they're not real emperors." Li Qiye smiled and used his dao. All power in the nine worlds became his for the

taking.

“Boom!” A blast reverberated to every corner of the nine worlds after Li Qiye punched once! This punch blasted everything in the world back to the origin. One punch to destroy the emperors and gods. All beings were aghast and couldn’t regain their sanity.

Heaven Suppression Fist! The world became quiet under this attack outside of the high heaven with its thunderous tribulation gathering in the sky. Crackles came crazily and bolts aimed for Li Qiye. However, the bolts couldn’t touch him for some unknown reasons.

Everyone lost their focus at this moment and couldn’t see anything. Despair ran amok as all progress made in the past were gone.

“Boom!” When people calmed down, they saw Long Aotian being blown away while vomiting blood. All the bones on his body were shattered.

However, Aotian was still a tough man and persevered through the damage. He still stood up straight while gathering his blood energy to recreate his body.

The crowd had no comment. Long Aotian had lost again and this one was an utter defeat. However, they would have suffered the same fate under that attack.

“Do you know why I still haven’t killed you?” Li Qiye chuckled at Aotian and said: “I want to see who will come and save you right now.”

Aotian was expressionless and didn’t utter a single word as he stood there.

“Boom!” At this time, the sky above Heaven Suppression City was penetrated. A person was thrown by something directly into the city.

It was Gu Zun flying down. At this time, he was feeble and

couldn't stand straight. His pale complexion made it clear that he had expended a great amount of blood energy on top of being grievously wounded.

“Clank.” A clattering of weapons came about with blades hanging by his neck. He was imprisoned by the ancestors from the city.

“Ancestor, excuse me.” Zi Cuining appeared in front of Gu Zun and said.

After the conclusion at Pearl, Zi Cuining had returned to Heaven Suppression City to preside over the situation. Strange enough, Gu Zun wasn't the only one who was gone. His entire branch and Ye Jiuzhou have disappeared. Because of this, Zi Cuining was ready to face the enemy.

Gu Zun didn't become angry at all. He stared at the sky and chuckled: “People win and lose, my loss was well-deserved.”

Zi Cuining still had an austere expression. Even if Gu Zun was helpless at this moment, she still wouldn't underestimate the enemy since Gu Zun couldn't be so easily dealt with.

“Watch him, not a second of carelessness.” Zi Cuining ordered the ancestors before looking up in the sky.

Gu Zun, as a prisoner, wasn't tense at all. He stared towards the direction of Soaring Immortal with a smile on his face.

Back at the battlefield, Li Qiye also glanced at the sky and smiled as well: “Time for me to reel in the net. Can't wait any longer.”

Having said that, he slowly walked towards Long Aotian.

Aotian's expression changed as he instinctively took one step back. However, he took a deep, composing breath afterward and straightened his body. He stopped faltering and was no longer afraid.

# Chapter 1674: Soaring Immortal Break

---

Many people were tense to see Li Qiye wanting to kill Long Aotian. Everyone could see that Aotian was no match for Fiercest. If no one came out from Soaring Immortal to save him, his death was all but guaranteed.

A figure appeared during this moment of life and death. An indescribable aura emanated around the world. It was a heroic man that backed Long Aotian up. He had a calming temperament as if he was in complete control of the situation.

This was Long Zhantian, an ancestor from Long Aotian's branch. Many people didn't recognize him. Nevertheless, despite his lack of fame, everyone knew he was quite frightening the moment he came out due to his controlling presence.

"Is that an Emperor Assailant?" Many people trembled and murmured. They directly thought about this power level after seeing him.

"No one is invincible forever." Zhantian stared fiercely at Li Qiye like a tiger looking at its prey.

Of course, he was talking to the Dark Crow. Despite never seeing this existence, he was aware of the puppet master behind the scene!

"No one is invincible forever, but I'll always be the last one smiling." Li Qiye answered with a smile.

"Very well, I want to see how much you have learned." Zhantian answered harshly with a cold glint in his eyes.

He had considered Li Qiye a disciple of the Dark Crow, someone whom he had hated long ago. If it wasn't for the sealing of Soaring Immortal, he would have seized the throne instead of Immortal Emperor Yin Tian.

Because of this, the enmity ran deep at a young age for him. The

Dark Crow was his enemy, the sole cause for why he didn't become an emperor. Thus, he made an oath of vengeance!

He greatly advocated for Soaring Immortal to come out in this generation because he wanted to personally train an emperor and with that, obtain revenge by crushing the Dark Crow!

“More than enough to destroy your Soaring Immortal Sect!” Li Qiye leisurely responded.

Zhantian had a murderous bloodthirst in his eyes. He and Aotian glanced at each other and made up their mind. The two of them separated and surrounded Li Qiye.

The two of them didn't dare to be careless. Zhantian was much more powerful than Aotian due to his grand completion physique being complete, unlike Aotian's flawed version. Moreover, his grand dao was more polished at this point. Thus, he was superior in both cultivation and actual battle potential.

They stared intensely at Li Qiye and were in no hurry to attack. They were trying to find his weakness in order to deliver a fatal blow.

Meanwhile, Li Qiye was nonchalant and casually glanced at the two men before staring at the sky. He gave an order to the Azure Dragon Legion in its dragon form: “Finish it, if it won't come out, no point in waiting any further!”

Li Qiye made people quite confused about his words. Gu Zun, on the other hand, smirked and stared at the horizon too: “I hope I'll be able to see a real hunt again while I'm still alive. The person who can stay calm will be the final victor!”

“Rumble!” The battle waged on between the huge dragon and the ten winged existence. However, as time passed, the dragon seized the advantage. Even though the existence was still very powerful with its tribulation power, it was no longer as agile as if running out of strength.



It had the power of the ten veins on top of the tribulation power borrowed from the high heaven, but in this drawn-out fight, the eight legions from Soaring Immortal couldn't maintain their stream of vitality. The Omnidirectional Immortal Annihilation simply required too much upkeep from the earth veins and the heaven.

In the end, the two types of power didn't belong to them. It didn't matter how powerful the legions were. Eventually, their rich vitality would run out.

"That's all? Time to end this." The dragon roared and an azure light soared into the sky. A draconic aura engulfed the earth.

"Boom! Boom! Boom!" Heavy blows rained down. In a short time, the great existence was forced down to the ground by the dragon. It tried to struggle and retaliate but it was useless before the absolute ferocity of the dragon.

No one expected for the dragon to go wild like this and take down the existence in such a short time.

Everyone saw how terrible the ten winged monster was, killing millions with just one slash. Alas, it was powerless before the dragon.

The truth was that the legion didn't go all out in the start. It was waiting for their old foes to appear. Unfortunately, there was no sign of them so they had to unleash their rage on Soaring Immortal instead.

"What a shame. No sign of them." Li Qiye watched the bullying taking place and smiled.

"Clank!" When Li Qiye lost his concentration, Zhantian and Aotian took action. Their Soaring Immortal Physique lit up and reached its limit.

They attacked from both the front and back with an attack capable of turning time back to the past. Time withered and rotted

by this all-slaying strike. No one could block this strike.

“Soaring Immortal Break!” Even the matriarch became serious after seeing this.

Soaring Immortal Break was the physique attack created by Immortal Emperor Fei. It was praised as the strongest of them all. Even Heaven’s Will Secret Laws paled in comparison.

When a grand completion user unleashed them, one could only imagine its power. Both Aotian and Zhantian were at grand completion and they attacked during Li Qiye’s careless moment.

This attack relied on ultimate speed and power, a one-kill move. No one would be able to stop this attack. This was the reason why the technique became so famous after its creation.

Time stopped and everything became confused. People didn’t see the technique clearly; only Emperor Assailants were able to understand its mysteries and see through its speed.

“Pluff!” When everyone could see clearly again, they saw blood gushing out. Zhantian and Aotian’s eyes were wide opened.

Zhantian was decapitated and he could see his own severed body as his head fell from the sky.

Long Aotian’s forehead and skull were pierced through completely. His expression was one of disbelief.

Meanwhile, Li Qiye was standing there and didn’t move at all. Just like that, he defeated the Soaring Immortal Break and killed the two.

His fate palaces were opened with the four images - the pillar, cauldron, tree, and spring of life.

The Heavenly Dao’s Primal Chapter, Ancient Void Rune, Life Origination, and Epoch Leaf were floating inside as if they have become everlasting. Li Qiye used them to kill Aotian and Zhantian without lifting a finger.

“The world still doesn’t understand the mysteries of the four images from the fate palaces. Only an Immortal Emperor would be able to understand them a little bit. Unfortunately, that would already be too late.” Li Qiye gently shook his head and said.

In a short time, the world became silent to a terrible level. Long Aotian was a bit weaker than an Emperor Assailant but Zhantian was the real thing. However, the two of them have just been killed instantly. No one would believe such a thing.

The crowd was stunned by this scene. Even Emperor Assailants took a deep breath because they didn’t see the profundity behind Li Qiye’s attack. There were too many secrets hidden within.

Gu Zun stopped smiling after seeing this and became austere. He wasn’t only extremely powerful but as an eonic genius, he could comprehend better than everyone else. His talents and vision had few peers. Matriarch Yu was no match for him in this regards.

“This is...” He failed to understand the attack earlier. After a long time, he solemnly said: “It no longer matters whether he becomes emperor or not!”

# Chapter 1675: Assaulting The Soaring Immortal Sect

---

In a short time, the world was petrified. Many people couldn't regain their wits. An Emperor Assailant and one near that level attacked together with the invincible Soaring Immortal Break but not only did they failed, they paid with their lives after just one move from Li Qiye.

The frightening part was how no one saw the killing move. Even an Emperor Assailant like Matriarch Yu and an eonic genius like Gu Zun became serious.

Li Qiye simply smiled. The four images of the fate palace were beyond the comprehension of many cultivators. Only after becoming emperor would one be able to understand them but it was too late at that point.

“Boom!” A loud blast suddenly made the world tremble. Everyone returned from their contemplation.

“Ah!” Miserable screams came, followed by tearing noises. The azure dragon actually tore the ten winged creature into two pieces.

Remember that this creature was created by the Omnidirectional Immortal Annihilation formation. This meant that it was formed by the eight legions with their vitality and flesh.

When the creature was tore in half, not only was the formation broken. Even the soldiers were torn into two pieces or crushed by an invincible force.

“Boom!” After taking care of the formation, the dragon thrust its spear down and pierced the battle platforms. Cracks spanning for thousands of miles appeared everywhere.

Finally, the enraged dragon slammed down and made all the platforms crumble. The power within disappeared instantly.

“Retreat!” The surviving soldiers from Soaring Immortal shouted and ran back to the sect.

The battle was finally over. The eight legions from Soaring Immortal still lost against Azure Dragon. They suffered heavy losses with casualty around eighty percent.

This might be their biggest loss since the formation of their sect. A five emperors lineage lasting for millions of years had suffered this humiliating defeat.

The crowd wondered about the identity of the Azure Dragon Legion. They were amazed at this legion’s ability to take down eight imperial legions.

An old man who knew about them commented with a tinge of emotion: “That’s Azure Dragon for you. Back when the Ancient Ming ruled the nine worlds, they have trapped the legion so many times. In the end, the Ancient Ming failed to kill them and was destroyed instead.”

Those who knew about the legion didn’t find this surprising at all. The legion dared to fight against the Ancient Ming. Soaring Immortal wasn’t an issue.

The disciples inside Soaring Immortal turned pale. In their mind, their sect was invincible. Not only did they have the most resources in the world, they also had the most powerful legions.

However, these legions were bullied by others today and almost got wiped out completely. They couldn’t imagine this result at all.

“Boom!” The dragon shattered the entrance to Soaring Immortal, causing the entire place to tremble.

The stunned disciples were truly horrified since they have never experienced such a thing before. This also shattered their confidence.

“Get ready.” The ancestors calmed down and ordered the disciples to prepare for combat.

For these ancestors, this will be the darkest day for them. Few dared to oppose their sect in the past but now, someone was actually breaking down their door. This was a perilous moment.

Majestic laws poured down like the waterfalls from the sceneries in the sect. Layers of defensive barriers were erected. The entire place became dazzling with protection halos.

The place has seemingly turned into the most perfect ancestral ground in the world with so many different defensive means and imperial protection. This made the entire sect look quite divine. No enemy would dare to take a step forward.

However, the dragon didn't enter the sect after destroying the entrance. It simply soared upward and presided in the sky.

The gigantic dragon with its spear coldly glanced around. Nothing could hide from its gaze.

People were surprised when Azure Dragon didn't attack Soaring Immortal. They didn't know why it broke the entrance but didn't initiate an attack. Instead, it was only guarding the sky.

"Will the old foes really come out?" Only people like Gu Zun understood the dragon's intention. He continued: "I really hope so, that's when the fun really starts."

Li Qiye stepped inside the entrance and hovered above the sect. All the members in Soaring Immortal weren't happy to see Li Qiye looking as if he was about to fight all of them alone. Today, the enemy came knocking on their door. This was simply unacceptable.

"After so many years, Soaring Immortal grew stronger but its bones became softer. For power, it has abandoned its ancestors." Li Qiye shook his head and said.

"Li, don't be so haughty!" A cold voice resounded. It wasn't loud but it echoed across the world and threatened everyone.

Four people came out from the sect and filled the world with

their divinity and immortal lights. They were quite holy and looked as if they had just come from an immortal world.

There was also an imperial aura to them. Their style and bearing had a noble feel. This imperial temperament wasn't learned like other experts. After learning imperial techniques, certain experts could use them to replicate the aura of an emperor.

However, these four didn't need that at all. They had a natural imperial aura to them, not the forceful and stiff ones from techniques.

Thus, their temperament and appearance were innate. They were born to be nobles, born to be imperial princes.

Three were male and one was female. The men were handsome and gallant while the woman was supremely beautiful.

So many people were astonished to see such wondrous people. They felt inferior in comparison.

These were real imperial children!

"Your Highness." The disciples from Soaring Immortal prostrated on the ground, completely stirred with emotions.

It was the glory of a lifetime to be able to see the imperial princes and princess. Moreover, this gave them hope that the four would be able to repel the enemy.

The four didn't need to waste words and superfluous actions. Just their presence alone was enough to establish their authority. All of Soaring Immortal was under their control.

This was their extraordinary advantage due to their identity.

"Are those imperial children?" Even those who didn't recognize them could faintly guess their identity due to their aura.

"Immortal Emperor Ren Xian's children." An undying existence recognized them and said sentimentally: "Back during the emperor's generation, his children were famous in the nine worlds

too.”

The juniors were shocked to hear about the real imperial children. This was such a prestigious status, worthy of admiration. Many people didn’t expect to see Immortal Emperor Ren Xian’s children again. This was indeed a shocking development.

Not my fault, there was no indication of a girl being part of this four. Di Zi can mean child/son, usually son; the author has always referred to them as Di Zi. Di Nu would be a girl, and the author does use that word a bit later in this chapter. Just an issue with translating Chinese to English without context. I could have played it safe and use Imperial children, I suppose



# Chapter 1676: Ren Xians Imperial Princes

---

Immortal Emperor Ren Xian's four children had the following title: Azure Dragon Prince, White Tiger Prince, Black Tortoise Prince, and Vermillion Bird Princess. They were also known as the Four Symbols Imperial Children and greatly resemble their parents.

They were showered with love and granted great authority even before their father became an emperor. This played a great part in their fame during that generation.

However, they disappeared and sealed themselves. Though they sporadically showed up every once in a while, they stopped doing so after Immortal Emperor Qian Li's generation. The disciples from Soaring Immortal had no clue of their whereabouts.

Of course, the ancestors couldn't tell their disciples that they have escaped to the Immortal Confinement. When they came out again recently, they garnered the support from the majority of ancestors.

Under the arrangement of the mastermind behind Soaring Immortal, the princes were able to defeat the dissenters and put these ancestors under house arrest. This gave them complete control over Soaring Immortal and laid a foundation for their invasion of Mortal Emperor.

It was a matter of course for them to be welcomed so much. After all, imperial princes had an innate advantage compared to others.

Moreover, the young faction had been suppressed for a long time. A five emperors lineage didn't aim for hegemony? How could the young ones stand for this? They had early wanted to return to the nine worlds and vie for supremacy.

Thus, their return coincided with the youthful ambition. Moreover, the mastermind has always been strengthening their

faction.

Even though the Can Long, Ba Mie, and Tun Ri branches opposed this decision, just the strength of the Ren Xian branch alone was enough. No one could change the will of the new faction.

Li Qiye simply chuckled after seeing them: “Only Immortal Emperor Can Long had returned from the Immortal Confinement. It looks like your father had left you some good stuff, allowing all of you to last inside.”

This prison had an earth-shattering origin. It was an ominous ground from an ancient epoch, rumored to be a prison for a ferocious devil. Immortal Emperor Fei obtained it later and the sect treated it as a training adventure later. However, only Immortal Emperor Can Long during his youth was able to return.

There were several reasons why the siblings were able to return alive. Outside of their own personal strength and solidarity, the biggest reason was their incredible resources compared to others in the form of treasures and medicines.

The four were not happy to hear Li Qiye’s comment. The four became as cold as ice. Not to mention the pain they suffered in the prison, it was the humiliation of being forced to run inside like a dog that had lost its master. They would never forget this humiliation and even swore for vengeance.

They were imperial children with an extremely noble bloodline coursing through their veins yet the Dark Crow forced them to run for their lives. How could they stand for this?

“The humiliation of past shall be washed away with your blood!” Vermillion Bird Princess gritted her teeth as even her beautiful face twisted with anger.

Li Qiye shook his head and laughed: “You should be feeling grateful instead, it is the blessing of the heavens that Immortal Emperor Qian Li and the Black Dragon King didn’t chase after you.

Plus, aren't you all living quite well right now? Not to mention all the fortunes and positive meditation, allowing you to fortify your dao heart. You didn't grow older in the prison, still as vigorous as before and able to cultivate your Soaring Immortal Physique to perfection..."

"... The suffering in the prison is not pain but rather a type of wealth! Reflect on who you used to be in the past, only little juniors relying on your father's prestige. Now, you have a perfect physique with a pure bloodline and a cultivation polished by training, much stronger than that Ancestor Long earlier..."

"...Even if your father was around and not showing any mercy, you can still last up to two thousand moves against him. Isn't this an amazing thing? Perhaps you will even feel pride in it. Thus, instead of feeling grateful, all you feel is hatred. What a shame."

"Grateful?" The Azure Dragon Prince shouted: "We will never let this go until we break your bones and turn you to ashes! I swear on it!"

The prince felt responsible because he was the oldest of the four. He was the one who took his younger siblings inside to suffer all the torments. After escaping, he swore to kill the Dark Crow and all of his underlings!

Li Qiye didn't mind at all and continued on: "You four are too disappointing compared to your father who showed great self-restraint and vision. He took pride in his human bloodline, because of that, he worked his whole life to establish a respectable reputation. But as his children, instead of bolstering your own reputation, you are besmirching his with your action. Don't you feel shame about letting down your real bloodline and your father's lifelong effort?!"

The princess uttered coldly back: "Do not speak of my father! If it wasn't for the Dark Crow's pressure, would my father have suffered like this? [During that period, next to his side and seeing](#)

[everything...](#)”

“Enough.” The calm Black Tortoise Prince interrupted her at this point.

“Why not keep going? I want to hear who told you all of this.” Li Qiye smirked and said.

But the princess kept her mouth shut this time, realizing that she had fallen into his trap because certain thing shouldn’t be said. The group simply glared at Li Qiye instead of talking.

Li Qiye continued: “Does it really matter now who told you all of this? The situation has escalated to this level, nothing else matters in your eyes, not even the imperial bloodline in your body! There is only vengeance left and of course, a desire for hegemony! An ambition to unite the nine worlds, a will to have emperors for generations.”

The White Tiger Prince retorted with a sneer: “Hmph, so what? Why is only your group allowed to do so and not us? It is because we challenge your position and prestige!”

Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile: “Fool. Just a little bit of authority in the nine worlds, it is meaningless. All of you know full well that you are inviting a sect-destruction calamity! You think you can rule the nine worlds but in my eyes, you’re nothing but ants. Even the mastermind is only a puppet, used as a meat shield by the Ancient Ming!”

“You’ll find out soon enough!” The Black Tortoise Prince said chillingly: “It doesn’t matter how strong you are, don’t think about living past today. We’ll settle both old and new scores today and herald in a new epoch for the nine worlds!”

Li Qiye chuckled: “With what? You or the mastermind? Really now, that’s not enough to warm me up, too weak.”

The four siblings were livid to be treated with such disdain. At this moment, they were indescribably strong. Their combined

effort could sweep through all enemies but Li Qiye spoke as if they weren't worth a single coin.

“You’re doing this alone or with the Azure Dragon Legion?” The Azure Dragon Prince uttered.

“You think too highly of yourself.” Li Qiye smiled: “The four of you are indeed powerful Emperor Assailants. However, you really think that your combined effort can oppose the power of an emperor? It’s not that simple to reach the Emperor Rival level. All of your wondrous fortunes and achievements in the prison only allow you to take the first step to this level. Your current power level isn’t enough.”

The siblings nearly vomited blood from anger. A murderous bloodthirst appeared in their eyes. At this moment, old and new grievances overwhelmed them. Only by tearing Li Qiye apart would their rage subside.

The last sentence is a bit strange to translate. In Chinese, the subject isn't always apparent. It is situational and an omission can still sound fine. You can assume that the speaker is the subject in this case. However, for this context, she wasn't the one experiencing the last sentence, at least in my opinion given the next lines. This is a problem translating to English

# Chapter 1677: Immortal Physiques

## Competition

---

“We’ll decide it all today!” The irascible princess shouted.

In the blink of an eye, the four siblings took over four different directions to surround Li Qiye. Their vitality erupted and suffocated the spectators, exacerbated by their imperial bloodline that made others want to prostrate.

“Buzz!” Their inner physique appeared at the same time and became radiant like four suns slowly floating up in the sky. This was especially true for the Vermillion Bird Princess. She released a heatwave engulfing the myriad worlds, capable of incinerating everything.

“Four grand completion Immortal Physiques!” Even Emperor Assailants were shocked at this scene.

For cultivators, just one grand completion physique was already amazing. But now, all four imperial princes were at grand completion.

Li Qiye stared at them and smiled leisurely: “Not a bad achievement. An imperial bloodline combined with a grand completion physique, it would be hard not to become an Emperor Assailant at this point. The Soaring Immortal Physique from your sect is the most complete outside of the Physique Scripture, same with your Hell Suppression Godly Physique. Looks like your Indestructible Diamond Physique is from trading with the Silent Orchid Temple, those monks indeed have a unique perspective on this regards, this physique law is not bad at all. As for your maternal Extreme Yang Physique, it’s a bit lacking but you did a good job polishing it inside the prison, not much critique to be had there.”

Li Qiye slowly judged the four grand completion physiques.

The Azure Dragon Prince cultivated the secret Soaring Immortal Physique of his sect; the White Tiger Prince had the Hell Suppression Godly Physique, also from the sect. The sect had two physique laws so the Black Tortoise Prince trained in the Indestructible Diamond Physique from a different temple. Meanwhile, the Vermillion Bird Princess inherited the peerless Extreme Yang Physique from her mother's family. After marrying the emperor, the imperial queen also gave this law to her daughter!

“Kill!” The four of them shouted and attacked in unison. The four grand completion physiques erupted at the same time with their imperial bloodline powering them. This granted them an immensely destructive force.

These were four Emperor Assailants in action. Any existence in Mortal Emperor would tremble before this. Time became chaotic; space was destroyed; the myriad dao suppressed.

The Azure Dragon Prince was like a descending immortal with his incredible attack. This sword slash could cut through the galaxy.

The White Tiger Prince was as majestic as a divine mountain. He could suppress the firmament and punish the gods and devils with his boundless weight.

The Black Tortoise Prince soared ahead in order to become the most fortified defensive line in the world for his siblings. He could withstand all onslaught from the enemy.

The Vermillion Bird Princess ravaged the world with her divine flame. All would turn to ashes under the temperature of this raging goddess.

“Buzz!” Li Qiye retaliated in this split second by using both his Stagnation and Demise Domains. He was also under his Nirvana Heavens state. The two domains stacked on each other and became much stronger.

The four siblings became slower within the domains and felt the pressure instantly. However, their vitality wildly erupted. In a short time, their physiques powered up and immortal armors and weapons appeared to protect them.

Nevertheless, these armors and weapons still crumbled beneath the two domains. This didn't deter them from lunging at him with an oppressive and all-destroying momentum. It was just that their speed and power became much weaker.

Li Qiye took action again by pointing his finger to the sky to activate Soaring Immortal. The world became dazzling because of his nirvana form illuminating everything. It looked like all the power in the worlds gathered on his body.

"Boom!" A gigantic shield materialized in his hand and he threw it out instantly. It surpassed all speed, even the Azure Dragon Prince who had exerted his physique to its limit.

Myriad World Soaring Immortal and Hell Suppression Godly Aegis! This was Li Qiye's Soaring Immortal and Hell Suppression Physique Break.

These two attacks were perfect inside the two domains. It exceeded everything and even Emperor Assailants couldn't stop them!

"Boom!" Even the Soaring Immortal Sect that was protected by five emperors began to tremble."

Without their protection, the shockwave from this attack could destroy the entire sect already.

Space shattered and all four siblings spat out blood. They were repelled and wounded in just one move!

Both the crowd and disciples from Soaring Immortal gasped in horror. This power was too horrifying.

Soaring Immortal was very hopeful when the four siblings came out. They assumed that the siblings would be able to stop all



enemies so they didn't expect this result.

“Like I said, it's not that simple to add or subtract power by just adding people. If you can't do a good job of working together, you might as well fight alone.” Li Qiye chuckled.

“Immortal Emperors might have a chance to fight him. Anything else would lose for sure.” Gu Zun saw this scene and murmured.

The four siblings glanced at each other and wiped the blood off their lips. At this moment, they realized they have underestimated Li Qiye. They were at a great disadvantage before the two domains and physique breaks. Because of this limitation, their combined effort was not much more effective than fighting alone. Despite hating him, they admitted that he was right in this regards.

“Boom!” The four stepped forward together and their body became shrouded in flame. The Azure Dragon Prince had a green flame; the White Tiger Prince had a black flame; Black Tortoise Prince had a golden flame while the princess had a frightening sunfire.

“Rawr!” The four beasts roared and the siblings disappeared. The divine beasts emerged before everyone instead.

A primordial beastly aura engulfed the world like a flood. Everyone was trembling from sensing this aura.

“Not a bad idea, to be able to cultivate the Immortal Physiques in this aspect, this is taking an unprecedented step forward.” Li Qiye smiled and said.

“Whoosh!” The azure dragon opened a spatial portal. The black tortoise rushed forward first to pave the way while the other two beasts attacked from both the left and right.

Their teamwork was much better this time around. Each movement and attack were in harmony, allowing them to have perfect offense and defense without any opening.

Li Qiye attacked with the same moves again, the two domains

and the two physique breaks.

“Rumble!” All of Mortal Emperor trembled. In the blink of an eye, the five of them have exchanged two hundred moves. The princes had the advantage this time around and continuously forced Li Qiye back.

“Bang!” Finally, under another powerful assault, they blew Li Qiye away and made him spit out blood.

However, Li Qiye in his nirvana form quickly stood up and smiled: “Quite impressive, still not an Emperor Contender just yet but there is still hope to reach it eventually if your four physiques can fuse together even more.”

Having said that, twelve existences that were identical to Li Qiye appeared. These twelve gods and devils instantly fused together with perfection.

“Behold, the true fusion of Immortal Physiques.” He claimed.

“Boom!” A boundless immortal light surged out of this new being. It grasped an unbeatable level in this split second.

The crowd was aghast. The fusion of the twelve beings gave it an immense power-up.

Even though they weren’t real Immortal Physique users, their perfection fusion still scared Emperor Assailants. It was as if they were looking at an Immortal Emperor!

“Kill!” The four siblings attacked again as if their mind was connected.

“Rumble!” The ensuing battle destroyed the stars in the sky. They were fighting up above and tore the void apart. A calamity was descending on this battlefield.

No one dared to get close to this battle. Even Godkings would be torn apart once they got close. Only Emperor Assailants were strong enough to watch in close vicinity.

Gu Zun back in Heaven Suppression was relishing in watching the battle. He would occasionally stare at the horizon as well.

The Azure Dragon Legion in its draconic form didn't watch the battle at all. It remained vigilant with its sweeping gaze as if it was waiting for something dangerous.

Their goal was no longer Soaring Immortal. In their eyes, the sect's legions have been defeated by them. There was nothing else worthy for them to take action.

They were waiting for their old enemies, the lucky survivors of the Ancient Ming! Of course, no one knows if there are still Ancient Ming Legions left alive.

However, Worldkeeper truly hoped to see the Ancient Ming. If they dared to appear, he would destroy them again!

Gu Zun was also aware that there were even more frightening existences looming in the darkness outside of the dragon. As long as the Ancient Ming dared to come out, a battle like never before would absolutely happen!

# Chapter 1678: Invincible

---

The battle between Li Qiye and the four siblings raged on until the celestials lost their colors and the world became bleak. This was a battle of the Emperor Assailant level; the aura engulfed each corner of the Mortal Emperor World. Many existences trembled because of this as if the end of the world was approaching.

The four siblings turned into divine beasts and had a perfect combination offense. It was polished during their hellish time in the Immortal Confinement. They relied on it to survive through the cruel and arduous days.

Four grand completion physiques in the form of divine beasts on top of a perfect combination art resulted in a horrifying power. Even an Emperor Assailant would be powerless before them. They would need to have an ultimate move to take one of their siblings out before the four could use their combination art. Otherwise, the four siblings would trap and kill them with ease.

Meanwhile, the godfiend from the fusion of the twelve physiques had unimaginable power. Just think about it, one person was in possession of the twelve physiques, this was quite a frightening matter. Speed, strength, and defense were instantly boosted to the top level.

Prior to this, Li Qiye said that just fighting together didn't mean that it would be effective. This new godfiend was the perfect example of this.

It wasn't just twelve physiques fighting together at the same time. It had unbelievable advantages with this perfection fusion since all the aspects of fighting rose like a storm to an unfathomable level!

It became an unkillable existence with a speed hundreds of times faster than lightning and enough power to crush everything. If it wasn't for the perfect combination art with their physiques, the

four siblings would have lost long ago.

The experts and ancestors from Soaring Immortal were stunned. They thought that their imperial princes were untouchable but even the four of them together could only manage to keep up against Li Qiye. Just how frightening was this man?

The two sides were as fast as a falling meteor. Ordinary cultivators couldn't see anything; only Emperor Assailants could see the details of their attacks.

“Rumble!” The crevice of the sky was being broken to pieces by this battle just like a great tribulation. In a short time, they have exchanged several thousand moves with their amazing speed.

While the godfiend was fighting against the siblings, Li Qiye kept his focus on the sky and even perused the entire world. However, he didn't find anything, especially not his enemies.

He was certain that there were still lucky survivors from the Ancient Ming. They were still hiding and would definitely keep an eye on this battle. Alas, there was not even a trace of them in sight. The race had a heaven-defying artifact that made it prohibitively difficult to kill all of them.

Nevertheless, Li Qiye was still confident and waited for when his piece would bring him to the lair of the Ancient Ming!

Because of the lack of response, Li Qiye understood that maintaining this course was useless. It was time to be crueler.

“Time to end this.” He stepped into the battlefield and smiled.

“Buzz.” In this split second, Li Qiye and the godfiend fused together. He was still the same while the godfiend disappeared into his body.

Endless rays of light oozed from his body that was resembling a universe. This seemed to be the primordial eruption. The resulting radiance made it unbearable for the inhabitants of Mortal Emperor. All closed their eyes from discomfort.

After he took back in all the light, an immortal ray floated around him and divided itself into twelve rings that circled continuously. Each of them seemed like its own domain.

“Rumble!” He began to shatter space and used an unparalleled speed to attack the four siblings in their beast form.

He was swift to the point where the four powerful siblings couldn’t keep up with him entirely. Even those powerful enough to watch the fight earlier became a bit dazed when Li Qiye took it up a notch.

“Boom!” Blood spattered everywhere. The four siblings couldn’t stop this new form of his and took a rough beating. They were instantly blown millions of miles away.

This attack quaked the entire sky. Half of his attack was absorbed by the Black Tortoise Prince with his Indestructible Diamond Physique. He took the full brunt of the attack so he was completely stained with blood. However, the other three still couldn’t withstand it.

“Any other moves?” Li Qiye floated in the in the sky like a true immortal and looked down on all creation. Not to mention Emperor Assailants, even Emperor Contenders were afraid of his current state!

The four siblings glanced at each other. Their current form was still no match for Li Qiye so they bit their teeth and decided to go all out!

“Ah!” They screamed miserably with rays of immortal lights breaking out of their chest. They looked to have their own consciousness, wishing to come out of the four’s body. After coming out, they turned into laws. These laws were different from laws of the myriad dao. They carried arks not belonging to this world.

When these marks appeared, they seemed to be sucking in all the

types of energy available, such as seven emotions and six desires. It was the lord of all existences' anger and hatred.

“Clank!” These laws came together in an instant. Finally, the four joined together and turned into a gigantic and bizarre monster.

It had the head of an azure dragon, the body of a white tiger, the wings of a vermillion bird, and the shell of a black tortoise.

Its size was simply unimaginable. One stomp could crush the galaxy. If it were to land on Mortal Emperor, it could crush the entire Grand Sea into dust. The scarier part was its breath sweeping through Mortal Emperor and seizing the power of all emotions

Other beings were simply ants in comparison. It could swing its hand and flatten the entire world!

“Wow. Not only did the four of you able to withstand the torment of the prison, you also stored it inside your body, using this power from an ancient epoch to sharpen your own Immortal Physique. That's some innovation for sure.” Li Qiye smiled while looking at the beast.

So it turned out that during the torture inside the prison, a terrible power was eating away at their body. However, as time passed, they began to understand this power and store it inside. When they used this power, it would allow the four of them to fuse together with perfection.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” The monster stepped forward and crushed the stars. It wanted to put an end to Li Qiye.

Li Qiye let out a battle cry and channeled his twelve physiques. The twelve rings lit up and it turned his body gigantic as well, comparable to the other monster. He met the monster's advance with a punch.

“Rumble!” The two sides turned the sky into a scene of chaos.

Firmaments were being destroyed.

Their sheer size alone was world-destroying; there was no need for techniques and merit laws. The most exquisite technique would still be crushed by their absolute strength.

The horrified existences in Mortal Emperor were hoping that this terrible war would end soon. Otherwise, a single stomp from either one would massacre countless inhabitants.



# Chapter 1679: Gu Zuns Counter

---

The battle above the sky turned the world dark. Everyone was trembling in fear and praying for peace.

However, the two sides had similar power so no one had the upper hand, resulting in push and pull in a stalemate.

“Buzz!” Li Qiye changed his style by activating his Heaven’s Will Crystal Physique. His body lit up and the physique was able to dodge everything. All attacks were nullified even when they made contact.

“Rumble!” He had the advantage now and forced the monster back. However, it wasn’t easy to kill this perfectly fused monsters with four physiques.

“Ancestors, help us!” The siblings bellowed after being repeatedly pushed back by Li Qiye. Their blood burned and a seal belonging to the emperors exploded like a sun. It blinded the sky with its light.

Five imperial auras soared from the sect and suppressed the world. It was as if they have come back to life.

Not only were they empowered by the emperors at the moment, even the power left behind by the wise sages of the sect was for them to use. Thus, one could easily imagine the immense strength they had just gained. It was a world-destroying one to the horror of all inhabitants.

They have finally reached the Emperor Contender level with this new boost and could last more than one thousand moves against one even if the emperor was using the power of his Heaven’s Will!

“Banish!” The four siblings shouted at the same time. Their monster form opened a spatial hole and wanted to expel Li Qiye.

There was no way for them to defeat Li Qiye due to this crystal physique. They wanted to wait until it disappeared inside that

space before ambushing him afterward.

Moreover, ordinary spatial banishment was useless against his physique. They needed to use a combination of a temporal and spatial banishment in order to push him away.

“Fortify!” Li Qiye shouted and became heavenly. He fortified his spatial-temporal location in order to stop the incoming technique.

One side was trying to expel while the other fortified. This was a competition of spatial and temporal manipulation. They found that this was the best technique to use at this moment.

“Buzz.” Space and time around them were strangely refined into solid form and became shiny. It was because the combatants were too strong. If this continued, they would destroy this area completely and turn it into an inhabitable place.

The spectators were breathless while watching this even fight. If this spatial manipulation were to descend, it would make a large area disappear instantly.

Meanwhile, Gu Zun back in Heaven Suppression suddenly moved. His cultivation was completely sealed yet he broke through all the restrictions instantly. All the seals became ineffective against him.

In the blink of an eye, he looked to be several tens of thousand years younger. His vitality was exuberant at this moment as if he has become young again.

“Not good!” The ancestors suppressing him were aghast. Zi Cuining was alarmed as well since it was all too late. Gu Zun instantly disappeared in the next second.

“Buzz!” Gu Zun emerged again on the battlefield above the sky but he wasn’t alone this time. Another person was with him, an inconspicuous youth.

It was Lin Qi, the disciple of an elder from Heaven Suppression. He was only an ordinary disciple so it was quite shocking to see

him appearing with Gu Zun above.

“Who is that?” Ancestor Shan was surprised.

The two were quite strange as if they were a pair. Their body trembled together and began to move with a matchless speed in order to sever the time and space along with everything else from the battlefield.

The unbelievable happened. The two of them actually fused together into one being! This was a middle-aged man that looked a bit like Lin Qi and Gu Zun.

“Gu Zun during his middle-aged years.” The matriarch was shocked and murmured: “They severed themselves from the timeline. One before reincarnation and the other a half-reincarnation. The two can never meet or it will cause a distortion in the timeline. Just the slightest mistake would turn everything into ashes!”

After turning into this new form, Gu Zun located in this severed domain spat out two bubbles.

“Buzz!” Li Qiye and the monster were sealed inside the bizarre bubbles as if they have become relics of the ancient past, no longer living in the present.

This development was too fast so no one could react in time. Everyone became confused.

A faint mist rose from Soaring Immortal next. It engulfed the entire sect with an unimaginable speed. The whole place became dreamlike, the most beautiful paradise in the world! People would lose their way home after coming there.

The disciples of the sect became immersed in this ethereal location. They didn't know what was going on any longer.

“Kill!” In this instant, a cavalry rushed out from Soaring Immortal with the ultimate speed towards the most important treasury of the sect.

It pierced through like a sharp blade. This wasn't an attack out of avarice but a meticulously concocted plan from long ago!

“Ah!” The disciples from the sect in their trance couldn't stop the cavalry at all. Heads went flying as many disciples were taken down.

“Whoosh!” The defensive barriers of the five emperors were effective. Holy light flowed out of the important locations in their ancestral ground. These locations used to be the places where the emperors performed their dao search.

With the lights of the emperors, the ancestors and experts woke up from their daze. They composed themselves and noticed the cavalry rushing towards their most important treasury and became alarmed.

“Kill them!” The experts roared and went to meet the enemies.

The leader of this cavalry had a magnificent red cloak fluttering in the air. The other noticeable thing about him was his silver beard. It was Ye Jiuzhou and the cavalry that he had personally trained. They used to be a branch of Heaven Suppression made up of the sect's elites.

At this moment, this elite force was attacking Soaring Immortal under Ye Jiuzhou's leadership.

People were stunned to see this since they knew that Soaring Immortal and Heaven Suppression were allies. Thus, this ambush from Ye Jiuzhou shocked them all.

The even more bizarre thing was the mist's ability to mesmerize all the experts from Soaring Immortal. If it wasn't for the holy lights from the emperors, Soaring Immortal would have fallen prey to the cavalry already.

“What are they trying to do?!” Ancestor Shan was astounded by Ye Jiuzhou's decision. He still thought that Gu Zun's group was with Soaring Immortal!

“The treasures!” Zi Cuining murmured: “Gu Zun covet the Soaring Immortal Treasury. It accumulates the treasures from five emperors, too many heaven-shattering items are hidden there!”

Ancestor Shan’s group shuddered after hearing this. The accumulation of five emperors... To say that one wasn’t tempted by this treasury would be a blatant lie. Anyone would feel their heart beating faster before this treasury since they wouldn’t be able to waste it all away for many generations!

# Chapter 1680: Imperial Queen Ren Xian

---

This sudden development took everyone like a storm. The one reversing the tide wasn't Soaring Immortal or Li Qiye, it was Gu Zun from Heaven Suppression. Surely no one expected for this to happen.

"Whoosh!" Two ropes shot out and immediately coiled around Li Qiye and the four siblings' bubbles. Gu Zun wanted to take them with him.

"Clank!" The hymn of a spear resonated as the weapon aimed for Gu Zun. The azure dragon stopped his path and scared the crowd with its intensity.

"Your legion should be focusing on stopping the Ancient Ming." Gu Zun smiled and said.

"Release the temporal bubbles and I'll spare your life." Worldkeeper spoke sternly, leaving no room for negotiation.

Even though Gu Zun was one of the ten eonic geniuses, he couldn't underestimate someone as powerful as Worldkeeper.

"Unfortunately, your opponent is not me." Gu Zun still wasn't afraid at all. He laughed loudly at Soaring Immortal: "If there is no objection, I shall be taking your princes."

All the experts and ancestors in Soaring Immortal were both livid and scared. They couldn't do anything to help since their main fighting force had just woken up from the mist. They were busy with stopping Ye Jiuzhou from stealing their most important treasury.

The sect was indeed mighty but Jiuzhou came prepared with many treasures and sieging artifacts. He was simply unstoppable and it took many ancestors before Soaring Immortal managed to hinder his movement.

Thus, they couldn't spare men to try and save the four princes.

As for the people still immersed in the mist, this group was useless.

Gu Zun wasn't in a rush to escape because Li Qiye and the four princes couldn't escape from his seal. Azure Dragon Legion was still guarding this area on top of the Black Dragon King looming in the horizon. He was certainly aware of this.

Despite his top middle-aged form, he knew that he alone couldn't fight both the legion and the Black Dragon King. Thus, he had decided to use his ace card, which is taking advantage of his hostages!

“Boom!” A holy location in Soaring Immortal suddenly cracked open!

There was an old grave in this place. Despite the humble size, it had beautiful sceneries with an abundance of holy rays and imperial auras. There weren't that many things in the world that could enjoy this treatment. The eternal auspicious rays here showed that this item or person was too important to an emperor.

There was a simple tablet before this grave with the words, “Love of my life”. It was signed by, “Ye Yunzhou.”

People might not know who Ye Yunzhou was but they were certainly familiar with his title, Immortal Emperor Tun Ri, the third emperor of Soaring Immortal.

A woman came out from the grave with a beauty stealing away the splendor of the mountains, rivers, and the stars. She was the culmination of all that is fair and bright in the world. The most admirable feature was her regal aura, making others want to kneel down after sensing it. It was as if she was born to rule the world and give orders.

“Is this Immortal Emperor Tun Ri's wife?” The experts from Soaring Immortal were stunned to see the woman walking out from the grave.

They knew that this location was extremely holy since it was the

burial of the emperor's beloved wife. After she passed away, he mourned and couldn't forget. Her grave has always been illuminated by his imperial light.

For many generations, the disciples of Soaring Immortal came to this place in order to worship and remember her meritorious contributions to the sect.

So when this supreme woman came out of nowhere, the disciples all thought that their imperial queen had come back to life.

"That's not Imperial Queen Tun Ri. It's Imperial Queen Ren Xian!" An ancestor quickly recognized in astoundment.

Many disciples were shocked to hear this. They didn't understand what was going on because Imperial Queen Ren Xian was buried very far away in a different location in Soaring Immortal. Why was she buried here in this place?

Many experts knew that Imperial Queen Ren Xian died young and couldn't enjoy the glory of being a queen. However, due to Immortal Emperor Ren Xian's contribution to the sect, she was buried in Soaring Immortal as well so that future descendants could worship her.

A few ancestors who were generals under Immortal Emperor Ren Xian became quiet. It seemed that they weren't too surprised to see this because they knew what was going on. They chose to stand on her side. Otherwise, how could the Ren Xian branch have the ability to make all the decisions right now?

"Boom!" She raised her finger straight at Ye Jiuzhou's cavalry.

"Ah!" Many experts from Heaven Suppression were instantly killed. Even Ye Jiuzhou was blown away. The opponent was simply too strong and he couldn't block her first move.

"Whoosh!" She took one step into the battlefield and instantly blocked Gu Zun's path.

At this moment, Gu Zun, the imperial queen, and the azure



dragon formed a triangle. The first to take action would be at a disadvantage.

“Release my children and I shall spare you.” She spoke for the first time with an unquestionable authority. She didn’t care for a monster like Gu Zun at all.

Gu Zun smiled in response and leisurely said: “Imperial queen, I have no hostility towards your sect. This is only a little method to get you to come out. It’s much easier with you here now, I can let the four imperial princes go and dispel the poisonous mist, with just one condition!”

“You’re not qualified to negotiate with me! Release my children now or I shall trample your Heaven Suppression!” Her eyes turned cold with an oppressive glint.

“Imperial queen, don’t waste our time.” Gu Zun smiled and shook his head: “I won’t deny your considerable power. I believe you have the strength of an Emperor Contender right now, no, maybe even the means of an Emperor Rival from the Ancient Ming. But I, Gu Zun, am not afraid of you. I have met people much more terrifying than you before.”

His eyes became serious at this point: “Right now, we are on the same boat. Imperial queen, you’re not a fool and should be able to tell between friends and foes. I only need him, you can have the rest.”

The queen stared at Li Qiye sealed inside the bubble with a murderous glimmer. She knew exactly who this person was! Her lifelong goal was to kill him!

“And if I refuse?” She asked coldly.

“Then, your plan for many generations will go to waste.” He smiled: “Not only will you lose your children, your sect will be massacred as well and turn to ashes. If you want to go hard with me, no problem, I’ll release him and work together with the Azure

Dragon Legion.”

He went on: “No need to glare at me like that. That’s right, I want to kill His Excellency and he knows it too. He knew that I had a penchant for treachery since my youth so it’s not surprising for me to betray him at all. Even if I stand by his side, he might still not forgive me and will kill me eventually. But don’t forget, we are strangers while I am still master-disciple with His Excellency. If I have to pick my death, I will definitely pick being killed by him. It will be much more glorious and renowned. Plus, even if I won’t be considered a contributor or an ally after releasing him, at the very least, I’ll still earn a proper death with a grave!”

“So now, do you know the right choice? Stand by my side and stop the Azure Dragon Legion so I can escape. I’ll release the imperial princes from the Temporal Bubble in due time!”

The queen slightly batted her eyes and had to reconsider.

“Not a bad plan.” Worldkeeper said coldly. His legion was watching both Gu Zun and the queen at the same time.

“You’re too kind, True God. This is because His Excellency is such a good mentor.” Gu Zun joked: “As the saying goes, rich and risk go together, so I have to seize success in a time of danger. The truth is that I’m not too confident in success right now because His Excellency had schemed the ages. But regardless of that, I still have to try, don’t you think, True God?”

# Chapter 1681: Who Will Be The Last One Smiling?

---

Gu Zun, the Azure Dragon Legion, and Imperial Queen Ren Xian were impeding each other. The first one to attack would be ganged up by the other two.

“Imperial Queen, this is no time for indecisiveness.” Gu Zun slowly added: “You can get your revenge or pursue me later. Now, you must repel the enemy or you will end up with nothing. Help me now and become the ruler of the nine worlds in the future! Your Soaring Immortal Sect will have countless emperors!”

Gu Zun’s words made some sense. If Gu Zun were to take Li Qiye away, the queen would be the real master as long as she can defeat the Azure Dragon Legion. Once her Ancient Ming bloodline became stronger, on top of having the resources of Soaring Immortal, the nine worlds will be hers for the taking.

She no longer hesitated and walked forward to stop the legion. She had made her choice, picking hegemony over revenge for now.

“This is a wise choice, I am lost in admiration for your wisdom, Imperial Queen.” Gu Zun smiled and carefully retreated. As long as the queen was there to stop all the firepower, he would have the chance to run.

“Want to run?!” The azure dragon thrust with its spear through space. The power of this attack would shock Emperor Assailants.

“Cease your impudence!” The queen shouted and stopped the dragon. A pair of boundless fiery wings emerged behind her and sealed all the portals in the world to stop the thrust!

She still looked as leisure as ever. This made her strength quite apparent.

“Imperial Queen, unbeatable indeed.” Gu Zun praised and got even farther away.

He left behind the imperial princes this time and only took Li Qiye with him, in accordance with his agreement with the queen. The princes as hostages have lost their worth since he had gotten what he wanted.

“Clank!” The legion was furious now. Its spear aimed at the sky and a green light oozed out with an erupting draconic aura. It wanted to defeat the queen as fast as possible in order to save Li Qiye.

“No rush, no rush, why is everyone fighting or leaving so fast? It’s not easy for us to meet, especially on a beautiful day like this.” A leisure voice came about.

Gu Zun was stunned to hear it and turned pale. He had already prepared an escape path and no one would ever be able to find him again in that location.

However, someone was standing in front of him, causing him to look back at the bubble.

Of course, it was Li Qiye standing right there.

In the bubble, Gu Zun saw another Li Qiye. The two were completely identical. Even someone as intelligent as him couldn’t tell the real one from the fake.

The queen was shocked as well. An expert of her level couldn’t figure out the real one either!

In this split second, Gu Zun retreated to a safe distance with Li Qiye on top of releasing the four princes from their bubble.

After doing so, he stared respectfully at Li Qiye, in awe of the man’s abilities. He learned all of his craftiness from the Dark Crow so he was actually the biggest admirer out of everyone.

Li Qiye looked at the bubble and the mist before praising: “I have to admit, you have learned many things from me. Not only did you obtain the Temporal Bubbles and Eye Mist, you have even recreated a part of your soul, in order to use the pre-reincarnation

and half-reincarnation selves to meet and create a temporal chaos in order to capture me during the gap. I don't think anyone else besides me can come up with such an excellent plan. It can indeed seal an emperor! And the danger from messing with the timeline! Just one misstep would turn everything to ashes. Even the Black Dragon King doesn't dare to experiment with this."

"You're too kind, it's all due to your guidance." Gu Zun didn't become complacent. He retreated to the queen's side.

He had toiled and calculated just for today. Countless blood and sweat were spent in order to obtain the Temporal Bubble and the Eye Mist.

The bubbles were born along the river of time. They were extremely rare as essences of the timeline. Because of this, one epoch would only produce three to five. This would already be a large quantity.

In the past, Li Qiye had also thought about using them to seal existences on the same level as emperors. The method was hypothesized by him too but he never carried it out.

Gu Zun was aware of this method. Who would have thought that he would actually be successful with it?

The Eye Mist was very rare as well. It was also another type of essence created from certain sea-serpent that had the bloodline of a True Dragon. There was a complete corpse of this creature in the nine worlds. Li Qiye told him in passing but Gu Zun memorized this and actually came for it. He used it on Soaring Immortal and allowed his cavalry to attack.

"This is all due to your own effort, I don't dare to claim credit. It is such a shame that you have chosen the wrong path." Li Qiye shook his head and smiled.

Even the everlasting crow had to admit that Gu Zun was very talented with amazing achievements. In the past, the ones he

trained used their talents and tried their best to become an emperor, all focus was on cultivation.

This wasn't the case for Gu Zun. He learned strategy and scheming in order to become someone like the Dark Crow or even replace him. Unfortunately, he still wasn't a match for the Dark Crow.

"You are right, I'm still too inexperienced compared to you in all aspects. I lack your vast knowledge as well. I wasn't too confident in sealing you this time and I understand now, that your plan wasn't meant just for me. It involved everyone." Gu Zun was still calm enough to smile.

He was aware that Li Qiye wanted to kill all of his enemies, including him, the imperial queen, and the Ancient Ming. Otherwise, his brother-in-law, the Black Dragon King, wouldn't be hiding in the horizon and stopping all escape paths.

Thus, when the Ancient Ming appeared, they would be completely massacred since the Dark Crow was waiting for them to take the bait!

Nevertheless, he still had to take the chance. This was his only opportunity to defeat the Dark Crow, such a chance would never arise again in the future. Once the Dark Crow came to the tenth world, he would lose this chance to contend since the Dark Crow would become even stronger than now.

"Alas, someone else is even more careful and patient than you." Li Qiye glanced at the sky and said.

It was easy to talk to a smart person. Gu Zun understood what he meant right away. Unfortunately, the Ancient Ming still refuse to show up and take action. Otherwise, he would be able to kill them and seize the Corporeal Zone!

This wasn't too surprising. The Ancient Ming had become very patient and careful after dealing with him for generations before

their eventual defeat. Unless there was no other choice, they wouldn't take any unnecessary risk.

However, Soaring Immortal was clearly an experiment by the Ancient Ming. They wanted to use this sect in order to break through to the nine worlds again.

“That's why I said I'm still inexperienced. I'm curious right now, which is your real body?” Gu Zun looked at Li Qiye in the bubble and asked.

“Does it matter? It doesn't change the result at all.” Li Qiye smiled mysteriously.

Having said that, he slightly moved his body, seemingly crossing through time and the bubble.

“Pa!” The bubble shattered and the two Li Qiye fused together. No one could ever tell the real one from the fake one earlier now.

In fact, there was indeed a double among the two. This wasn't an ordinary double since Li Qiye used the World Seal to create a duplicate for himself. This particular double was only a bit weaker than the real body.

Gu Zun wasn't surprised to see the bubble being destroyed. Others might not be able to do this but the Dark Crow was a different story. After all, he heard about the bubbles and got the idea of using them from the Dark Crow.

# Chapter 1682: The Imperial Queens Hatred

---

Gu Zun was fine with losing since he was already mentally prepared. Losing to an existence like the Dark Crow wasn't too surprising.

“Imperial Queen, you better make sure the Ancient Ming is supporting you, or you will die a miserable death and Soaring Immortal will go down with you.” Gu Zun slowly spoke while standing next to the queen.

In his eyes, he was on the same camp as the queen and Soaring Immortal. They had no choice other than to work together.

Of course, he wasn't optimistic at all and hoped that the Ancient Ming would show up again. This would give him a glimmer of hope.

Meanwhile, the queen and the four princes angrily glared at Li Qiye. The queen had nothing but hatred in her eyes as if there was an irreconcilable feud between the two of them and that she wanted nothing more than to tear him apart.

He smiled and looked at her: “It's not too surprising that you are alive. However, you have committed two heinous crimes, worthy of death. First, conspiring with the Ancient Ming. Second, hiding in the grave of Imperial Queen Tun Ri!”

The queen didn't actually die young back then. She faked her death in order to change her bloodline in the shadow.

Nevertheless, her whole blood experiment became exposed which led to the forceful search of the sect by the Dark Crow. Meanwhile, she has been hiding in Imperial Queen Tun Ri's grave the entire time.

Even though the Dark Crow essentially excavated the entire place, there was one place he would never touch, the grave of Imperial Queen Tun Ri. It wasn't only because she was the



emperor's wife but also because the Dark Crow used to adore her for she was once his most powerful disciple.

After careful rumination, Imperial Queen Ren Xian chose to hide in this particular grave and disappeared from the world. Everyone assumed she was dead.

A few ancestors wanted to find the mastermind but they failed to do so. They didn't expect for her to be hiding there at all.

"One of us shall die today!" The queen was not afraid of the Dark Crow. Her imperial aura was still surging and she maintained her noble temperament.

She knew exactly who she was facing so she had no fear when the day came. It was inevitable in her mind.

Li Qiye said disapprovingly: "I don't quite understand. You are a human and eventually became the queen yet you still chose to work for the Ancient Ming. How regrettable."

"There are many things you don't understand!" She uttered coldly: "The nine worlds do not revolve around your whim, the myriad realms aren't your playground!"

"I'm aware." After gazing into the hatred in her eyes, he smiled and said: "It's all because of Immortal Emperor Ren Xian. He had always shown great restraint with considerable caution on this aspect but you, his wife, chose the opposite. This caused many regrets for both you and him. It wasn't easy for him to build his reputation and he had contributed a lot to the human race, worthy of his title. However, your choice of picking the Ancient Ming will bring eternal damnation to Soaring Immortal. You are disgracing the ancestors of your sect, your position as an imperial queen, and the emperor himself!"

"Don't you bring up Ren Xian!" The queen interrupted him at once: "I am walking on the path he didn't dare to for his sake! This is a returning to the origin! The bloodline is innocent. He has

never done anything wrong so the world should give him justice, same with you!”

“Is that so? I want to see this so-called innocent bloodline! Even Immortal Emperor Ren Xian didn’t dare to say so back then.” He stared at her and said flatly.

“Why is it a crime to have a bloodline?!” The queen retorted: “Plus, you are not the arbiter of the world. You aren’t qualified to decide whether the bloodline of someone is sinful or not!”

“So you blame me for condemning his Ancient Ming bloodline.” Li Qiye smiled.

“That’s right, you have ruined his life!” The queen said harshly: “Because of your words, he had to make an eternal blood oath! He was a supreme genius but because of your attitude, he became ashamed of his own bloodline, just that thin strand of Ancient Ming. In order to sever this bloodline to become a full human, he removed his bones and tendons time and time again! Each time was a tormenting experience. Even a man as heroic as him couldn’t help but scream! You weren’t there to hear his screams or becoming crazy! All of this was due to the thin bloodline! All of his pain came from your attitude and words!”

Her regality and upbringing couldn’t stop her face from twisting with hatred and pain.

She was both his wife and best friend, always by his side when he had just started on his path. She schemed for him and accompanied him through thick and thin. Watching her lover suffering made her choose an extreme decision!

“Yes, I have never seen his suffering or heard his screaming.” Li Qiye said flatly: “You are right, I was the one who decided his fate and made him do the blood oath, but so what?”

“I have personally experienced the suffering of the nine worlds with my own eyes. Darkness engulfed the world and the myriad

ances were enslaved. Humans and spirits were only ants in the eyes of the Ancient Ming. They screamed and wailed in lamentation. Many were minced to pieces, their blood became ponds. Some became mere tools for entertainment!”

“Compared to this, the emperor’s suffering is nothing, not worth mentioning! I can kill an emperor and murder a thousand sects, as long as this brings an end to the Ancient Ming. It is completely worth it! I don’t mind or care for those who have to suffer in the process!” Li Qiye coldly finished.

“Who are sinners and who get to suffer aren’t up to you. People can’t judge, only the high heaven! As you have said earlier, your attitude alone made him a sinner. This is an evil way, you’re a criminal!” The queen asserted.

“I have never claimed to be a good person, only a butcher with hands stained of blood. Today, I declare you and your sect guilty. Thus, I shall destroy you all. This is what I must do, a reason for me to exist!” He chuckled and said.

“As for justice and fairness, you can ask the villainous heaven after death. Of course, that is if you can see him. But I’m afraid he won’t have any of that sorts either!” Li Qiye’s eyes turned cold at this point.

“Being unreasonable is the scariest part of a woman.” Gu Zun shook his head and murmured during the conversation. The queen didn’t hear him.

“Don’t be cocky just yet. Who knows who will be the one doing the destroying?” The queen revealed a murderous glint.

Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh: “Being confident is good but you are too blind. You think your power alone is enough to kill me? You think just changing Soaring Immortal’s entry chant is enough for you to grow stronger? Even if you gamble the entire sect and have the power of an Emperor Rival, you are still only my prey.”

The queen became serious with her gaze. She didn't expect for him to know this as well.

“Don't be surprised.” Li Qiye chuckled: “Back during the previous search, I have checked your sect's merit laws. The entry chant had been changed. Even though this new section wasn't too conspicuous, it definitely hid the chant of the Ancient Ming. Others might not be aware, but don't forget who obtained the manuals of this race back then!”

“So what if you know! It is all because of you that this is happening to Soaring Immortal!” She said coldly.

So it turned out that the queen had changed several entry chants to the sect and called them improvements. Of course, the sect didn't know that this was her doing. Only the powerful ancestors who supported her passed these merit laws down to their disciples for generations.

# Chapter 1683: The Battle

---

The changed chants were too difficult to detect even for the most powerful ancestor there. After all, the queen was an amazing genius on top of being stronger than some ancestors. Plus, they have never seen the mantra manuals of the Ancient Ming before.

Furthermore, the new entry chants had no negative effects on the disciples. On the contrary, there were many improvements such as faster cultivation speed. This was the reason why the majority of experts in the sect had trained this particular chant.

Lastly, the sect had been sealed for three generations. This gave the queen hiding in the shadow a great opportunity and room for her plans.

“I’m the culprit?” Li Qiye smiled in response: “Its fate is due to its own choice. The ancestors that supported you knew exactly what they were doing yet they still chose to do so! The real culprit is the sect’s uncontainable ambition. After having five emperors, you all really think that you’re the heaven’s favorite, the ruler of the nine worlds, capable of producing emperors for generations. That’s why a bunch of geezers wants to take the shortcut to reach an even more powerful bloodline. That’s why the Ancient Ming was able to infiltrate.”

“You can rule so why can’t we? Not everything is up to you!” The queen coldly said.

“Fool.” Li Qiye sneered with disdain.

Even Gu Zun was shaking his head: “One should never overestimate a woman’s intelligence. Once they become stubborn, that’s more frightening than anything.”

“I’m not here to talk about morality with you. I’m here to kill you, it’s time to end this.” Li Qiye no longer wished to talk. A murderous glint appeared in his eyes.

In an instant, he teleported in front of the four imperial princes and said: “Remember well, I am a very brutal person. I will let your mother watch you die and vice versa. This is the price of conspiring with the Ancient Ming, bringing darkness to the nine worlds. Eternal damnation is your fate!”

With that, a second Li Qiye appeared. This was the one created by the World Seal and was identical to the real one. The two of them released their thirteen palaces and the fused physique godfiend.

“Boom!” The two godfiends instantly sealed the area and the four princes.

At the same time, his inner physiques lit up. The four physiques emerged along with the two domains.

This, in turn, became four domains in total. One could imagine how terrible his arsenal was at this moment. The entire temporal area became melted.

“Open!” The four princes shouted, wanting to break the suppression. They reacted quickly and fused together but this wasn’t enough.

In the past, his nirvana form alone fought them to a stalemate. Now, two Li Qiye at their peak form completely overwhelmed them.

“Kill!” The queen furiously took action with her hair flying. Her first strike was extremely tyrannical.

“Clank!” An invincible spear spanned through the realms to stop her path, not allowing her to take half a step forward.

“You deserve death!” The azure dragon sternly aimed for the queen with a terrible bloodthirst.

For the legion, the Ancient Ming was their mortal enemy. So many brothers from their legion have died to the Ancient Ming. After so many generations of struggle and bloody battles, they would never forgive anyone who conspires with this race!

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” The two raged on. The queen was anxious to save her children so she turned into a saintess of the high heaven, wishing to use this heavenly power to unleash world-destroying techniques. Emperor Assailants were no match for her.

Meanwhile, the legion was furious as well. This wild dragon tore apart the firmaments with its spear spinning like a tornado to attack her.

Worldkeeper and the individual members of the legion were powerful enough already. This form only amplified their might even more. The queen was having a hard time and had to stay on the defensive. This was the real power of the legion, it was going easy a while ago.

Meanwhile, Gu Zun retreated to the side and nonchalantly watched. He didn't try to escape because he didn't have the chance. His brother-in-law was hiding in the sky and had sealed the area already. If he tried to make a move, his brother-in-law would suppress him whenever.

More importantly, he had no intention of escaping. This was his last chance. If the Ancient Ming were to appear, he could aim for a tie. However, death was assured if the Ancient Ming didn't show up.

Of course, he wasn't afraid at all. Death was not scary to him.

“Buzz!” The two Li Qiye opened their fate palace. A primordial expanse released the three vessels.

When the three vessels appeared, not to mention the sect, the entire Mortal Emperor World changed. Li Qiye's vitality soared because of the vessels and engulfed the world. It continued to increase and eventually, this vitality might cause Mortal Emperor to explode.

All living beings were suffocated because of him. The Mortal Emperor World has become a sea of blood while all other

inhabitants were fish within. However, they didn't know how to swim and would eventually drown.

The more terrible part was when the vessel of genesis appeared. Everyone had an illusion that a second world was opening. It was full of primordial chaos and immortal vegetation. This newly formed world looks like a paradise, yearned by all.

Because of this illusion, many began to walk towards this world. In fact, they were wasting their time since they couldn't enter.

Once the vessel of athanasia appeared, everything became eternal. It was as if Li Qiye was indestructible and immortal. Everyone thought that he was ascending under the power of this vessel, jumping out of the nine worlds, the reincarnation cycles, and the yin and yang. Nothing could hold him back any longer.

“Boom!” His four physiques were shouldering the three vessels in the sky.

A terrible cataclysm resounded in the form of thunder ponds. Nets of lightning emerged everywhere all around Mortal Emperor with sonorous thunders.

It seemed that the high heaven was opening a portal of tribulation. This power of judgment poured down like a flood, seemingly wishing to end Mortal Emperor.

“Oh god.” All existences were pale and dazed beneath the lightning tribulation. They were forced down to the ground in fear. It wasn't a fear of power but an instinctive one out of respect, one that any living being would have towards the high heaven.

All existences were insignificant compared to the heaven. They must prostrate on the ground, unable to resist this power!

“Boom!” All of the lightning bolts directly struck Li Qiye. This illuminated the entire Mortal Emperor World like the explosion of a million suns. Countless experts couldn't open their eyes, not even with their heavenly gaze. This power was simply too much.



Even an Emperor Assailant wouldn't be able to handle it. This was just like the tribulation of an Immortal Emperor. Only such characters would have to endure this type of tribulation. Only they are qualified to be subjected to this level of force!

Li Qiye's three vessels utilized to their limit have invited the rage of the heaven. It wouldn't allow for this type of power to exist so it must destroy the vessels.

Li Qiye wasn't afraid at all. The four images in his palaces activated a well.

The pillar of life pierced directly into the thunder ponds and crazily absorbed this power.

The spring of life like a great ocean withstood the incoming lightning bolts.

The cauldron of life poured out words of the grand dao and turned into a primordial flame. It also refined the absorbed power of the lightning bolts earlier, turning it into Li Qiye's own.

The tree of life blotted out the world with its leaves and offered Li Qiye the majestic power of life!

# Chapter 1684: Ancient Ming Bloodline

---

Emperor Assailants felt apprehensive after seeing Li Qiye taking on the power of the thunder pond alone. This was an Immortal Emperor level of tribulation. They needed to be that strong to challenge it yet Li Qiye was perfectly fine. The more scary part was that he wanted to refine this type of lightning for his own use.

No one would dare to imagine refining a tribulation of this level. The slightest mistake would render one to ashes. Just withstanding it alone could allow him to claim invincibility, let alone stealing it.

“Crack!” After refining the tribulation, he had a lightning bolt running through him. It was golden and blinding as if it was gold turning into lightning. This particular lightning had the power of tribulation within.

He used this bolt to attack the fused imperial princes.

“Ah!” The four screamed and writhed in pain.

The four’s grand completion physique and perfect grand dao were quite mighty. However, they were powerless to resist since the two Li Qiye were suppressing them. Thus, they had to suffer the power of lightning.

“What are you doing?!” The heart of a mother made the queen scream at this sight.

“Offering to the heaven.” Li Qiye said flatly: “Conspiracy never ends well, only in blood! Since you chose to conspire with the Ancient Ming, you should have mentally prepared for this pitiful end.”

“Ah!” The four continued to wail.

“Die!” The distressed queen grabbed the sun and moon to annihilate everything and attacked the azure dragon with her most domineering style.

The dragon retaliated with its spear. Each thrust was destructive enough to destroy all like exploding galaxies.

“Rumble!” The two sides fought intensely in a stalemate!

The queen unleashed more barrages so that she could get past the dragon in order to save her children. At the same time, the furious dragon ferociously defended against her onslaught.

The legion’s power should come as no surprise. It had stopped waves of merciless onslaughts from the Ancient Ming in the past.

“Clank!” After several failed attempts, the queen raised her hand and the Virtuous Sword came into her grasp. She quietly asked: “Your Majesty, grant me strength!”

The sword did not answer. No imperial auras or techniques came out.

“No, you can’t abandon me, you can’t!” The queen turned pale and screamed after seeing the lack of reaction.

“Clank!” The spear pierced the yin and yang with this ultimate thrust. Because the sword wouldn’t respond, the queen had no choice but to throw it away before defending.

“Ah!” The four princes continued to scream. Li Qiye used the power of tribulation to forcefully undo the fusion. This fused form allowed them to withstand Li Qiye for a bit but after being forced apart, they were up to Li Qiye and his clone’s mercy.

“Boom! Boom!” Li Qiye divided the bolt into four golden ones for each of the siblings. The bolts directly pierced into their inner physique. Li Qiye was trying to use the tribulation power to sacrifice the four of them!

“You’re forcing me to do this!” The queen shouted. Her body instantly became resplendent with an ancient rune carrying a mysterious power.

“Master, I offer you my blood!” She repeated a supreme mantra

that echoed across the world.

“Nameless saint, dao without hardship, mind without a speck of dust, life for the dao...” Her chant continued.

At the same time, the same chant resonated in Soaring Immortal. The majority of disciples there chanted the same thing: “Nameless saint, dao without hardship, mind without a speck of dust, my life for the dao...”

This was the entry chant for Soaring Immortal but it was different right now. The chanters' blood were boiling and wanted nothing more than to join the battlefield.

As they were chanting, their body lit up as if they were empowered by the high heaven and trusted with its strength.

“Boom!” Loud blasts detonated inside the queen's body. Her blood was circulating faster as if it was awakening. She exuded a holy light and her body nearly became transparent. One could see white-as-snow blood coursing through her veins.

“Buzz!” When she opened her pretty eyes again, her pupils have become vertical in a bizarre manner.

Li Qiye smiled after seeing the white blood: “So you experimented with your body. Using Immortal Emperor Ren Xian's blood to refine the Ancient Ming blood. Pushing the darkness to the limit, from black to white.”

“Who says the Ancient Ming is the darkness!?” She screamed: “You are the source of darkness in the nine worlds. The Ancient Ming is only a race, it is innocent!”

With that, her forehead cracked open and a third eye appeared. In the socket was a tiny pool of blood with only a few drops. However, the blood drops changed from red to black.

The earth veins from Soaring Immortal resonated with the rippling blood drops. Each inch of Soaring Immortal exuded a sacred light.

“Looks like the Ancient Ming went all out. In order for you to carry out the experiment and have the Soaring Immortal act as its pawn, they actually gave you some ancestral blood. This is the primordial blood of their race.” Li Qiye was surprised to see this.

The queen had a great breakthrough in this blood evolution. She made it look quite holy with a sacred power. This was the reason why the Ancient Ming was bullish on her and gave her some ancestral blood drops.

She was also determined to turn Soaring Immortal into the sect with the strongest bloodline in the world so that it would reign at the top. Thus, she stained the sect's earth veins with the ancestral blood. Because of this, when she woke up her bloodline, it wouldn't only become stronger due to the disciples' chant but also from the prior assimilation with the earth veins.

No one else would be able to do this because these earth veins have been blessed for generations. However, she was the wife of an emperor on top of being extremely gifted. Her talents were among the top two during Immortal Emperor Ren Xian's generation.

With the passage of time, she slowly devoured the earth veins and assimilated the disciples. With the support from the ancestors for the last few generations, especially the ones from the Ren Xian branch, it was too easy for her to take over Soaring Immortal.

“Boom!” A sky appeared behind her, resembling the high heaven. Fiery rays emerged from her body. Normally, an Ancient Ming would have a black light upon activating their bloodline. However, her light was extremely holy, capable of converting others into followers.

She looked as if she was protected by the high heaven. However, it didn't stop there. More explosions detonated. A kingdom opened behind her. It was endless with the power of trillions of living beings.

The disciples who trained her version of the entry chant all

disappeared. They turned into holy strings of light and flowed towards her kingdom. They became deities inside and used their majestic life force to empower her even more.

Even the earth veins' power was sucked into this ethereal kingdom, allowing her to grasp the power of an entire world.

“Clank!” She had a bone sword at this moment. It was as black as ink with a terrible power of darkness. It seemed capable of piercing through everything. Even True Immortals would decay after being pricked by it. Immortality didn't exist before it. This bone sword represented death.

“Incredible, they went all out in grooming you, to actually give you this bone sword refined from the bone of their progenitor.” Li Qiye's eyes turned cold with a murderous glint.

# Chapter 1685: Protection Of The Nine Worlds

---

“Boom!” After her entire bloodline showed its real potential, the queen suppressed the firmaments instantly. She was surrounded with divine rings and an immortal temperament. Each divine ring carried a supreme power as she seemed to have turned into an Immortal Emperor.

“The power of a Rival. She has broken through the chains of the high heaven!” Even the matriarch was alarmed and murmured: “The ancestral blood of the Ancient Ming allowed her to break through her limits. This is indeed the blessing of the heaven, no wonder why people say that this race is the real favorite of the heaven.”

The queen was initially an Emperor Contender but after this process, she immediately reached the Rival level, truly grasping the power to fight against an emperor.

This was the terrible part about the Ancient Ming bloodline. In theories, a contender would never be able to break the chains of the heavens. There was an uncrossable bridge between a contender and a rival. Moreover, the high heaven wouldn't allow such a thing to happen. Otherwise, anyone could become an emperor. Alas, the ancestral blood allowed for her to do so.

“You deserve death!” The queen directly attacked Li Qiye with her bone sword. Even though she was radiating a sacred light, she also gave the feeling that she had turned evil.

“Destroy her!” In this split second, shadows rushed out of Soaring Immortal. Each had a frightening aura.

With a loud boom, they all unleashed an ultimate attack with an imperial weapon.

“Qi Shi, you still haven't given up? Fine, I'll play along!” The

queen shouted after seeing these ancestors making their way out.

“We shall cleanse the ranks for Soaring Immortal today!” The leading ancestors shouted. They burned their own longevity blood to unleash the strongest imperial attack.

They were from the other three branches of Soaring Immortal and had been placed under house arrest. This was their long-awaited opportunity, hoping to eliminate all traitors and they wouldn’t hesitate from killing the disciples that have been assimilated by the entry chant.

“Know your place.” The queen sneered and slashed downward with her bone sword.

A nefarious flame swept through the sky. One could hear the stars being affected by this flame and instantly became ashes, resulting in a horrifying scene.

“Clank!” The azure dragon came thrusting for the queen. It was teaming with the ancestors from Soaring Immortal in order to put her down.

“Bang!” The stars collapsed again under this exchange. After the boost in the queen’s power, the dragon was pushed back in just one move. The ancestors were blown away while vomiting blood. One ancestor screamed and became a mist of blood after the strike earlier.

She was simply too strong right now. These ancestors were mighty and even burned their longevity blood. Alas, they couldn’t withstand one move from the bone sword.

“Ah!” At the same time, the four siblings issued a horrific scream. Their vitality has been sucked dry by Li Qiye. The golden bolt was refining their inner physique with their own vitality but these inner physiques were being dragged out by Li Qiye.

“Die!” The queen was in no mood to fight. She crazily howled as her flame erupted. She swung her sword with a slaughtering



strike, one that could split the heaven and earth.

Under her crazed offense, all the ancestors attacking her were killed instantly. Even the dragon had cracks on its gigantic body.

“Rumble!” The dragon finally became crazy and lit up the world with a bloody red shade. It seemed to have turned into a Blood Dragon; the legion was ready to use their real killing move.

“Let her come, I want her to watch her children die and they to watch their mother die.” Li Qiye gave the order to the raging dragon.

The dragon glared at the queen before slowly retreating.

The queen stepped forward and annihilated the stars and myriad dao. She instantly got close to Li Qiye and raised her sword at him while declaring: “I will cut you to pieces!”

Even time and space were being corroded by the sword. Its evil property was too much for anything to handle.

This wasn't surprising at all since it was created from the rib bone of the Ancient Ming Progenitor. The queen's blood had awakened completely so this made her even more compatible with the sword and its flame.

She had changed her human bloodline into a very pure Ancient Ming bloodline. She was the only successful one in Soaring Immortal. She had indeed upgraded this particular blood and made it seem holy and exuberant, but this didn't change the darkness affinity of the race. Its corrosive power was still ever so present and destructive.

Li Qiye didn't bat an eye and slowly answered: “As I have said, anyone who conspires with the Ancient Ming shall pay a heavy price. No one will be surprised when I make you wail in anguish. It doesn't matter where the Ancient Ming is hiding, I'll let them watch their inevitable fate, the power of the nine worlds and my will to protect it!”

“Die!” Her face had become twisted, robbing her of her peerless beauty.

With another slash, the evil flame engulfed the area again. Space itself was turning black from this next slash. The celestials had their light taken away before turning into specks of dust.

Not to mention being struck by the sword, just being hit by the flame alone would instantly end an Emperor Assailant.

“Rumble!” The nine worlds all trembled at the same time without exception, from Mortal Emperor to Stone Medicine to Nether Sacred...

In a jiffy, imperial auras emerged in all locations, ranging from the ancestral grounds of imperial lineage to the birthplace of emperors, where they once learned the dao, and their previous abodes...

In short, the places where the emperors have left their footstep instantly lit up. Many majestic figures emerged and suppressed the entire area with their will to slay evil. All existences prostrated as the will of the emperors erupted in the worlds.

Immortal Emperor Min Ren, Immortal Emperor Ye Ti, Immortal Emperor Wu Gou, Immortal Emperor Bu Si, Immortal Emperor Chen Xue, Immortal Emperor Bai Lian, Immortal Emperor Bi Lian, Empress Hong Tian, Immortal Emperor Tun Ri, Immortal Emperor Fan Chen, Immortal Emperor Ba Mie, Immortal Emperor Dao Huai, Immortal Emperor Guan Feng...

The majority of emperors that have proven their dao after the Ancient Ming Era all emerged around the nine worlds.

“Your Majesty!” People were full of tears after seeing these figures. This was their first time seeing the supreme appearance of their ancestors so they became uncontrollably excited. In a short time, cultivators and even mortals dropped to their knees.

Every inch of land in the nine worlds lit up with a brilliant light,

from the earth veins to the vast seas of every sect.

Complex lines wove around the world. A supreme imperial aura came into being. It looked as if the emperors have blessed the land in full before.

“Ancestors!” The descendants offered their worship to the majestic figures.

From this point, imperial lineages, imperial descendants, cultivators who have trained in imperial laws, citizens protected by the emperors; they were full of an imperial power, evident by their bright aura. It looked as if their imperial ancestors were relying on their flesh to return to the world.

The complex lines activated an imperial protection in the form of these bright auras. The entire nine worlds were under their safeguard.

At this time, there was no distinction and discrimination between races. The emperors protected everyone as if all were the same, citizens of the nine worlds!

And their only enemy was the Ancient Ming.

“Your Majesty.” All sentient beings under this protection, regardless of their background, answered the call of the emperors. A will cropped up in their mind and became one with the battle intents from the emperor.

Their will was to protect the nine worlds and fight the Ancient Ming!

“Boom!” Streams of imperial battle intents and the will of all living beings fused together. The empowered will to fight was immensely impressive. Even existences in the burial grounds were very wary of this power.

At this time, the old ghost from Ancient Sky opened his eyes. His expression became serious after seeing the accumulation of wills all over the nine worlds.

Overlords hiding in the burial grounds were in awe as well. There was no way of resisting this new type of power, the result of all emperors after the Ancient Ming Era leaving behind their battle intents and will to protect the nine worlds.

No one was allowed to challenge this will or they shall be killed without mercy!

# Chapter 1686: Nine Worlds Evil Subduer

---

“Clank!” Sparks went flying. Even though all of this required considerable words to describe, it all happened within a split second.

The bony sword aiming for Li Qiye was stopped due to a spear appearing out of nowhere. Li Qiye wielded it with many grand dao accompanying it. Each grand dao represented an Immortal Emperor, mostly from the Emperors Era. Even Immortal Emperor Ta Kong was there!

This spear represented the emperors’ battle intent and the nine worlds’ inhabitants’ will. It was meant to create the nine worlds, residing in every inch of the land and everyone’s heart.

“Like I said, show no mercy to those who conspire with the Ancient Ming! Watch, no matter where you are hiding, open your dog eyes! The nine worlds are eternally protected, get the hell out!” His merciless voice filled the world with the stench of blood.

Anyone would shiver before his cold and bloodthirsty glare; even Immortal Emperors were no exception.

“Pluff!” He instantly threw the spear towards the imperial queen.

“Ah!” Her miserable scream should come as no surprise. She was instantly pinned to the ground despite having the power of an Emperor Rival. There was no resisting this weapon.

Her wails of torment echoed around the world. She struggled, aiming to pull the spear out of her body. However, it was useless. Universal laws were locking her body and slowly refining and separating her body. Her holy light dimmed down along with her sacred breath. The initially white-as-snow blood began to change to reveal its true darkness.

“The nine worlds aren’t meant for you, Ancient Ming!” Li Qiye glanced at the queen without any mercy.

Not to mention the queen, even a real emperor would be dead for sure. As long as the victim had the bloodline of an Ancient Ming, there was no escaping!

[Nine Worlds' Evil Subduer!](#) This was the name of this spear but it wasn't actually a weapon. It was a sure-kill move, created from an accumulation of wills and power from the earth.

Its existence was to protect the nine worlds from the Ancient Ming!

After the end of the Ancient Ming Era, this race wasn't completely wiped out because it had the Corporeal Zone. They still had extremely powerful overlords hiding within. Even Li Qiye himself was helpless against this artifact, truly headache inducing.

Moreover, he couldn't always stay in the nine worlds. Without sufficient preparation, the Ancient Ming could always come back to make the nine worlds its victim.

Thus, as the Dark Crow, Li Qiye had a grand plan. He signed a supreme agreement and Immortal Emperor Min Ren carried it out first.

After spending countless efforts of preparing the nine worlds, Li Qiye also had Immortal Emperor Min Ren and Empress Hong Tian start by refining and empowering the nets around the nine worlds. Later on, each successive generation of emperors would do the same to create this sure-kill move.

It was the ultimate method of dealing with the Ancient Ming in case they were to come back again. At the very least, the inhabitants of the nine worlds could use this to try and stop them.

It wasn't under Li Qiye's control but rather, everyone in the world could wield this "spear" as long as they had a will to fight against the Ancient Ming to the very last drop of blood!

"No!" The four siblings screamed after seeing their mother pinned to the ground and groaning. Alas, they couldn't do

anything either.

“Your turn!” Li Qiye shifted his gaze towards the four. The lightning bolts jumped frantically into their body and instantly removed all of their blood and cultivation. They used these essences to refine their four inner physiques.

“Ah!” The four princes howled and were instantly burnt to a crisp. Meanwhile, their inner physiques were refined into the best physique essences using the power of the heavenly tribulation.

“No!” The queen shrieked after being forced to watch her children turn into nothingness.

“Li, I will haunt you forever!” The queen screamed with a twisted expression and no longer had any semblance of her regal self.

Li Qiye said coldly: “Many Ancient Mings cursed me like that when I massacred them back then. Haunt me? So what, you will still be kneeling before me then!”

Having said that, he ignored the queen. With a popping sound, the essences of the four inner physiques instantly fused with his own.

“Whoosh!” In the blink of an eye, his four inner physiques became dazzling. They spewed out immortal light and Li Qiye suddenly became magnificent. The black light of Hell Suppression, the wondrous light of Soaring Immortal, the purity of Void Imperfection, and immense power of Sky Destroyer; all four annihilated the world. Nothing could restrain Li Qiye any longer.

At this moment, his four physiques have finally reached grand completion. When his eyes became bright, everything shivered in fear, even emperors if they were to see this sight!

“It’s finally done, four Immortal Physiques, one and only in history.” The matriarch was astonished to see this. In the past, the Black Dragon King was already unbeatable with just two but now, His Excellency had four. Immortal Emperors certainly weren’t his

match any longer!

Even Gu Zun gently sighed. He knew he had lost at this point. All of his remaining ace cards were useless.

“Saints, don’t forget your promise!” The queen shouted in despair at the horizon.

Li Qiye at this time posed coolly with both hands behind his back. His eyes resembled two divine lamps illuminating every single coordinate in the world!

However, regardless of her screaming, the sky was still the same as before. It was as if she was only talking to herself.

“What a shame, they still won’t take action. You’re only a pawn in their eyes.” Li Qiye coldly told the queen.

“No! I am the only one in the world who had a successful blood evolution, they can’t abandon me!” She was in complete disbelief.

“Even Immortal Emperor Ren Xian abandoned you, let alone them. The man who loves you the most didn’t care, do you think the Ancient Ming would care about a mere pawn? Tell me their location, I might spare your life!” He said coldly.

“No, no, Ren Xian would never abandon me!” The woman drowned in despair murmured to herself and didn’t hear Li Qiye at all.

He became disappointed. The queen simply didn’t know the location of the Corporeal Zone at all. The Ancient Ming was too careful. In their eyes, they only had one chance so they must be certain of success. Otherwise, all they have done would be gone with the wind, especially their last hope, the Corporeal Zone. If they were to lose this artifact, their entire race would be completely wiped out!

The sky remained quiet. There was no sign of any Ancient Ming, let alone the Corporeal Zone.



He gently sighed and knew that it wasn't happening. After millions of years, he couldn't wait till the last moment. Alas, he had no other choice because he no longer had eternal life and waited like before. He must keep on going in this generation instead of waiting for the Ancient Ming's retaliation.

Killing the queen's group was only an early end to his plan. This was the last sweep before he left the nine worlds. It also served as a threat to the remnant Ancient Ming so that they wouldn't dare to act recklessly.

As for the future, whether the nine worlds could oppose the Ancient Ming or not, that was up to them. He had done all he could. He would continue forward without caring or protecting the nine worlds.

With that, he shifted his gaze towards Gu Zun who was still standing calmly there. Li Qiye could see his own image on Gu Zun. The guy had indeed learned many things from him.

"It's unfortunate that the opportunity you were waiting for didn't come." Li Qiye shook his head.

Gu Zun knew that he had lost and said seriously: "I know. I also feel sorry for you, Your Excellency. The Ancient Ming still doesn't dare to take action, not biting down on such a tempting bait. Looks like they're giving up on their best pawn."

The full name is, Nine Worlds Inhabitants' Evil Subduing Spear. That's a mouthful so I shortened it

# Chapter 1687: Gu Zuns Choice

---

Gu Zun spoke with sincerity without the slightest intention of flattery. He didn't wish to run or beg for his life.

Gu Zun had been taught by Li Qiye in the past so he understood the guy well. No one could ever change Li Qiye's mind once it is made up. He knew that he couldn't escape forever. Thus, he could remain calm in face of death.

"You do know me well." Li Qiye said with a tinge of emotion: "It's fun talking to a smart person. It's a shame that you're not my disciple."

Gu Zun chuckled in response: "I would have ruined your reputation if I was your disciple, unable to learn even a tenth of your ability. Even if you don't think I'm an embarrassment, I wouldn't dare to accept the role."

He wasn't being humble with this response. All of Li Qiye's disciples were as strong as him. Immortal Emperor Min Ren and Empress Hong Tian were top emperors, capable of doing what they please in the world. Despite being one of the ten eonic geniuses with incredible innate talents and a strong mind for strategy, he wasn't Li Qiye's disciple.

"What a shame about your talents." Li Qiye said with regrets.

"The world doesn't always happen the way one wants it to, right?" Gu Zun smiled: "I don't regret my choice of opposing you. Even if I could redo everything again, I still stand strong by my penchant for treachery. If I had become your disciple, I would have become an emperor. How boring would that be? You have no lack of emperors under your banner and I wouldn't be as amazing as Empress Hongtian nor as immovable as Immortal Emperor Min Ren."

"Thus, opposing you is my joy in life. Without a challenge of your

level, how lonely would this path be? Of course, I am not a match for you, in your mind since if you wanted to kill me, you wouldn't have needed to wait until now. I'm only a child in comparison in terms of scheming." Gu Zun happily said what was on his mind.

Li Qiye slowly nodded: "That's true. But it is because you lack time. You have both talents and determination, your weakness comes from a lack of years to accumulate more knowledge."

Gu Zun cupped his fist and said: "Right, Your Excellency. I'm not the only one though. If you had several more generations, I'm sure you would be able to handle everything. Everything else would be insignificant and swept away by you!"

"No need to talk about things that have passed. How do you want to die? A swift or a little painful death?" Li Qiye asked.

At this time, the two didn't look like enemies at all. Unaware spectators would never expect that two smiling men were just trying to kill each other earlier.

Gu Zun calmly faced death. In his mind, he had lost completely the moment Li Qiye showed his four Immortal Physiques at grand completion. All of his other ace cards were useless, unable to reverse the tide.

Others might not know the significance of four physiques but he was as clear as day. His brother-in-law had two physiques and the world learned of his invincibility. Thus, Li Qiye's four physiques were unimaginable. Moreover, he had other ace cards.

For Gu Zun, even if Li Qiye and his brother-in-law didn't kill him, life has become meaningless anyway. His pursuit in life was to defeat or even kill the Dark Crow. Now, he knew that the gap was too large. Thus, why fear death?

"You have taught me before and I am ashamed of myself for haven't being able to repay you all this time." Gu Zun smiled.

"I'm not worthy of being your teacher. Li Qiye smiled and said:

“If you think I have taught you something, I have failed in not being able to pull you back on the right path during all this time.”

“It’s not your fault.” Gu Zun replied: “Even if you have tried your best, our antagonistic relationship was ultimately inevitable. It was a way to make the world less boring thus I would have decided to test myself against you eventually.”

“That’s fine. Everyone makes different choices in life. All right, three generations are still a long time. It is time to end this today.”

“Indeed.” Gu Zun gently nodded: “Even though you lured me with that empty treasury, I’m sure you do have some supreme artifacts in the Grand Sea. You surely came back for them this time around. I don’t have any other wishes, but if you can let me die a grand death, I’ll be satisfied.”

“Go on.” Li Qiye looked at him with an amusing grin.

Gu Zun went on: “Back then, you talked about the blood chain method. So if I have to die, send me on this path. If I can end in this manner, it will be my glory. It will be a merciful gift from you.”

“I shall entertain your wish then.” Li Qiye smiled and took out his Netherlord Hexagear Launcher. Of course, killing Gu Zun didn’t require such a weapon.

“The Machine World’s art, such a strange way of refinement. This is the highest technology of an epoch. The treasure from the matriarch’s clan must have come from the same art. In the contemporary, only you would be able to create such a magical artifact.” Gu Zun was in awe at the sight of this weapon. He was able to recognize and understand the origin of the item. In terms of knowledge, even if he wasn’t a match for Li Qiye, few in the world could be on his level.

“Yes.” Li Qiye nodded: “This is enough to turn everything into ashes, regardless of the enemy’s hiding and defensive capabilities.

It's only useless struggle.”

“I'm sure. Back during the Immortal Slaying War, you killed countless Ancient Ming and obtained their blood and corpses, even some from emperors and their Heaven's Will from the nine worlds. This combined with the best materials in the world would result in this supreme weapon. It must be the best one in terms of forbidden weapon, and the cruelest.” Gu Zun elaborated in a very pleasant manner: “You're granting me your grace by sending me off with this weapon. I am truly grateful.”

Gu Zun's attitude was indeed admirable. Even the matriarch was nodding approvingly. Gu Zun was a worthy eonic genius.

Li Qiye held the launcher and smiled: “Then let us end what we have started.”

Having said that, he had aimed his weapon to the target that only he knew about.

“Time to end this.” Gu Zun said. At this point, he couldn't help but stare towards Heaven Suppression in the distant. Regardless of his own characters and morality, the sect was still his family. Whether it gave him pain or warmth, he still sent his last thoughts towards this place.

He slowly closed his eyes and murmured: “Goodbye.”

The corners of his eyes became slightly wet. Fear of death was nowhere to be found, only some regrets.

“Pluff!” Before Li Qiye could fire, Gu Zun instantly turned himself into a mist of blood. One could hear clanking noises as the mist turned into chain-like laws. They acted like a lock and instantly fixated on a particular moving spatial sphere in the nine worlds!

“Boom!” At the same time, Li Qiye fired the first shot of the launcher. A terrible dark flame rushed out from the barrel.

The flame struck the coordinates fixated on by the chains made

out of Gu Zun's blood and turned into a strange, explosive serum.

“Boom” The entire nine worlds quaked. This serum pierced through space in an instant.

It didn't matter where this mystery realm was located or its defensive capabilities. With loud blasts, the serum continued to infiltrate this lair in an unknown location. It shattered through more than one thousand shiny defensive barriers and began to explode.

“Ah!” Screams echoed continuously. Dark flame engulfed the entire location. Shadows appeared and rushed to the sky, wanting to escape.

However, the serum drowned the entire lair instantly before exploding and destroying the place in its entirety. The Ancient Ming within had no opportunity to escape and their lair couldn't change its coordinates in time!

# Chapter 1688: Netherflame Serum

---

The Netherflame Serum was the first shot of the Netherlord Hexagear Launcher. It instantly crossed through many realms and worlds to destroy the lair of the Ancient Ming.

It didn't matter how many worlds were in between or its defensive capabilities, even by emperors, the unstoppable shot rendered everything to ashes.

The launcher had a total of six shots with an increasing level of power. The sixth shot had enough power to slay immortals! After all, it was crafted from the best materials and leftover corpses from the Immortal slaying War back then. He even added fierce beasts, battle intents, and murderous bloodthirst into the mix.

The most precious material was still the blood and flesh of Immortal Emperor Long Ming. The ultimate essence among this mix was the Heaven's Will that was refined in the process.

Thus, the power of this godly weapon was simply unfathomable.

It was a waste this time around, using the first shot to destroy the lair. Alas, he did it so that they would have no chance of escaping.

The blood chain was a method to seal a particular set of coordinates. After the end of the Ancient Ming Era, Li Qiye had used it in order to hunt more lairs.

After their destruction, the survivors became quite meticulous and would run at the sensation of the slightest breeze. Furthermore, these lairs were actually mobile. They could fly to any coordinate in space.

This was the reason why Li Qiye created this method. He directly refined their blood to seal space and destroy their lair. He had taught Gu Zun in the past so Gu Zun was also aware of this process.

During the beginning of the great battle, Gu Zun had always been keeping an eye out on any fluctuation in time and space above.

Soaring Immortal was only an experiment. The Ancient Ming was naturally keeping an eye out for the fight to the death between Li Qiye and the imperial queen.

This battle had a lot to do with their future. If the imperial queen were to win, this would usher in a new era for them. In case of the opposite, they would continue to hide in the darkness. Just the slightest rustling would bring about Li Qiye's attention and swift destruction!

Because of this, they were only spectating. Alas, it didn't matter how far they were and how well they did, there would definitely be some type of fluctuation in their location.

Of course, Gu Zun didn't intend on killing all the Ancient Ming in the beginning while trying to find them. He was only waiting to see if they would mobilize or not.

As an eonic genius, he had some supreme talents. Though the nine worlds were large, he quickly latched on to a particular coordinate and predicted that there was an Ancient Ming lair there.

But after the queen's defeat due to the Ancient Ming's inaction, he understood that it was over. There was no chance for him to reverse the tide.

The nature of this utter defeat left Gu Zun with peace. He had no attachments left so he decided to lend Li Qiye a hand before dying. He refined himself into blood in order to seal the location of the Ancient Ming, allowing Li Qiye to destroy the lair with one shot.

This was Gu Zun's one and only deed to repay the Dark Crow. They were enemies yet not, teacher-disciple but not quite so. This strange relationship had finally ended.

Everything had turned to ashes with the ultimate shot. A supreme genius of this era had fallen as well.

Li Qiye quietly sighed and lamented for Gu Zun's talents and firm



dao heart. Alas, the guy chose a different path. If he were to pick the orthodox dao path, he could have become an extremely brilliant emperor.

Alas, there was no chance to redo and no medicine for regrets. After starting on this path, Gu Zun's fate had been sealed and his death was only a matter of time.

Li Qiye put away the launcher before glancing at the sky where the Black Dragon King has been lurking. However, the king didn't ask him to stop this time around. This wasn't Gu Zun's first mistake so any effort of beseeching was useless. Li Qiye would never stop until Gu Zun's death.

Because of this, his death was an ideal ending for all parties involved. His existence itself made many people lost sleep in perpetual anxiety.

"Ah!" A miserable scream came from the queen pinned by the Evil Subduer Spear. Her holy self had revealed its true evil color with dark flames floating around. She looked like a devil from the darkness.

The spear intended on refining her into oblivion as well, removing all traces of her from this world. It was created for the sake of destroying the Ancient Ming. Thus, when it started its process, it would burn the bloodline completely so that none would spread to the rest of the world.

The queen was on fire due to the spear. Inch by inch, her flesh was burning. Any existence would be victim to this spear and be erased completely.

Li Qiye said flatly while watching the wailing queen: "You chose this path. Do not blame me for being cruel. I am a human, so when an Ancient Ming appears in front of me, I will muster all my might to destroy them, subjecting them to eternal damnation!"

The spectators, no matter how powerful they may be, were

speechless. The imperial queen used to be the topic of splendor and royalty, beloved by all, but this was her end today.

Of course, sympathy was nowhere to be found. A human choosing the path of the Ancient Ming, she couldn't blame anyone for her own choices and must pay the price.

“Poof!” The queen finally turned to ashes. The bright sky behind her disappeared as well. Strands of light returned to Soaring Immortal.

Many disciples and ancestors appeared once again. They cultivated the entry chant or had been tainted by the ancestral blood in the past so they ended up boosting the queen's bloodline.

After her death, they returned to their original location. However, there was an evil flame floating around their body. The power of darkness from this race had tainted their own bloodline.

“Buzz.” Some disciples began an evil transformation. Some even grew wings and became a half-man, half-monster.

“No!” Seeing this transformation left them pale in horror.

“Whoosh!” Evil Subduer soared into the sky. With a series of loud explosions, the spear split into many little ones. They instantly pinned all the transformed disciples from Soaring Immortal to the ground, causing them to scream.

Shimmering light flowed through the little spears. Each transformed disciple was engulfed in a fire. The spear would never allow this bloodline to exist in this world!

“Ah!” Soaring Immortal became a scene of hell. No one would link this place to a sect with five emperors, the sacred ground for cultivation in the eyes of many cultivators.

The lucky survivors were horrified; their knees grew weak and made them tremble. They would never forget today's scene.

The pure disciples were few in number. They were the ones that

have only joined the sect or haven't trained in the modified version. Of course, some mortals that never trained were spared as well.

Eventually, the screams subsided. All the tainted disciples were turned to ashes and blown away by a gentle breeze. There was nothing left of them in this world.

# Chapter 1689: Thunderblood Tree

---

Li Qiye glared at the survivors from Soaring Immortal and uttered coldly: “Run as far as you can. Soaring Immortal is no more.”

The survivors shuddered after regaining their wits. Li Qiye was supreme at this moment with his four grand completion Immortal Physiques. Each of his words carried an unquestionable authority. He wasn't an emperor yet he was above one. The world was in awe of him.

They didn't dare to mouth off at all and quickly fled out of Soaring Immortal, the place that used to be their home.

In their eyes, the weak had no voice. It was either to run and live or stay behind to be killed. Thus, they chose to run. There was no way for them to oppose Li Qiye since they were mere ants in comparison. Staying behind was a waste of time.

Li Qiye was too lazy to care for them and let them roam free. He had no interest in massacring them all.

No one had any comment during the aftermath. The peerless Soaring Immortal used to be able to give orders to the rest of the world. How many people would have dared to go against them?

Who would have thought that this sect would fall in just one night and its disciples ran like dogs?

Li Qiye shifted his cold gaze towards the sky. He peered through the world again. No coordinates and space could elude him in this second.

His four physiques amplified his presence. Each action was extremely threatening. One could even say that night was when he closed his eyes and day was when he wished it so. At this point, even Emperor Rivals were fearful of him.

No one wanted to oppose him at this second. They were afraid

that he would suddenly make a move against them. With his current power, it would be all too easy.

“Four grand completion Immortal Physiques, what an existence... The world should quiver before him. As long as he is around, Ancient Ming and even an Immortal Emperor, if one is around, could only tremble in fear!” Yu Zhengfeng who was always staying behind his wine shop’s counter actually came out to look at the sky and murmured in a daze.

Li Qiye took action after all the survivors from Soaring Immortal ran out.

“Boom!” Several forbidden grounds were penetrated by him. The defense from the emperors and wise sages were useless and couldn’t stop him.

“Rumble!” He dragged the treasures from within along with the divine trees and sacred springs.

The treasures were dazzling with immortal laws floating around them. Sacred water gushed from the springs while amazing light came out of the trees... People swallowed their saliva after seeing these treasures.

Even those who were used to treasures couldn’t help gulping either.

This was a sect with five emperors that had been established during the ancient Desolace Expansion Era. After eras of accumulation, it had countless treasures.

Li Qiye alone took them all today to the envy and greed of the crowd. Of course, no one would dare to do anything. Fiercest had already destroyed Soaring Immortal. There was nothing he couldn’t annihilate. It was simply suicidal to anger him.

After taking all the treasures like the wind, he stared at the land and declared: “This is a good location, leaving it like this is a waste, maybe I should leave something behind.”

Having said that, he took out a seed from a wooden box and released it. The seed instantly drilled into the ground afterward.

It was a supreme seed that had been refined multiples times by him. He had indeed spent a lot of effort on it.

This used to be the Evil Typha Tree's seed but it had lost this evil aura now. Moreover, it had fused with the Bloodsoul Worm to perfection.

More importantly, he had also refined them with the lightning from his pillar of light, giving it a unique characteristic.

“Rumble!” The entire sect quaked and a tree grew from the ground. It kept on increasing in size at an astounding pace. In a short time, this sapling turned into a tree that blotted out the sky yet it was still growing.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” The thick roots of the tree cracked the ground and entered. There were cracks everywhere in the sect. These roots infiltrated all the locations, creating thousands of holes around the sect.

Thunders and lightning bolts were striking down during this whole growing process. They looked like thunderous waterfalls that could shatter the world. Eventually, this tree has reached its limit in size. Its leaf was the size of peaks. Even the stars were surrounding it. Due to the loud thunders, it looked as if the tree itself was turning into a new world.

The scary part was that half of the tree had a divine, flashing aura. The other half had evil images and flames. One-half divine, one-half evil; they rotated around like the yin and yang as if wanting to become eternal as well.

Everyone was afraid of this sight. The tree looked as if it was containing a world of thunder, a godfiend would definitely be born from within.

“Will a godfiend come out?” A spectator murmured.

The crowd was amazed as well with their hair standing on ends after sensing the tree's world-destroying power.

"Let's call it the Thunderblood Tree then." Li Qiye gave it a name after the successful growth.

Despite knowing the name now, no one understood what was special about the tree.

Of course, they were aware of just how incredible it was. After all, it grew from the Soaring Immortal Sect and had taken all of the location's power.

Li Qiye nodded approvingly from seeing the fruit of his effort. He had thought about planting the seed ever since he destroyed the Ancestral Terra but he endured the temptation. The terra was indeed amazing but it couldn't give birth to a complete tree like this.

Only the ancestral ground of Soaring Immortal would be the right location. This tree was virtually perfect and would be very useful in the future.

"Rumble!" The gigantic tree absorbed everything in the sect. Rolling mountain ranges turned into wasteland while the rivers were sucked dry. The vast territory of the sect had become worthless.

"Boom!" With a final bang, all of Soaring Immortal collapsed into an expanse of dust. The specks fell down from the sky just like a sandstorm wishing to reach all the corners in the world.

# Chapter 1690: Turned To Ashes

---

Soaring Immortal had turned to ashes that fluttered away with the wind. There was no trace left of the great sect that had once ordered the world through many generations.

The behemoth had fallen. The name Soaring Immortal and its legends shall be no more in the nine worlds.

Imperial lineages and invincible characters were speechless and palpitated. It was definitely the strongest lineage around yet it still couldn't escape the fate of destruction.

The moniker, "Fiercest", was fear-instilling at this moment. The old geezers who knew his real identity were even more shaken. The eternal ruler, the dark hand behind the curtain, an existence that had groomed Immortal Emperors, someone that had killed emperors before... Who would dare to oppose this man?

"Buzz." Li Qiye opened his fate palaces. They flew outside and instantly engraved an indelible seal on the Thunderblood Tree. Once this was done, it would allow Li Qiye to always have control over it.

It wouldn't matter how much time has passed or how powerful the tree became, the mark would make sure that it would be under the laws of the palaces!

Li Qiye spread out his palm and the tree shrunk with extreme speed. It was originally big enough to devour the world but now, it was a tiny tree floating on his palm.

There were still lightning arcs flowing through it along with rumbling thunder. People still had the same sensation as before when it was bigger. They could still see celestials floating around it.

He looked up in the sky for another search but found nothing again. At this point, he lamented the fact that his opponents were



so cautious.

There was no way for him to find them if they chose to hide due to the Corporeal Zone.

The person in charge of the Corporeal Zone was too cautious. Even though the queen with her unique evolutionary bloodline was killed and their lair destroyed, they still chose to hide in the darkness, not making a single sound.

They were aware that once they did something, Li Qiye would use his full force to kill them. At that point, even the Corporeal Zone might fall in his hand.

For the remaining survivors of the Ancient Ming, losing the Corporeal Zone would be losing their last bastion and hope. It would signify the true end of their race.

In the end, Li Qiye could only sigh. This was all he could do for the nine worlds.

“Boom!” The legion in the form of the dragon returned to their original form. Countless lineages felt a cold chill because this legion was powerful enough to sweep through the nine worlds.

Just think about it, even the eight legions from Soaring Immortal couldn't resist at all. How could anyone else resist their murderous advance?

“Good job.” Li Qiye nodded after seeing the legion.

Worldkeeper and the soldiers bowed ceremoniously towards him and got down on one knee. For them, this might have been their last battle with Li Qiye. After he left the nine worlds, they would never be able to fight under his banner any longer on the battlefield!

“Rise, perpetual glory shall be yours.” Li Qiye told the men in the legion.

They straightened their backs and shouted after the true god:

“Men, withdraw!”

A large portal appeared and the legion instantly left. They once again removed their armors to return to their home.

After their departure, Li Qiye took one step and disappeared as well. In the sky, the first body of the Black Dragon King was still guarding there. He had been observing keenly, waiting for the Ancient Ming.

“It’s time for me to leave, maybe we will meet again in the future.” Li Qiye sighed and said.

The king’s forehead flashed brightly as if a rune was emerging. Li Qiye stretched out his palm and touched it.

Images immediately appeared in his mind. A grand battle was happening with Immortal Emperor Ta Kong, the Black Dragon King, the Immortal Demon Grotto, and the Ancient Ming...

These unbelievable scenes all showed up in his mind.

His eyes turned cold with flashing glint that could dissect the world. Each gaze could kill a godfiend and cause any existence to tremble.

After the images slowly dispersed, Li Qiye withdrew his hand and looked at the dragon: “I will personally take a trip to settle this!”

The dragon only issued out dragon hymns that seemingly crossed through time itself.

Li Qiye continued: “Your third body and soul are dead so it won’t be easy to redo your first and second generation either. You have a body right now but no complete soul. Turning a fragmented soul into a complete one is easier said than done. It will require many years.”

This current body of the king, powerful it might be, it lacked a complete soul. For a cultivator, this meant a lack of a true fate. They were only a walking corpse, in essence. There was no way for

them to become a real living entity.

This was the case for the Black Dragon King. It was also prohibitively difficult for this fragmented soul to become complete. It required a long period of gestation with unguaranteed success.

Li Qiye took out a bottle and handed it to the dragon: “Soul creation is the business of the heaven and earth, completely out of the boundary of living beings like us but we still need to give it a shot. I can’t stay in the nine worlds but this Pinnacle Lifewater can be of use. I hope that you will be able to create a new soul and cultivate a true fate again!”

This liquid was unbelievably precious. Even emperors yearned for it. Just one bottle alone could drive the entire world crazy.

Don’t underestimate this tiny bottle. It contained a large amount of this liquid since it was all he had. Nevertheless, he gave it all to the dragon in order to assist him with his goal!

After accepting the bottle, the dragon left out a lasting roar. It moved its tail back and forth and flew to the sky before jumping down into the Grand Sea for another recuperation period.

The dragon couldn’t come into being for too long or this could destroy its fragmented soul. Without this soul fragment, it would become a real corpse.

After the king left, Li Qiye gently sighed and returned to the Grand Sea.

This was the time for him to say goodbye and leave.

# Chapter 1691: Return

---

Li Qiye went to say goodbye to Matriarch Yu's group.

“Your Excellency.” The matriarch kowtowed. This might be her last opportunity to perform this grand ceremony towards him.

Li Qiye lifted her up and spoke softly: “No party lasts forever. You have followed me your whole life, it's time to bid farewell.” He was too used to such sentimental scenes but he still became slightly emotional.

“I wonder if I will be able to see you again.” The matriarch was emotional. People came and went through the years. Even His Excellency, the eternal, had to leave right now.

Li Qiye eventually said: “There are endless possibilities in the world, leave it to time.”

“May you come back triumphantly!” In the end, the matriarch gave him her blessing. There were too many words in her mind but this was all she could say.

“I also hope that you will be able to live for a long time to come.” Li Qiye said. He felt the same difficulty as her in expressing their goodbye.

After saying their goodbye, Li Qiye no longer hesitated and left.

The matriarch stood there and watched until his shadow disappeared into the horizon. Tears finally flowed from her eyes as she said: “Goodbye, Your Excellency. The nine worlds are less brilliant without your presence.”

His next destination was Heaven Suppression. However, he didn't interfere with its affair and only came to see Zi Cuining.

“Get ready, it is time to leave. I leave the arrangements of Heaven Suppression to you.” Li Qiye told Zi Cuining.

She gently nodded: “I understand, I will make good

preparations.”

Even though she couldn't bear to leave her home, she still chose to do so because a broader horizon was waiting for her.

“This is the right choice.” Li Qiye nodded: “Staying here would only waste your talents and the Immortal's Blood Spear. This is a weapon that had killed an emperor before. Don't let it rust here in Heaven Suppression. It should appear above the nine heavens to pierce the throats of gods again, are you confident in doing so?”

She took a deep breath and solemnly nodded: “I will not let down my dao. I shall use it to break down all obstacles!”

“Such determination is good. Go get ready then.” Li Qiye said before leaving.

The Peacock Monarch also visited to send him off. They didn't get far before Li Qiye stopped and told her: “Go back, Heaven Suppression is waiting to rise again. It needs new blood like you to shine again.”

The monarch smiled wryly and didn't become excited about having new authority in the sect. On the contrary, she felt an unprecedented pressure. After all, if they didn't work hard this time, they would be letting down their ancestors.

“Ancestor Shan and Ancestor Ye are still around to give orders. We juniors will do our best as well.” The monarch said.

Ancestor Ye was naturally Ye Jiuzhou. He survived the fight against Soaring Immortal.

“No, they're old now. Heaven Suppression needs the young generation. When they are capable, the sect will flourish. The old generation alone can't support a sect. It would be like the setting sun. A downfall is inevitable.” Li Qiye shook his head.

The monarch quietly nodded. She understood the logic but the burden was quite heavy, especially after Zi Cuining's departure.

"Ye Jiuzhou is a capable person." Li Qiye chuckled: "I don't care what he had done but remember, he will never betray Heaven Suppression. The sect will do fine with his support."

"But, Ancestor Ye is..." The monarch quietly said. After the end of the battle, Ye Jiuzhou turned himself in at Heaven Suppression. However, Zi Cuining pardoned him. Nevertheless, he had been down ever since Gu Zun's death. After all, he considered Gu Zun to be his father.

"He'll get over it, the guy had experienced enough troubles in his life. He will know what to do for Heaven Suppression and determine its future path." Li Qiye answered with a smile.

"I understand." The monarch gently nodded before bowing deeply towards him: "Even though our time together was short, your guidance has left me a lifetime of benefit, especially on my dao path. I will always remember your kindness."

Li Qiye nodded and accepted her gesture. He then crossed through space, all the way from the Grand Sea back to the Grand Middle Territory to return to the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.

Bu Lianxiang's group all came out to meet him. Li Shuangyan and Chen Baojiao ran ahead of the pack.

"Young Noble!" Chen Baojiao couldn't restraint herself and rushed forward to give her young noble a tight hug containing her love and how much she had missed him.

"Come, come, all give me a hug." He happily gave everyone a hug. The girls all smiled back at him.

Finally, he tightly embraced Bu Lianxiang. She spoke softly to him with love: "Welcome home."

Li Qiye smiled while looking at the girls. It didn't matter how far he had gone, he would return to this place because there were people who cared for him here and vice versa.

"First Brother is back!" The news of his return quickly spread

across the entire sect. The atmosphere became jubilant. All the disciples were excited, especially the ones that have recently joined. They wanted nothing more than to catch a glimpse of their First Brother's supreme style!

As the sect was celebrating, Li Qiye and Bu Lianxiang enjoyed a moment alone in their room. They gently embraced each other.

"What are you worrying about?" After a while, she looked at him with concern.

He chuckled and looked down at the beautiful woman before him: "It's nothing, no big deal. I do plan on visiting the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground though."

"You are... if it is for my sake, no need to do so." She was slightly surprised.

"Even if it wasn't for you, I still want to go." He gently sighed: "I still can't let go."

"Because of the Ancient Ming?" Bu Lianxiang understood.

"You know me." He didn't hide it at all: "Yes, I am still worried that the Ancient Ming would come back so I have made up my mind about going to the burial ground."

"Everything has a price." She said quietly. Having been buried in a dragon vein in there before, she had a certain understanding of the place.

"I name the price in this generation, no one will barter with me." He said leisurely: "No matter who they may be, they must follow the agreement decided by me. Otherwise, I won't mind flattening a few burial grounds. I must show them my determination in protecting the nine worlds!"

She embraced his neck and said: "The inhabitants of the nine worlds fear you and even curse you, but how many actually understand you and know of your deep love for the nine worlds? How many are aware that you have protected it for generations.

Even though you want to leave, you still can't abandon the nine worlds."

"I don't care what they think." He smiled and said slowly: "If you agree, I will go get you another generation at the burial ground?"

She pondered before speaking: "I know that you can't let go and I can't either. But there is a price to pay for exchanging an entire generation of longevity. I won't have freedom so if I have to pick, I rather leave in a more elegant fashion. Plus, we have lived long enough now, since the Ancient Ming Era to the present."

"Plus, I should stay and carry your lineage here in the nine worlds. You're worried about the Ancient Ming coming back, right? I can watch this world for you with what remains of my lifespan and create a lineage capable of stopping the Ancient Ming. Someone in the future will quietly guard over this world!" She held him tighter.

He embraced her back and said: "Why must life always be so difficult?"

"My love, you are an unyielding man, do not hesitate because of me." She smiled: "Don't make me suffer in order to live longer. This is my choice, let me leave in peace. Our time together is even more precious than an eternity!"

"I understand." He quietly replied.

Even though he could change all of this, he respected her choice. After all, time had no emotions. Living for longer wouldn't necessarily bring happiness. He had immortality once, he knew that facing the endless time was a type of torment!



# Chapter 1692: Another Meeting, Old Ghost

---

Li Qiye immediately headed for Ancient Sky City. It wasn't for himself but an agreement was necessary for the nine worlds.

It was a completely different mood and feeling on this second visit. Last time, he came together with Li Shuangyan's group. Now, he was all alone.

He gazed at the entire burial ground and wondered if its existence was good or bad for the nine worlds. However, the Ancient Ming remained the greatest threat.

He went to Old Ghost's shop right away. It was still the same as before as if it would never change through the river of time. Nothing could ever destroy this tiny shop.

Old Ghost was still hiding inside but he immediately opened his eyes once Li Qiye entered. His eyes with more white than black seemed to be revolving like the yin and yang, capable of refining the nine worlds.

He ignored the terrible gaze fixated on him. The truth was that after reaching grand completion with four physiques, he could sweep through all enemies without relying on schemes and methods!

He sat coolly in front of the old man and stared at him.

"I'm old and have forgotten about many things." The old man said feebly: "Including a particular legend, of course. However, this legend is sitting in front of me."

"I don't blame you for not remembering." Li Qiye chuckled: "You are only an avatar. Time will wash away your memories and will. But certain things can't be forgotten. They have been engraved into the depth of your soul!"

"Yes, forgetting is not necessarily a bad thing." The old man murmured. His eyes became dazed as if it was completely empty.

“I want to meet you.” After a long silence, Li Qiye requested.

“I’m right before you, I am me.” The old man spoke powerlessly.

“No, not you, not the one before me.” Li Qiye shook his head: “You are only an avatar to avoid the high heaven. I want to meet the you hiding in the burial ground, evading the tribulation from the villainous heaven, the you that can form a blood pact with me!”

The old man’s eyes lit up as if they were two suns. This scorching power could pierce through everything in the world.

Li Qiye was unmoved before this gaze and sat there calmly, waiting for a response.

Eventually, the gaze disappeared. His eyes became muddled like before and shook his head: “The grand dao is not easy but hiding away is even harder. There is too much chaos around, messing with the mundane world will invite the attention of the high heaven towards our burial ground. Otherwise, we wouldn’t be so reclusive. If you really want to meet, come with the nether boat and leave it up to fate.”

“This is not up to you, we must meet.” Li Qiye smiled and said: “I don’t care for your reasons and I don’t have time to board the boats. That’s why I need you to understand my intent. Whether you are willing or not, you must meet me!”

“Our burial ground isn’t the place for you to act imperiously. Outside of the high heaven, we’re not afraid of anything.” The old man answered slowly and solemnly. Each of his words was full of power.

“I’m aware.” Li Qiye replied: “Even though each epoch has a different comprehension of the nine grand scriptures, and the nine scriptures themselves have different meanings in each epoch having to do with their resonation with the origin of the grand dao, but go ahead, use the perspective of our era to take a look, see

how powerful my four grand completion physiques are, is it capable of tearing your Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground apart? You might not remember some of the legends since you are old and your memories rotten, but you should know that I possess other means with comparable power to the four physiques!”

He paused here and stared at the ghost: “Do you want me to kill my way in or get someone to invite me in? Your choice.” Having said that, he turned and left the shop.

The old man sat there for a long time in silence. It was as if time had stopped. Even millions of years later, he would still have the same posture.

After leaving the shop, Li Qiye entered the burial ground itself. It was still the same as before and engulfed in the same corpse energy. Earth corpses were everywhere.

He instantly unleashed his four physiques with their spewing immortal radiance. He suppressed the entire area with an unstoppable prestige while holding nothing back.

It was akin to an Immortal Emperor visiting. The ruler of the world has arrived. Gods, devils, and all fiends must retreat or prostrate.

All the earth corpses instantly kneeled on the ground, not daring to lift their head. The four physiques have completely suppressed them!

“Fiercest!” The cultivators here were stunned to see Li Qiye. Ancestors and kings were obediently dropping to the ground. This power made all resistance futile.

After exuding his power, he quickened his pace to the horror of the spectators. They thought that he was about to declare war against the burial ground.

“Fiercest wants to challenge and capture the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground before becoming an emperor? It would really be an

unprecedented achievement." An ancestor murmured.

Not too many people would dare to fight against a burial ground. Only emperors after obtaining the Heaven's Will were qualified to do so. Otherwise, it didn't matter how brilliant they were before the ascension, they wouldn't dare to attempt this reckless task.

Li Qiye crossed through the dragon veins and locations with sleeping Earth Immortals. The ones sleeping here were all amazing talents such as the Martial God and Lion Monarch.

When Li Qiye forced his way in, both Treasure Lords and Earth Immortals were quiet. They didn't dare to act out despite being woken up.

Though they were exceedingly powerful when they were alive, they felt that they would be crushed instantly by this intruder.

He stopped at the Heaven Reaching Peak and glanced at the coffin hanging on the steep wall. The coffin opened and a middle-aged man sat up.

The man had an armor that was penetrated completely through his chest. Even though so much time had passed, this wound still couldn't close. He was a tall and handsome man with sharp eyebrows. One could tell that he was a dashing charmer during his youth.

This was the person who helped Li Qiye's group back then when the Lion Monarch and the Martial God chased after them.

After seeing him, Li Qiye took one step to reach the area and sat down next to him, revealing a faint smile.

"The lords and Earth Immortals always talk about the legends of His Excellency, the Dark Crow. Who would have thought that you would personally come into being in this generation." The middle-aged man said with a tinge of emotion.

"The world is always unpredictable like that." Li Qiye chuckled: "Since I'm here, I shall make this generation special."

The middle-aged man carefully thought about his next question: "What is the purpose of your visit, Your Excellency? Is it to meet the lord of this place?"

"Yes." Li Qiye nodded: "I need to talk to the burial ground."

The middle-aged man believed that only Li Qiye could negotiate on even grounds with this burial ground. Not to mention his past identity, just his four physiques alone now were enough to shake the entire place.

He simply sighed, not wishing to state what was on his mind.

Li Qiye noticed and said: "I know you want to live again for a generation. Alas, it is too late. If I were to wish it so, I could discuss this with the burial ground. But as you are now, you are not worth my effort."

# Chapter 1693: The Past

---

"I know that I have lost my chance since I refused your tutelage back then, letting down your good intention." The middle-aged man smiled and said.

"No, that's not the case." Li Qiye shook his head: "I wanted to make you my disciple but this wasn't out of anything personal. I was hoping that someone could shoulder the heavy responsibility of fighting against the Ancient Ming in the nine worlds, a sky-piercing genius from the human race that could defeat the young Tian Tu and take the Heaven's Will to stop that race's monopoly. It wasn't about me training an emperor; the nine worlds needed one, the human race needed one."

Having said that, he stared at the man and said: "But you! you refused. You believed that you could oppose Tian Tu alone based on your talents, to go against the Ancient Ming and win, no need to rely on me, an outsider to become your dao protector! But you lost against Tian Tu and the nine worlds lost against the Ancient Ming! If my recruitment was due to personal reasons, I wouldn't have pushed back the Ancient Ming with the arrow for you back in the bamboo forest. I wouldn't have led my army to protect your rear at the Towering Heaven either so that you could fight against Tian Tu! I wanted the nine worlds to have a spark capable of stopping the Ancient Ming. Alas, your pride and arrogance were the reasons for your continuous failures!"

He became cold here and said flatly: "An eonic genius is indeed amazing and precious. However, how many of them have actually become Immortal Emperor?! What was the reason behind the high failure rate? It was out of sheer arrogance and blind confidence in their talents. They believed that they were untouchable, no need to learn from anyone!"

"If it wasn't to stop the Ancient Ming, do you think I would have saved you so many times? One needs to seize the moment instead

of just relying on sheer talents and fortunes. Otherwise, everything will be wasted."

"I did let you down and you are right about my lackings." The middle-aged man smiled: "I don't have many regrets about the past, only that I had never been able to defeat Tian Tu even once while he made me suffer for generations."

"The grand dao is endless, talents alone won't do. One needs vision and a strong dao heart." Li Qiye said.

The man laughed: "I'm sure you're not here to make fun of me, Your Excellency. You're not one to hold a grudge."

"If I was that type of person, I would have destroyed you or let you die long ago, not just come here to mock you. I'm here to tell you something, your enemy is still alive. He will take action sooner or later, can you come out again?" Li Qiye replied.

The man shuddered. He calmed his emotions but his trembling hands betrayed him.

"Even if you could come into being for the second time, you will only be slaughtered." Li Qiye shook his head: "Even if your wound were to heal, allowing you to return to your peak, you're still no match for him just like before! I once had great hopes for you but now, I see that you are not capable of shouldering the heavy responsibility!" Li Qiye was very disappointed and sighed after seeing the man's current state.

The man took a deep breath. After a brief lull, he smiled wryly and said: "You are right. Even if I come out again, defeat is imminent. Certain things can't be reversed. It is impossible."

Li Qiye didn't want to say anything else. He could tell that even if the man were to come out, he wouldn't be of much use.

"Are you here this time because of the Ancient Ming?" The man asked with a solemn expression.

Li Qiye didn't hide it and nodded: "That's right, the Ancient Ming

still has remnants left in the nine worlds and will come back when the time is right! They will not accept peace for they covet the fat land that is the nine worlds. Darkness will return, thus, the nine worlds need protectors. I want some to be around after I leave."

The man bitterly smiled: "It's so embarrassing. Your Excellency, you have always cared for and protected the nine worlds for many generations. But I only think about my personal feud, unable to quell my desires and stubbornness instead of worrying about the nine worlds and its inhabitants. Back then, I have always wanted to settle the score with Tian Tu. I wanted revenge for my sect, that was the only thing on my mind. But I never thought about their enslavement of the myriad races and the terrorizing darkness. I deserve all of this right now." He gently sighed.

"Wait and keep at it, perhaps something will change for the better." Li Qiye said slowly: "it is up to your own effort whether you are worthy of taking up the mantle as a protector of the nine worlds. I can't force you to do anything, you will have to make up your own mind and walk on your own path. Will you keep on burying yourself here or go all out when the darkness returns and offer your strength? It is up to a single intent from you."

The man became quiet after hearing this. Li Qiye no longer wished to continue the conversation and left the peak.

After a long period of contemplation, the man gently sighed and gazed towards the horizon in a daze.

What was left in this world? Anything that he was still attached to? The people of the past were gone; his sect had turned into ashes; the ones he loved and those who loved him have returned to the soil.

The only thing that he couldn't let go, the driving force behind his will to survive was his one desire!

The coffin closed again with a loud bang and his disappointment.



Li Qiye marched onward, deeper into the burial ground. However, a series of orderly noises exploded before he made it to the deepest area.

A coffin appeared before him, carried by a group of ants. The speed was unbelievably fast. How could these ants have such power and speed?

Li Qiye smiled and murmured: "This is it, riding it this generation. Not a bad start."

"Boom!" Some ants opened the lid, revealing the empty content.

Li Qiye couldn't help but smile and thought about an old phrase - the appearance of the Underworld signals the rise of rebirth; the path to heaven debuts the way to the divine stone. Enter the heavenly coffin to obtain eternity; awaken the corpse earth to achieve the everlasting blessing of the heavens!

"This is all I can do for the nine worlds. Its fate is in its hands." Li Qiye gently sighed and stepped inside without any hesitation. He laid down like a corpse.

"Boom!" The ants closed the lid instantly. With a series of rumble, they carried the coffin towards the deeper region of the burial ground.

It was completely quiet inside the coffin. Li Qiye couldn't hear anything or even feel the movement of the coffin. It was especially comfortable inside, like lying on one's own bed and quickly met with a sweet dream.

He wasn't afraid or anxious while inside and didn't care where it was taking him. If the place came to greet him like this, it didn't have any malicious intent.

The concept of time didn't exist here. Who knows how long he had been inside before reaching the destination?

The ants were no longer there when the lid came off once more. A gloomy palace stood before him, one that had been split into two

halves.

Many things here were broken beyond description. However, a large chair remained perfect. The aura of this chair made people wonder whether a lord used to sit there and gave orders to the rest of the world.

The separation gap was a bottomless abyss. There was no light below, no sound either. Any creature falling into this abyss would be swallowed instantly.

The mood here and the fact that this was the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground would scare even the most courageous.

# Chapter 1694: The Old Ghost In The Abyss

---

After getting out of the coffin, Li Qiye climbed up and sat on the throne.

It seemed that this particular throne was created by a supreme existence. Unfortunately, things have changed and stars have moved. Even this imperial chair was wasting away in this place.

He looked down at the abyss next to him with a flashing glint that could see through all illusions and time itself. Nothing in this world could elude his eyes.

In this split second, it illuminated the bottom of the abyss. He could see everything clearly!

A scowl came from below. This scowl alone could shatter the galaxy and annihilate true gods. It was enough to make the nine worlds tremble. It contained a peerless and unquestionable divinity. No one could challenge its power.

Li Qiye ignored the scowl and simply smirked.

"I heard you wanted to see me." A voice finally came from the abyss. It was feeble and upon a careful listening, one would find that it was completely identical to that of the old ghost. They would think that the old ghost was hiding below.

"Yes." Li Qiye smiled and looked around the place. He leisurely commented: "The abode of the Heavenly Corpse Lord. I have always wanted to come here but have been unsuccessful due to the obstacles."

"The Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground is not inside the nine worlds or any world for that matter. Plus, we do not welcome outsiders." The old ghost responded.

"I know, only the remnant of an epoch." Li Qiye replied: "All of you buried yourselves in the best location of your epoch for generations to avoid the punishment of the villainous heaven,

evading the ultimate judgment. But this only turned all of you into moving corpses."

"Allowing you here shows our respect and good-will. I expect the same in return." The old ghost replied.

"I'm not unhappy or anything." Li Qiye smiled: "This is indeed a very prestigious entrance, being carried by the ants here. Only you enjoy this treatment in the entire burial ground."

The old ghost became silent before speaking: "Since you are here, you must have a transaction for me. I'm listening."

"It's nothing, I only want to have someone watch the nine worlds for me." Li Qiye smiled and said: "The Ancient Ming doesn't only have some defeated soldiers, their lords are still around. Some Immortal Emperors are still hiding in the nine worlds! Thus, I hope someone can take charge after I leave and win a decisive battle!"

"That's impossible. You have been the ruler of the nine worlds during your Dark Crow's days. You should be aware that I haven't left this burial ground for who knows how many years? I don't even remember." The old ghost said.

Li Qiye nodded: "I know. You must pay a great price to forcefully leave this place."

"That's why my hands are tied. You will need to ask someone else." The old ghost replied: "Of course, if you really need something, my avatar can do it for you. It does owe you a favor."

"No." Li Qiye shook his head: "I won't deny the immense power of your avatar, it can fight against an emperor but I need one decisive battle to annihilate the Ancient Ming! They have the Corporeal Zone, your avatar isn't enough even if it goes all out. Plus, it is not stable at all due to the withering of time! There are too many restrictions."

"Then I can't help you. The price of leaving this place for me is

beyond your imagination." The old ghost concluded.

"That's your business and I won't be inquiring further." Li Qiye chuckled: "I want to let you know that I'm not here to negotiate. You must do it regardless of your intent!"

"You are threatening me?!" A chilling aura erupted from the depth that could instantly kill a true god and freeze three thousand worlds over!

Li Qiye was unperturbed on the throne and calmly answered: "Correct, I am threatening you."

"You are indeed powerful, not one yet but even mightier than an emperor. But don't forget, this is the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground, not your nine worlds. You're not allowed to leave in such a haughty manner under my domain!" The old ghost said coldly.

Li Qiye smiled back: "I know, no one is allowed to be impudent here, even an emperor does not think they can leave this place unscathed or some would have taken it down already. However, let me ask you, you think you can kill me if you go all out? How many moves?"

The old man didn't reply.

"I'm not afraid of death or anyone who wants to kill me. I don't think anyone can do so either, outside of the Villainous Heaven." Li Qiye spoke in a matter-of-fact manner.

"There are things much worse than death." The old ghost stated.

"I have experienced too many of them. Plus, what is more frightening than coming back alive from the end of the world? I'm no stranger to suffering and torments."

"Hmph." The old ghost scowled, showing his discontent towards Li Qiye.

Li Qiye leisurely continued: "Do you know the consequence of not being able to kill me? It's very simple, I will rise again. Don't

forget, the Ancient Ming is a big threat to the nine worlds but your burial ground is a looming danger as well! It's just not as clear as the Ancient Ming."

His eyes turned cold at this point: "What do you think I will choose to do when the nine worlds are facing two separate threats? Let me tell you, everything will change when it comes to that point, I will flip open your heavenly coffins and refine all of your corpses into an ultimate weapon, one capable of destroying the Ancient Ming! This is called using the enemies against them!"

"You!" The old ghost was furious after hearing this and continued to assault the myriad realms with his torrential aura.

Of course, this had no effect on Li Qiye. He took his time responding: "You understand the mysterious phrase about this place more than I do - enter the heavenly coffin to obtain eternity; awaken the corpse earth to achieve the everlasting blessing of the heavens! Because of this, what choice do you think I should make?!"

The old ghost in the abyss endured. After all, Li Qiye being here showed that he wasn't afraid of them. Moreover, like he had said, in order to kill a being with four grand completion physiques, they would have to pay a monstrous price if it was even possible. Their burial ground would become a battlefield!

The old man calmed down and said: "Aren't you overly confident with your claims? No one is capable of this since the start of time!"

"But I, Li Qiye, am capable." Li Qiye said leisurely: "I just need to drop my pride. Among the nine heavens and ten earths, I can still rally some helpers and as long as I am willing to pay the price, I can take down your burial ground and unearth your coffins! I will even suppress the Heaven's Will and go all out for two generations. At that point, am I capable yet to refine your corpses into an ultimate Ancient Ming slaying weapon?"

At their particular level, words weren't sufficient as threats any

longer. Li Qiye wasn't just blustering or talking crazy. If he was willing, he could indeed do so by ignoring all scruples.

“That's how it is with the world, one must pay a heavy price for anything good.” Li Qiye said: “Work with me and destroy the Ancient Ming or watch on the sideline then I'll pick to destroy you first. It is no longer the same as before. Even though your group isn't as threatening as the Ancient Ming right now, it is still a looming seed of danger.”

“That is why I am here to express my attitude towards the current situation. Are you a threat or a friend to the nine worlds? It is up to a single decision from you.” Li Qiye solemnly added.

The old ghost took his time thinking in silence. A character of his stature didn't like being threatened by others. But indeed, the burial ground's fate was up to a single thought from him at this moment.

“You are right, heavy prices must be paid. There are no free lunches in the world. Then what are you paying for this transaction?” The old ghost finally asked.

# Chapter 1695: Protection

---

Li Qiye smiled and responded to the old man's question: "Yes, nothing is free in this world. I can give you the things that you absolutely crave. Ready? Wait until I come back triumphantly from the final battle, I shall pardon all of you and remove your punishments, allowing you to see the light again to stay in the nine worlds with the myriad races!"

The old ghost's breath paused for a moment after hearing this.

There was no doubt that this comment was truly tempting to the burial ground. This was their desire and longing.

However, his blood didn't boil just yet with excitement. He calmly mused it through before speaking: "What if you fail?"

"You can only pray for my success then. If I were to fail, then all of you will stay in this dark river of time for virtually an eternity of bleak loneliness."

"You're only describing an illusionary oasis in the desert, not anything tangible." The old man said coldly.

"I won't deny that." Li Qiye shrugged: "Nevertheless, who else but I can even offer this so-called illusionary oasis?! No one else is even qualified to do so! At the very least, my condition gives you a sliver of hope for the future. Otherwise, you all will continue to suffer in a pit of despair, even hope would be an unreachable luxury!"

The old man had no response. Li Qiye's words have struck his weak spot.

"What are you looking forward to? As long as the villainous heaven is around, you all will continue to be moving corpses, buried and rotting away in this place. No one remembers you anymore as time passed. As you can see, not even a strand of hope can be found in this place. That's why, I bring hope, such a



precious emotion, priceless, even. My strand of hope can illuminate your dejected burial ground and your lightless heart.”

The old ghost continued to be quiet.

“Thus, you can pick my side and I shall pardon your burial ground if I were to be successful in the future.” Li Qiye said solemnly: “Otherwise, you all can keep on this hopeless path. In case of my victory in the future, all of you will continue to be trapped in despair, never seeing the sunlight again!”

The old ghost finally responded in an unruffled manner: “Even if I were to agree to take action for the nine worlds, there is only one opportunity for me to go outside. I won’t be able to handle coming out several times.”

“That’s why you need to wait for the right moment and seize it all while delivering the fatal blow towards the Ancient Ming.” Li Qiye elaborated: “If they come out, there will be legions sweeping through the weaklings. However, if their overlords climb out too, I’m sure your avatar can handle them! Keep doing that and force the Ancient Ming to go all out. When their old geezers arrive, the Corporeal Zone will come too. That’s when you attack!”

The old man contemplated before finally answering: “Very well, I accept. I shall appear at the perfect moment to settle it all!”

The old ghost chose to work together with Li Qiye since he had no other choice. Joining Li Qiye gave their burial ground a sliver of hope.

Li Qiye was right. Hope was all too precious and hard-to-come-by for their burial ground.

“One battle to settle it all. Perhaps your burial ground can even obtain the Corporeal Zone afterward. That would be incredible.” Li Qiye smiled and told the old ghost.

There was no response because the old man didn’t care about this. If he were to fight, he must pay a monstrous price since he

couldn't leave the burial ground. The worst case scenario would be his death in the battle.

But ultimately, the sliver of hope trumped all of the sacrifices. They could only pray for Li Qiye to win at the final battle so they could see the sun again.

After finishing the arrangements, Li Qiye didn't wish to linger around. He said with a smile: "I enjoyed our conversation today."

The old ghost had no response. It wasn't enjoyable at all. This was a one-sided threat from Li Qiye. However, he was willing to accept the deal instead of worrying about trivial details.

Li Qiye took two steps before turning back and said: "Oh right, that brat on the cliff is not bad. Perhaps you should let him exchange for an entire generation."

"An exchange is necessary, there is no exception. I can't break the rule either." The old ghost said.

"I understand." Li Qiye shrugged: "You just need to give him an opportunity. As for the particular price, that's up to him and his effort."

"He can wait for the underworld boat." The old ghost didn't make an exception because of Li Qiye.

"That's fine, I have created a red string for him with this. What happens next doesn't matter. How should I put this, even though eonic geniuses are a bit questionable, if you could have a capable one, he will be very useful in the future war against the Ancient Ming. This is beneficial for your burial ground." Li Qiye smiled and said.

The old man didn't agree or refuse him. The abyss was silent.

Li Qiye was too lazy to dwell on this matter. He turned and left coolly. In his eyes, he had done all he could. The world and its bullshits no longer had anything to do with him.

\*\*\*

During his trip, the grand dao strands flowing down from the sky were gathering. In the last several days, they were quite conspicuous in the night sky. However, after their awakening, this magnificent scene disappeared.

“Buzz!” All of the world portals lit up after being abandoned for several tens of thousand years!

The Black Dragon King had torn the Heaven’s Will apart after his fight with Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. This started the Difficult Dao Era and the isolation of the nine worlds.

Everyone in the nine worlds was excited to see the bright portals again. This meant that the nine worlds were about to be reconnected and they were able to see a brilliant age again.

Though this didn’t mean that everyone was capable of interworld traveling, this gave all cultivators hope. As long as they worked hard and gathered enough refined jades, they could go on an adventure in a different world.

Godkings would no longer need to risk their lives by forcefully attacking the world walls. It was simply too risky.

“Yes! Stone Medicine World, brace yourself, I am coming to see whether your alchemists are better or me!” An alchemist from Mortal Emperor laughed cheerfully. His eyes lit up thinking about an opportunity to compete against those from Stone Medicine.

“It is time for us Charming Spirits to show that myriad races that we are the favorite children of the heaven.” A spirit from Heaven Spirit was eager to try while staring at the nearly-opened gates.

“It is time to see the grand world.” A genius from the ghost race felt his ambition burning in Sacred Nether.

Of course, not everyone was optimistic. One from the last generation became worried: “The nine worlds are connected again. This might bring out an age of plundering. The experts and

imperial lineages will take all the resources, the smaller sects have no chance at all.”

This particular sentiment was reasonable. For the smaller sects, they might not be able to gather enough refined jade for traveling, let alone thinking about plundering for resources in a different world.

Only experts were able to travel as they please. As that point, imperial lineages would seize everything while the fire of war would spread to the smaller sects.

Nevertheless, the young generation was excited and eager to try because it wasn't only about the world portals. The Heaven's Will was about to take form as well!

# Chapter 1696: The Nine Worlds Future Threat

---

Li Qiye's destination after visiting the burial ground was not Cleansing Incense but Heavenguard. He was about to leave the nine worlds so he needed to prepare everything perfectly, especially towards the legion that he had such high hopes for.

He didn't wish for the legion to fight again but time had changed, leaving him no choice.

Worldkeeper personally went to greet him. The old man bowed and said: "Greetings, Your Excellency."

Li Qiye immediately helped him up and said: "Worldkeeper, you have followed me till old age, no need for such formality."

After helping his master towards his seat, Worldkeeper said: "You must be here to say goodbye, Your Excellency." His expression turned gloomy after understanding that this might be Li Qiye's last visit to Heavenguard.

Li Qiye nodded in response: "It's time for me to leave so I'm here to say goodbye. Plus, I need to hand you a few things."

Having said that, he took out an ocean of items for Worldkeeper: "This is a few resources I've gathered. The legion can make use of them, treat it as your military funding."

This amount of treasures was astounding since it came from the Ancestral Terra and Soaring Immortal. No other lineage could produce this shocking amount.

Worldkeeper hurriedly responded: "I can't. You're about to leave and will have to face the emperors and gods above. This resource is needed for the incoming war. Our legion still has many treasuries, enough to last for one to two generations even for wide-scale expeditions."

“No, I still have some reserves.” Li Qiye shook his head: “Plus, this treasury might not be useful above. And then, no one knows how long the war will last. Plan for the worst, at the very least, I don’t want your legion to be worrying about resources during times of war.”

“I thank you on our brothers’ behalf.” Worldkeeper wasn’t a long-winded person so he solemnly accepted the gift. He understood Li Qiye’s personality too well.

Li Qiye then took out some powerful weapons. His mood was very serious this time so he even used the pentagate to seal the area. In the end, even the lamp with the black flame was taken out.

“Save these items for a rainy day.” Li Qiye gave these supreme artifacts to the true god.

The true god was startled since he was knowledgeable and recognized them: “Your Excellency, other treasures might have limitation up there but this lamp... it could sweep through any place and era, an item above Immortal Emperor True Treasures. Even the people up there might not be able to create a more powerful item.”

“I know of its power.” Li Qiye nodded: “But I’m still leaving it here.”

Having said that, he gently sighed and even took out the Nether Emperor Hexagear Launcher to hand it to Worldkeeper: “Take good care in keeping this item.”

“Your Excellency!” Worldkeeper was astonished this time. He accepted the item with both hands and still felt hesitation: “You created this weapon to kill the emperor and gods and you need a deterring threat up there. I can’t accept this, it’s better if you keep it.”

“I want to as well, but someone with a great burden like you also knows that you might not only be facing the Ancient Ming later.

But just them alone is enough for me to worry.”

He paused for a moment before continuing: “They still have Immortal Emperors hiding, this is the thing that worries me the most. When the war starts, the Ancient Ming will have no other choice but to go all out. That will bring an unimaginable disaster to the nine worlds.”

“The Ancient Ming is indeed heaven-defying. Their emperors are still able to stay in the nine worlds even after shouldering the Heaven’s Will.” The true god said with exasperation.

“What can we do about it? Who can we blame for the fact that they have the Corporeal Zone?” Li Qiye smiled wryly: “Luckily, because of the Heaven’s Will, despite hiding right now, they will have to avoid the villainous heaven the moment they come out. That’s why they don’t show themselves too easily due to the inevitable price. They’re biding their time before going all out. Thus, they also need one decisive battle to settle it all.”

“If these hiding emperors won’t take risk, what is considered a ripe moment for them?” The true god asked for clarification. He needed to understand many things since the responsibility to protect the nine worlds was his in the future.

“If these emperors want to hide from the villainous heaven completely, they have to be able to master the Corporeal Zone. This is easier said than done. The minimum requirement is twelve emperors. Of course, it would be best if they all have grand completion Immortal Physique as well. Otherwise, they can try reducing it.” Li Qiye said slowly.

“Twelve emperors!” True god’s expression darkened. He naturally understood the significance behind this! Twelve emperors existing at the same time would be extremely horrifying, even without the Corporeal Zone! No one could stop twelve emperors at the same time in the nine worlds. Plus, no two emperors have been together, at least not in the nine worlds. Just

imagine twelve...

“I wonder how many emperors are still hiding then?” Worldkeeper became worried.

Li Qiye pondered for a bit before answering: “Ancient Ming emperors also go up after receiving the Heaven’s Will. However, they were hunted instantly, this is something the people up there are one-hundred-percent adamant about!”

“I have been up there several times and carefully analyzed it. There are still nine emperors that haven’t appeared from that race. Either they hid really well after coming up or they have been hiding in the nine worlds. Regardless of the real situation, you need to prepare for the worst.”

“Nine emperors! They are actually hiding nine!” Worldkeeper took a deep breath and murmured.

Worldkeeper knew full well just how terrible the race was from being their lifelong foe. However, he was still astounded by this revelation. Nine emperors were no joke. This was an earth-shattering news.

“That’s the Corporeal Zone for you.” Li Qiye gently sighed: “I’ve always wanted this item but never had the chance.”

“Nevertheless, if the Ancient Ming wants to rise again, they have to go back in full force. Otherwise, even if they were to reign again, they would still be hunted up above. In the past, they ran for their lives and only managed to run down here due to the Corporeal Zone. Otherwise, they would have been annihilated completely. They do not accept this. In their eyes, the nine worlds are only their garden for them to recuperate. After sufficient preparation, they would suck everything from the nine worlds, all resources!” He sighed and said.

“So the Ancient Ming still want to go up there.” Worldkeeper murmured.



Li Qiye nodded: “Yes, they have two choices right now. One, to keep staying in the nine worlds so they need more time to obtain twelve emperors. Or, they will utilize this chance to rush up to the nine worlds during my ascension as well. Up there, they could gather twelve emperors in just one generation. If it reaches that level, they could indeed rise again!”

“Twelve emperors and the Corporeal Zone. That’s also an unstoppable force up there.” Worldkeeper said.

“Yes, once they have true control over the Corporeal Zone, it will indeed be very frightening. Even if the people up there work together, they would find it hard to suppress the Ancient Ming. This race might even have the chance to fight the ultimate battle too.” Li Qiye commented.

The true god was quiet and thought that the world didn’t know just how terrible the Ancient Ming was. Nevertheless, he happily said: “It’s fortunate that they have to avoid the heaven or the nine worlds would really suffer.”

“Not necessarily, even without needing to hide from the high heaven, the Ancient Ming wouldn’t be able to do much either. Our nine worlds have produced so many emperors so if all of them show up, they could gang up on the Ancient Ming and make their teeth fall all over the ground. It was precisely the fact that they chose to hide that they were able to survive. Otherwise, they wouldn’t have been able to survive up there even with the Corporeal Zone in the beginning, let alone making it down to the nine worlds.”

# Chapter 1697: Relating To The Ancient Ming

---

The true god smiled wryly after hearing this: “I really don’t know whether the will of the high heaven is good or bad. Perhaps the powerful existences all curse this while regular beings treat it as their guardian and hope.”

“The high heaven will not show empathy even if the regular beings reach that step. Otherwise, why do people need to try so hard every epoch? No one can escape their fate under the high heaven, hence the common adage - the will of the high heaven is unopposable.”

“My fate is mine alone! Only the imperial level would worry about this problem.” Worldkeeper brought up another common phrase used by powerful existences, especially Immortal Emperors.

He gently sighed at this point since this wasn’t his pursuit and question. His meaning of existence was to protect the nine worlds and stop the Ancient Ming.

“So Your Excellency, you went to the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground to find an ally against the Ancient Ming?” Worldkeeper was still amazed at how Li Qiye couldn’t let go of the nine worlds even when he was about to leave.

“Yes.” Li Qiye gently nodded: “If the Ancient Ming were to go all out, their emperors would come out too. Just the Azure Dragon Legion alone is not enough, so I had to invite that burial ground to join, hoping for one decisive battle.”

“I’m afraid the Ancient Ming won’t fall for the same Gong Yang trick again.” Worldkeeper joked.

“No more schemes this time. The Lord of the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground will personally take action, that’s the only way. Even if we used trickery, it’s not enough to wipe them out in full.” Li Qiye shook his head.

“It’s a good thing that the Ancient Ming fell into the trap back then and lost a considerable amount of forces or we would have to pay an even bigger price.” Worldkeeper said.

“That’s true. I used the Immortal Demon Grotto to bait the Ancient Ming back then. They didn’t prepare sufficiently so the Corporeal Zone was suppressed, resulting in the great loss in several overlords. They didn’t dare to come out again after that.” Li Qiye said with a smirk.

“You wanted to capture the Corporeal Zone and that item in the grotto at the same time. Alas, it didn’t go as you wish. The two sides didn’t annihilate each other.”

“The Ancient Ming knew that they have fallen into a trap after seeing the unfavorable situation so they immediately retreated. At the same time, the grotto wouldn’t let me watch and harvest the aftermath so they purposely let the Ancient Ming go. Not everything can go as you plan, it’s fine to lose the two items.” Li Qiye chuckled.

The story of Gong Yang was told by Li Qiye back then to Imp at Necropolis. He baited the Ancient Ming into attacking the Immortal Demon Grotto back then with the intention of obtaining the Corporeal Zone and the other treasure.

The Ancient Ming lost that battle. Even their emperor with the Corporeal Zone couldn’t take the grotto down. This made it even harder for them to control the zone after losing several overlords.

The true god felt regretful about how the event went. If the grotto didn’t purposely let the Ancient Ming run, that could have been the decisive battle that Li Qiye wanted - not paying a heavy price yet still able to capture both the grotto and the devious race on top of obtaining two eternal items.

Despite the lack of a total success, this still laid the foundation for the Immortal Slaying War since the Ancient Ming was weakened. Without this plan, the nine worlds would have needed even more

sacrifices to defeat the Ancient Ming.

Keep in mind that the wise sages of the nine worlds worked together and still suffered heavy losses. Not too many actually survived the war. The myriad races had a force numbering at one hundred million. However, less than one million had actually survived. One could easily imagine the grotesque brutality of the war.

Li Qiye sighed emotionally and said: “The legion has been resting after the war and I had no intention of bringing it back to the cruel battlefield. This was a big reason why in each generation, I would try to find the Corporeal Zone by searching all around. I hoped to personally finish the Ancient Ming but alas, I have failed because the Ancient Ming learned from the previous massacre. Who would have thought that I would need to start with the legion again, giving you the responsibility once more.”

Even though he was the ruler of the nine worlds, there were things beyond his control.

After the massacre, the Ancient Ming with their Corporeal Zone knew that the moment they gave the smallest clue to their location, the greatest of armies would instantly come running. That’s why they didn’t recklessly take action and continued to hide.

Li Qiye kept on searching but the Corporeal Zone made it impossible for him to uproot them completely!

“This is our mission.” Worldkeeper solemnly said: “Like you have said, you feel sorry for us. We can not go to the other battlefields but we must fight against the Ancient Ming to the bitter end. That was your initial goal in forming the legion, right? If they dare to show themselves again, we are responsible to keep on fighting until the death. You can’t let go of the nine worlds before leaving, still caring and working for it. So why can’t we, its inhabitants, do the same?!” Worldkeeper sonorously stated.

Li Qiye could only sigh: “This is all I can do. It is up to you all in the future and the nine worlds itself. If I can’t return, I hope everyone will work hard instead of relying on someone else to save them. There is no savior.”

“No, in my eyes, you are the savior and the guardian of the nine worlds.” Worldkeeper disagreed: “It doesn’t matter how much the world fears and curses your name, no one had paid more attention to the nine worlds than you in history. Who had paid a bigger price to keep it safe?! No one! You toiled on and on not only to accumulate resources but to also stop the Ancient Ming! Otherwise, you wouldn’t have returned after coming to the tenth world. Others aren’t aware but I know full well. After Empress Hong Tian, you have trained enough emperors to sweep through the thirteen continents yet you still returned to the nine worlds. It is out of fear of the Ancient Ming rising, you want to let them know that you are still guarding this area!”

Li Qiye gently sighed and said: “That’s in the past now. I used to go back and forth but this generation is different. I might never be able to return! If I’m prepared sufficiently up there, then I shall begin the final expedition while swearing to never come back before victory.”

Worldkeeper became quiet, realizing that this was the last goodbye and while His Excellency was so meticulous. Li Qiye had never said goodbye to him before leaving the nine worlds in the past.

“Take care.” Li Qiye said: “Live on, the nine worlds still need all of you to defend its last ray of dawn.”

“You too, Your Excellency. May you return triumphantly.” Worldkeeper kowtowed ceremoniously on the ground.

Even though they were master-follower, they were also master and disciple. They have experienced moments of near-death together across the dark times and bloody battlefields.

Today might be the final goodbye which was why Worldkeeper chose such a grand and respectful gesture.

Li Qiye didn't lift Worldkeeper up this time and accepted the gesture.

“Your Excellency, you should take Su Zhen with you. Even though she can't do anything at the moment, her blood is different from everyone else and worthy of further grooming. Perhaps she will be able to lend you a hand in the future.” Worldkeeper said after standing up.

Li Qiye agreed: “I was going to take her even if you didn't say anything since I have promised him and Mu Tian. Tell her to get ready at Cleansing Incense, time is not waiting for us.”

“I shall.” Worldkeeper nodded.

Worldkeeper personally saw Li Qiye out of Heavenguard's entrance. After making some distance, Li Qiye glanced back at the word “Heavenguard” and became disappointed for various reasons before leaving.

# Chapter 1698: Nine Worlds Connected

---

“Whoosh!” In the last few days, the night sky in the nine worlds was especially beautiful with the occasional visual phenomena. Images of a phoenix would fly towards the horizon, engulfing the world in a royal aura as if the noblest of creature was about to be born.

True dragons would also jump in the sky with their billowing aura. Before the primordial lord of beasts, everyone else felt as if they were little kittens.

Resplendent totems would emerge with sun and moon together within. Stars would circle around the flowing galaxies. One could see the three thousand worlds floating up and down.

\*\*\*

The power of the nine worlds gathered with these visual images. It was omnipresent and everyone could sense it.

This power reigned over the nine worlds and the myriad realms. It came from the worlds yet didn't belong to them. It represented the high heaven, a reflection of its will.

This was the Heaven's Will that had finished forming, just waiting for a new emperor to shoulder it. This was the state of the nine worlds with the emergence of the Heaven's Will, filled with its awe-inspiring power.

Both Godkings and Emperor Candidates felt insignificant before this power, no longer finding themselves invincible. Only by shouldering and controlling the Heaven's Will would one reach true invincibility, able to smile proudly while strolling through a generation and capable of sweeping through the nine worlds.

This was the most tempting aspect about the Heaven's Will, the reason why so many experts and geniuses chased for it in order to reach the peak of this world! There was nothing greater than the

Heaven's Will for all cultivators to pursue.

“Who will be accepted by the Heaven's Will in this generation?” Older Godkings were envious at this sight. If they could pick again, they would pick the path for the Heaven's Will without any hesitation. Since they have seen its power before, they couldn't resist its temptation.

Meanwhile, many geniuses were eager to try with boiling blood. They wanted nothing more than the Heaven's Will's recognition in order to embark on the path of the competition. The day couldn't come sooner for them while fantasizing about becoming an unbeatable emperor.

With its emergence, the portals to the nine worlds completely opened. The great powers began to take over these locations and sent their disciples to the other worlds in order to broaden their horizon.

As for the smaller sects, they could only hand refined jades over so that they could teleport as well.

“Mortal Emperor World, here I come. This place full of talents shall be my next battleground.” A genius from a different world excitedly claimed after entering Mortal Emperor.

In a short time, many geniuses and even older experts from Stone Medicine, Heaven Spirit, and Sacred Nether rushed into Mortal Emperor. For outsiders, Mortal Emperor was a sure visit because many competitions in the past had been held here.

“I represent the Vajra World to take on the heroes of the worlds. My first stop shall be Mortal Emperor. Their supreme geniuses shall taste defeat by my hands!” A monk from Vajra powerfully declared.

“I, Sacred Supreme, from the [Western Bull](#) World, challenge all the aspiring candidates of Mortal Emperor. I don't care if it is one-on-one or everyone together since the throne is mine!” An



unstoppable genius from Western Bull immediately challenged everyone during his first visit to Mortal Emperor.

More and more experts came in droves to Mortal Emperor. Everyone was ready to challenge the local geniuses. Of course, some were very reasonable and stood on the sideline to watch, waiting to see who the real rivals were.

The monk from Vajra and Sacred Supreme from Western Bull's blatant challenge was unanswered by Mortal Emperor. No one actually bothered to respond.

The foreign geniuses found the lack of response astounding.

"Does your world not have any geniuses or something? Look at how unbearable these two are but no one wants to take them on?" A cultivator from Vajra quickly made friend with someone from Mortal Emperor. He asked with curiosity.

The Mortal Emperor cultivator leisurely responded: "Oh? That? No big deal. They're only ants compared to Fiercest from our world, not worth mentioning. Fiercest doesn't care for such weaklings so the other young people don't need to interfere either. No one wants to steal his thunder."

"Ants? Impossible!" The Vajra cultivator couldn't help but shout: "Do you know how strong that monk is? He had never lost before since his dao debut and had even once tore a Godking to pieces with his bare hands. His cultivation is unfathomable while his defense is impervious."

"Oh, is that so? That's an impressive tale, not a bad topic to talk about." The Mortal Emperor cultivator was still as nonchalant as ever.

"That's it? Only worth talking about?" The Vajra cultivator was unconvinced and said: "Then how strong is your Fiercest?"

"Thirteen palaces, four grand completion Immortal Physiques, annihilated Soaring Immortal, sacrificed four imperial princes

with their own grand completion Immortal Physique, killed an Emperor Rival, completely unbeatable.” To which his friend calmly recalled each of Fiercest’s miraculous feat. There were simply too many.

“Thirteen palaces? Four grand completion Immortal Physiques? What? No one can accomplish these things in the world!” The Vajra cultivator shouted again.

“But nothing is impossible for Fiercest. His achievements are well known in these parts. He is the miracle creator, other geniuses are only trash before him.” The Mortal Emperor cultivator flatly replied.

“Soaring, Soaring Immortal is that legendary sect with five emperors?” The Vajra cultivator swallowed his saliva and asked.

The Mortal Emperor cultivator glanced at him and said: “Who else dares to have that name outside of that sect in this world?”

“But, but they are an imperial lineage with five emperors that has stood strong for generations...” The Vajra cultivator didn’t dare to believe of Soaring Immortal’s destruction. Its prestige was simply too illustrious in the nine worlds.

“It still collapsed before Fiercest. Its four imperial princes were sacrificed and even Imperial Queen Ren Xian was killed. Her scream echoed across the planes.” Another matter-of-fact statement was made.

“Imperial princes and queen...” The Vajra cultivator felt his mouth becoming dry. For him, these were untouchable and virtually unbeatable existences yet they were still killed by this Fiercest?

He didn’t dare to speak again.

As more people poured into Mortal Emperor, more heard about the tales of Fiercest. They were unconvinced at first but Soaring Immortal’s destruction robbed them of their ability to speak.

Even the imperious monk and Sacred Supreme from the other two worlds were speechless. Their expression became solemn.

“Fiercest? Is that Li Qiye?” Some cultivators from Stone Medicine, Sacred Nether, and Heaven Spirit were stunned to hear this all too familiar name.

“How many Fiercest can there be in this world? That’s him!” Cultivators from Mortal Emperor told them.

“Damn it! We were confused about his sudden disappearance. So he has been here at Mortal Emperor? That’s the reaper for you, killing imperial lineages like pigs wherever he goes, so merciless!” Those who were aware of Fiercest’s battle record blurted out.

The ones from these three worlds were curious about his whereabouts. So it turned out that he had returned to Mortal Emperor.

Meanwhile, Cleansing Incense was busy receiving guests such as Lan Yunzhu, Long Jingxian, Jian Wushuang...

The sect became lively instantly with carriages and people everywhere. Some fans even came to have a glimpse of Fiercest.

Xi Niu, looks like a reference to a location in Journey to the West or Buddhism. Translated to Western Bull. The town’s most popular commodity is cattle, hence bull

# Chapter 1699: Meetings

---

The first to arrive was Lan Yunzhu. She smiled happily after seeing Li Qiye: “Wow, Uncle, I didn’t expect that you were hiding so many beauties here!”

“What is this about hiding? I’m clearly doing it in the open. That’s why I told you, your looks alone can barely qualify to be my bed-warming maid.” Li Qiye said flatly.

“Less daydreaming!” Yunzhu coquettishly blurted while clawing at him like a young girl. Of course, Li Qiye was unperturbed.

Yunzhu was the hottest topic in Sacred Nether at the moment, the goddess in so many young experts’ mind, the lover in their dream. Alas, she was only a jovial and normal girl before him.

“Since you are here, get ready.” Li Qiye said.

“Yes, I will follow you wherever.” Yunzhu answered directly this time without putting up a show.

Long Jingxian and Jian Wushuang came right after to the sect. Wushuang was always quiet but Jingxian immediately chattered it up.

“Ugly Qiye, I’ll suppress you now!” This was her greeting towards him.

“You alone? Too inexperienced and weak.” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head.

Jingxian didn’t refute and immediately opened her fate palaces. Twelve appeared neatly above her head, full of authority and immortal energy.

Anyone else would be shocked at this sight due to the rarity of this achievement even across the long trek of time.

Li Qiye wasn’t surprised at all and nodded: “Hmm, you’re finally successful with the twelve palaces. But it is still not enough. Your

dao foundation is steady while leaving no room for criticism. More polishing will make it more perfect.”

Li Qiye expected this because she had a natural Immortal Fate. Such a peerless constitution was even rarer than twelve palaces.

After starting over, Jingxian indeed worked hard and her effort didn't betray her. She broke through her own limits and obtained the twelve palaces.

“Hmph, are you going to die just by praising me a little bit?” Jingxian unhappily said: “It wasn't easy for me to cultivate them since you told me to destroy my foundation back then to start over. Do you know how painful this was? I suffered so much, not being able to leave the house...”

She hastily complained due to her dissatisfaction with his reaction. Of course, it was indeed harder for her since she already had eleven palaces in the past. Others would never want to start over given that situation.

“Hmm, amazing indeed. Keep trying, maybe you will become a second monster just like Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng.” Li Qiye nodded and smiled.

“Hmph, you're not even trying.” She was still annoyed with his lackluster and half-hearted praise and snorted. However, her mood changed quickly and she smiled to ask: “But I'm a benevolent person anyway and won't hold it against you. Tell me, are there any fun places in Mortal Emperor so I can go have some fun? It's been a while.”

Li Qiye glanced dismissively at her: “Fun? It's about time to go up above. All of you need to work harder. Shuangyan's group is practicing the Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation right now, all of you will join them. Your talents will be helpful and everyone will be participating in the future to control this formation.”

Li Shuangyan has always been interested in formations. She was quite gifted in this aspect so he left her in charge and told the rest of the girls to help.

“More cultivation...” Jingxian scowled after hearing this.

Li Qiye replied: “You think we’re going up there to sightseeing? If you want to be an ant, fine, since all ants are similar anyway regardless of the location. But if you want to stand at the peak, that place is even crueler than the nine worlds. Even emperors are hunted up there. In that place, they still keep on training to be stronger, so why can’t you do the same?”

“Got it, fine, we’ll go so you can stop yapping like an old woman.” She still agreed despite showing some reluctance.

“Watch her.” Li Qiye told Jian Wushuang. This girl was arrogant but she was much more mature compared to Jingxian who only wanted to play.

Wushuang simply nodded. Next was Ming Yexue who stepped forward.

She spoke softly before Li Qiye: “Are we really going up there? The elders from the beastworld are worried. Rumor has it that only emperors can go up there.”

This wasn’t just a personal trip for her because the entire beastworld was going to follow her too with Li Qiye.

“That’s the past, no longer the case now.” Li Qiye said flatly: “If I have agreed with those old geezers, then I have absolute confidence and have prepared well enough. But the question is, is your Bi’an Beastworld ready? What you will face is much more complicated up there.”

“We’re ready.” She nodded: “Of course, I can’t guess how strong our opponents will be, but our beastworld will accept all challenges under our best state. The elders said that this is our only chance so we’ll go all out!”

“Very well. Tell them that it won’t just be the pressure from emperors and gods. There will be many existences who want a bite of something as useful as the beastworld in the tenth world.” Li Qiye said slowly.

“I understand.” She nodded seriously. The elders have told her that the tenth world was a place always surging forward with great momentum on top of being merciless.

She left after several days at Cleansing Incense because she was different from Jian Wushuang and the others. She was responsible for the beastworld too so she had more to prepare.

With the arrival of the girls, Li Qiye began his plan to go up to the tenth world. He sent a message to the Bloodbull Godfiend’s group as well.

The first to come was the South Emperor, Gu Guo. He gave the feeling of returning to the origin this time to be part of nature. Others would find it difficult to spot him standing there.

“That’s an eonic genius for you, your cultivation has risen considerably this time. It would be difficult for you to not become an Immortal Monarch with such talents and dao heart.” Li Qiye had to praise.

Gu Guo smiled naturally without any trace of complacency: “It is thanks to your guidance, sacred teacher. Without it, I would only be searching blindly in the dark.”

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “Without your talents and determination, my guidance wouldn’t have necessarily been useful.”

Gu Guo replied: “You are surely going all out this time. I heard the weapons above are different than the ones in our nine worlds. Should I change my weapon?”

Li Qiye explained: “They are different indeed but your Sky Piercer is different. It’s not a conventional soulbound true

treasure. You can just bring it, no need to change. There are still similarities between the worlds. A few weapons from the nine worlds are still usable and completely unaffected, such as the Declivity-Mountain Bell and Heaven Sealing Pentagate.

“That’s good.” Gu Guo said: “I’ve used this weapon for more than half my life and I love it. It would be difficult adapting to a new one.”

Li Qiye smiled: “Get ready to go all out. With your talents, you will be the first among us to become an Immortal Monarch. No one is more qualified than you to seize the Heaven’s Will. Let the geniuses in the tenth world see the style of a peerless genius from the nine. Take down their arrogance.”

“Thank you for your blessing, sacred teacher. I will not disappoint you.” Gu Guo remained composed and smiled.

“An eonic genius is not just in name. With enough perseverance and sticking to the right path, your future will be boundless. It is a shame that most of you are too arrogant, thinking that your talent alone is enough to sweep through everything. Such brittleness... that’s the reason why so many of your peers have fallen.” Li Qiye commented.

Gu Guo sighed after hearing this. This was the case for him too, in the past.

Who wouldn’t be arrogant being an eonic genius? At this particular level, any youth would look at others with disdain and thought that they wouldn’t need to rely on anyone.



# Chapter 1700: The Origin Of The Bu

---

A romantic air permeated the tasseled bed behind the red curtains with Li Qiye and Bu Lianxiang tenderly embracing each other.

After a long time, he spoke softly: “I’ll leave behind a few treasures for you. There are some treasuries I left hidden around the nine worlds, you can open them later when needed.”

After her decision to stay, Li Qiye instantly left her many things, such as the Declivity-Mountain Bell, the small wooden coffin, and other artifacts.

“My Bu Clan has many treasures, you don’t need to worry about me. You’ll need more resources up above.” She gently responded.

She wasn’t just boasting. Her clan and the Middle Continent Kingdom used to be one of the strongest lineages during the Ancient Ming Era. It stood strong for so long before finally being destroyed by Immortal Emperor Tian Tu.

“No one can have too many treasures.” Li Qiye smiled and said: “This is just preparation for the future. These treasures are different from imperial life and true treasures. For example, the mountain bell is similar to your yin yang mirror. Even if the time changes, it will still be unsuppressed. That small coffin is even more extraordinary. Its evil affinity could scare godfiends. Just open it and see.”

“That’s the last resort though.” Li Qiye sighed: “Who knows how the world will change later? Maybe another race will rise or the laws of the heaven and earth will be different. It’s better to play it safe by preparing ahead of time.”

She agreed and nodded: “That’s fine. The clan had left behind a secret location. In case of a complete change, I might hide and live in seclusion until everything calms down. That’s another choice.”

“It’s not a bad one.” Li Qiye said: “I will also leave the Myriad Age Tree for you in case you want to live for another generation.”

She wanted to speak but he pressed his finger against her lips and said solemnly: “It is decided. I know that it is not easy for anyone to live another generation. Even emperors have to suffer endless torment. Like that guy in the Drystone Courtyard, he endured for generations just to live again. But sometimes, we have to make a hard choice. I’m leaving this tree behind not to force you to do so. This is only a possible path, another choice. It is safer this way in case of the unexpected and the tree might be useful later.”

She acquiesced and said: “Don’t worry, just keep treading onward. I survived the Ancient Ming Era so how bad can the future be? I’ll just hide in the clan’s hidden location. According to our progenitor, this place could hide from all calamities. The only reason our dynasty ended back then was because my father and the elders were too confident. If they ran to this place earlier, they could have escaped.”

“I believe it.” Li Qiye confirmed: “If your progenitor had said this, it proves just how amazing this secret location must be. It might not be comparable to existences like the twelve burial grounds and the six ancestral earths, it should be one of the few places that can hide from the heaven.”

“It sounds like you know our progenitor very well?” This prompted her to ask.

There were very few records of their progenitor, only a few sentences from their inheritance writings. Their descendants didn’t know where they came from. It seemed that their progenitor had appeared out of thin air.

Such a character capable of starting this clan and laying down its great foundation couldn’t have been a nameless person.

But strange enough, even the nine worlds had virtually nothing written about their progenitor.

In her speculation, their progenitor was no lesser than Immortal Emperors. It was strange that such a powerful being was so unknown.

“A little bit.” Li Qiye said: “But I’m not too certain about a few things, they stop at being mere guesses without evidence. Unless he is alive to reveal it himself, there’s no way to confirm. After all, it is a true separation. I’m the only one who can really travel and find information between the two worlds.”

“So our clan is from the tenth world!” She concluded. This was one of the theories about her clan’s origin.

“Yes.” Li Qiye nodded: “This is something I’m sure of. However, your progenitor has erased many things in the past. He didn’t want the world and his descendants to know about it.”

“Above the nine heavens...” She was slightly dazed. After a while, she asked: “Why did the progenitor bring our clan down to the nine worlds?”

“He’s the only one who knows the reason. In my opinion, he might be hiding, hoping that his descendants can quietly flourish instead of competing for hegemony. Unfortunately, they have let him down.” Li Qiye mused.

“Was it to avoid the enemy?” Bu Lianxiang wondered.

“I don’t think it’s that simple. At his particular level, all enemies should be crushed by him.” Li Qiye shook his head: “Not more than ten people would be able to take their descendants down from the tenth world. Plus, few among them are still alive right now, probably around five.”

“What’s the reason then?” She was startled, having been aware of her progenitor’s strength but didn’t expect it to be at that level.

“Hard to say, he might be the only one who knows. I think it is to avoid a heavenly calamity. Your secret location might not be created by him either. It must be from an ancient era, created by

the heaven and earth. It is an ultimate treasure to avoid heavenly calamities. Such a treasure ground would be fought over up in the tenth world. After all, their descendants would at least have a spot to hide. Few in the nine worlds should be aware of this type of places. Even Immortal Emperors who were aware wouldn't use them to stay in the nine worlds. Because of this, no one tried to seize your place, outside of maybe the Ancient Ming." Li Qiye stated.

Bu Lianxiang nodded. After destroying her kingdom, the Ancient Ming searched everywhere. It wasn't just for simple treasures.

"I'm aware of Immortal Emperors going to the tenth world. It is unavoidable after obtaining the Heaven's Will. But why are there so few people who have descended? The tenth world is the realm of the gods and emperors so there should be many unstoppable beings. They should be capable of this." She became curious.

Li Qiye replied: "The price is immense even if they are capable of descending. Like I have said, not more than ten beings can rely on their own strength to come down while paying the price. For example, your progenitor is certainly strong enough. Bringing your clan down from up there must have been tremendously difficult. His death would have been the simplest payment."

"So our progenitor died because of this." She was startled.

"You can put it that way." Li Qiye nodded: "That's why no one who is capable of this feat wants to do it. It's like being a tycoon having everything they want suddenly becoming a beggar without arms and legs. Would you want to do it?"

Stunned she was with this question. Indeed, no one would be willing to do so but her progenitor did for some unknown reasons.

"Looks like we have let him down." She gently sighed. The Bu Clan was still annihilated in the end.

Their fate was sealed the moment they became allies with the

Ancient Ming.

“The ancestors can’t control everything. Even though they are always hopeful about their descendants, some of these children will be less than acceptable.” Li Qiye chuckled: “If their descendants are always virtuous, then no imperial lineages would ever fall in this world. How can the smaller sects ever rise then?”

She could only nod and accept the words of consolation.

# Table of Contents

## [Emperor's Domination](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1601: Forefather Yu](#)

[Chapter 1602: Matriarch Yu](#)

[Chapter 1603: Gu Zuns Past](#)

[Chapter 1604: The Yu Children](#)

[Chapter 1605: Candidate](#)

[Chapter 1606: Yulians Choice](#)

[Chapter 1607: Marriage Alliance](#)

[Chapter 1608: Old Mystery](#)

[Chapter 1609: Eighteen Crystal Cannons](#)

[Chapter 1610: Coming In Person](#)

[Chapter 1611: Dream Dragon King](#)

[Chapter 1612: The Immovable Monarch](#)

[Chapter 1613: Barrage](#)

[Chapter 1614: Bombardment](#)

[Chapter 1615: Gu Zun's Strangeness](#)

[Chapter 1616: Crystalfowl Immortal Mine](#)

[Chapter 1617: One Hundred](#)

[Chapter 1618: Threat](#)

[Chapter 1619: Immortal Mines Compromise](#)

[Chapter 1620: Gu Zun](#)

[Chapter 1621: Mu Zhuos Demonic City](#)

[Chapter 1622: Past Acquaintance](#)

[Chapter 1623: Soaring Powers Power Struggle](#)

[Chapter 1624: Decision](#)

[Chapter 1625: Glory](#)

[Chapter 1626: Ancestral Eighteen Explosions](#)

[Chapter 1627: Transaction With The Yellow Cloth Girl](#)

[Chapter 1628: Pursuit](#)

[Chapter 1629: Four Clawed Dragon](#)

[Chapter 1630: Mount Qingcheng](#)

[Chapter 1631: Ding Yuanhou](#)

[Chapter 1632: Long Aotians Confidence](#)

[Chapter 1633: Golden Dragon Prince](#)  
[Chapter 1634: No One Can Stop Me From Killing](#)  
[Chapter 1635: Sword Versus Saber](#)  
[Chapter 1636: One Move To Defeat The Enemy](#)  
[Chapter 1637: Long Zhantian](#)  
[Chapter 1638: Gu Zuns Resentment](#)  
[Chapter 1639: Master And Disciple](#)  
[Chapter 1640: Cleansing Temporal Crystal](#)  
[Chapter 1641: The Time Is Ripe](#)  
[Chapter 1642: Ye Jiuzhous Dilemma](#)  
[Chapter 1643: The Battle Begins](#)  
[Chapter 1644: Long Aotians Second Shot](#)  
[Chapter 1645: The Magical Pearl Tower](#)  
[Chapter 1646: Immortals Blood Spear](#)  
[Chapter 1647: Bare Hands, Still Unstoppable](#)  
[Chapter 1648: Long Aotians Strategy](#)  
[Chapter 1649: Undying Soldiers](#)  
[Chapter 1650: Worldkeeper True God](#)  
[Chapter 1651: Legend Of Azure Dragon](#)  
[Chapter 1652: Three Branches Failure](#)  
[Chapter 1653: Who Is The Real Mastermind?](#)  
[Chapter 1654: The Situation Is Set](#)  
[Chapter 1655: Who Is The One Hunting?](#)  
[Chapter 1656: The Heavens Will Nearing Formation](#)  
[Chapter 1657: Path Towards The Future](#)  
[Chapter 1658: Descending Calamity](#)  
[Chapter 1659: The Start Of The War](#)  
[Chapter 1660: Hai Lins Request](#)  
[Chapter 1661: The Generals](#)  
[Chapter 1662: Army Of Ten Millions](#)  
[Chapter 1663: Early News Of Victory](#)  
[Chapter 1664: Gu Zuns Appearance](#)  
[Chapter 1665: The Treasury](#)  
[Chapter 1666: The Unthinkable Answer](#)  
[Chapter 1667: Nine Sea Kings](#)  
[Chapter 1668: The Black Dragon King](#)  
[Chapter 1669: Three Generations of the Black Dragon King](#)  
[Chapter 1670: Azure Dragon Eighteen Formation](#)  
[Chapter 1671: Omnidirectional Immortal Annihilation](#)

[Chapter 1672: Fighting Long Aotian](#)  
[Chapter 1673: One Dao Shouldering Five Emperors](#)  
[Chapter 1674: Soaring Immortal Break](#)  
[Chapter 1675: Assaulting The Soaring Immortal Sect](#)  
[Chapter 1676: Ren Xians Imperial Princes](#)  
[Chapter 1677: Immortal Physiques Competition](#)  
[Chapter 1678: Invincible](#)  
[Chapter 1679: Gu Zuns Counter](#)  
[Chapter 1680: Imperial Queen Ren Xian](#)  
[Chapter 1681: Who Will Be The Last One Smiling?](#)  
[Chapter 1682: The Imperial Queens Hatred](#)  
[Chapter 1683: The Battle](#)  
[Chapter 1684: Ancient Ming Bloodline](#)  
[Chapter 1685: Protection Of The Nine Worlds](#)  
[Chapter 1686: Nine Worlds Evil Subduer](#)  
[Chapter 1687: Gu Zuns Choice](#)  
[Chapter 1688: Netherflame Serum](#)  
[Chapter 1689: Thunderblood Tree](#)  
[Chapter 1690: Turned To Ashes](#)  
[Chapter 1691: Return](#)  
[Chapter 1692: Another Meeting, Old Ghost](#)  
[Chapter 1693: The Past](#)  
[Chapter 1694: The Old Ghost In The Abyss](#)  
[Chapter 1695: Protection](#)  
[Chapter 1696: The Nine Worlds Future Threat](#)  
[Chapter 1697: Relating To The Ancient Ming](#)  
[Chapter 1698: Nine Worlds Connected](#)  
[Chapter 1699: Meetings](#)  
[Chapter 1700: The Origin Of The Bu](#)